



KILLING GROUNDS OF GODS AND DEVILS

BOOK 2

Black Eyed King

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Killing Grounds of Gods and Devils

(神魔养殖场)

by

Black Eyed King

(黑瞳王)

Synopsis

Su Yu was in a third rate university when the “Sky Holes” appeared, his school fell through the “Sky Hole” and appeared in the middle of a forest that was teeming with terrifying creatures.

Witness a fearsome transformation that originates from his hand...

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: November 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Maxellsg @ [faktranslations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 101: Dreamlike Scene

Fresh blood splattered in the air.

The Bloody Ape Dog let out grunting noises, it had miscalculated and did not expect that this group of humans were so powerful. It immediately attempted to run as it turned its body and kicked, jumping onto a large tree when suddenly a black figure pounced like lightning towards it.

The Bloody Ape Dog had just jumped into the air when the flying kick from the black figure landed squarely on its chest.

“Jiiiiii!”

The Bloody Ape Dog let out a shrill cry as a hole appeared on its chest, this leg had at least shattered three to four bones of its ribcage.

“Thud!”

The Bloody Ape Dog landed heavily on the ground as the black figure strode out and fell from above, a foot kicked out and squashed the head of the fallen Bloody Ape Dog.

The face of the Bloody Ape Dog was crushed, as though it had been run over by a car, its eye sockets were empty as the eyeballs shot out, large amounts of blood spilled out from the crushed face and within the blood, white brain matter could be seen floating as

well.

The strength contained within this foot was immense.

Amongst the group, the only one with such frightening leg strength and skillful kicks was none other than Ma Zi Ye, she had hurriedly kicked the Bloody Ape Dog down to the ground before finally dealing a fatal blow to immediately kill it, her right leg absorbed the strange energy from the crystal within the Bloody Ape Dog and Ma Zi Ye could feel the strange energy within her right leg surge as though it was about to make a breakthrough. A moment later, the strange energy became peaceful again but she had not broken through to the second tier.

“Ai.....” Ma Zi Ye sighed, she could feel that she was at the precipice and lacked a small amount to break through.

Qin Jiagui had just suffered from a sudden attack and although he had managed to dodge, his entire body was covered in cold sweat. As he looked at the corpse of the Bloody Ape Dog, he said in a heavy voice: “The night in the forest is simply too dangerous, I think we should all find a place to rest first.” While saying this, he picked up the torchlight which had fallen to the ground as he shone it in all directions, quickly noticing a piece of empty ground not far away and began heading in that direction.

Zhang Zhong Mou continued to carry Su Yu who was still fast asleep and found a piece of land covered with withered leaves without any rocks to place him down, wiping the cold sweat on his face as he took a cigarette from his bag.

The others slowly placed the bags of food in the centre of the group before each finding a place to rest.

Qin Jiagui switched off the torchlight as his girlfriend Yuan Ni Ping leaned and sat together with him. Qin Jiagui was not as strong as Su Yu but was able to give one a feeling of safety, Yuan Ni Ping felt exceptionally comforted when she was beside him.

Because Su Yu could not be woken up, the group were on high alert as Qin Jiagui spoke up: “Everyone take a rest. I will keep the first watch.”

Zhao Shichang responded: “Wake me up in the later half of the night.” before closing his eyes, pulling up his shirt collar as he lay on his side, maximising the amount of resting time.

The others did not bother to be polite as they all closed their eyes, they seemed to be affected by the sleeping form of Su Yu and the group quickly fell fast asleep.

Qin Jiagui noticed that Yuan Ni Ping was clenching his hands and found it strange, looking at the group who were sleeping he said in a low voice: “Ni Ping, why aren’t you sleeping?”

Yuan Ni Ping continued to cuddle with him as she replied softly: “Can’t fall asleep, I want to have a good chat with you.”

Hearing her words, Qin Jiagui realised that over the past few

days they had not talked much, in this chilly night, Yuan Ni Ping's words made Qin Jiagui feel comforted as he held on tightly onto Yuan Ni Ping's delicate hands, his other hand stretched and hugged her thin waist, enjoying her moving body and heat.

Yuan Ni Ping leaned into his bosom, Qin Jiagui used his chin to gently brush through her hair, although the two of them were covered in the smell of blood, they were used to this smell and at this moment they were extremely comfortable.

“Jia Gui, do you think we'll be able to leave this forest alive?” Yuan Ni Ping suddenly spoke up in a low voice.

“Yes, we will definitely leave this place and return to the world we are familiar with.” Qin Jiagui firmly said as he hugged her, Qin Jiagui had always been staunch in every situation and he faced each situation with confidence, he was not someone to say things lightly.

“I believe you.” Yuan Ni Ping lifted her face while Qin Jiagui looked down, he could feel her presence in the darkness and suddenly the two began to breathe more heavily as Qin Jiagui could not hold down his impulse and kissed her.

At this moment, Qin Jiagui saw a ball of faint white light from the corner of his eye and his heart shivered as he immediately lifted his head, his right hand clenching.

“What.....” Yuan Ni Ping could feel Qin Jiagui's entire body become tense like a panther that was about to strike.

Qin Jiagui shook his head, signaling to her not to talk before silently standing up and walking forward, he swiftly noticed that by the side not far away lay several corpses.

These were corpses of Lesser Goblins and Qin Jiagui had already noticed that they had been killed by the seeds of the Golden Mother Earth and died with smiling expressions on their faces.

Because rushing in the night was simply too dangerous, the group had chosen to stop in this area. The few corpses of the Lesser Goblins were over twenty metres away from them, together with the fact that the area was actually littered with corpses of monsters that had died in the same manner, wanting to totally evade these corpses was impossible and the group had ignored it.

At this moment, Qin Jiagui gazed at the corpses of the Lesser Goblins and was speechless, he finally understood what the white light he had seen from the corner of his eye was.

It was unknown when little 'jellyfishes' began to emerge in large amounts from the corpses of the Lesser Goblins, these seeds had already grown quite large and each little 'jellyfish' had grown to the size of a mature adult's head, their bodies emitted a faint gentle white light and they were translucent, appearing extremely beautiful in the night.

Each corpse seemed to be covered in boils that were made of these little 'jellyfishes' covered in faint white light, in no time over hundred of them had gathered and the white light emitted from

them was dazzling, it was able to light up an area of over ten metres and Qin Jiagui was speechless and shocked at this strange scene before him.

“So beautiful.....” Yuan Ni Ping softly said in a voice that only she could hear, the scene before her was like something from a dream.

As more and more little ‘jellyfishes’ with faint white lights appeared, the few Lesser Goblin corpses began to wither, as though all the nutrients in the corpses were being absorbed and they swiftly became skin and bone.

Chapter 102: Every Item Has A Weakness

These hundred odd little ‘jellyfishes’ were floating in the air as they slowly floated to the ground before extending out their slender tentacles and began entering the ground, beginning their life’s journey.

As a third type of being that was between that of an animal and a plant, the Mother Earth had sent forth large amounts of seeds before its death, these seeds could plant themselves on any lifeform and absorb the essence of the lifeform, finally maturing out of a cocoon and flying out before gently floating into the ground. Amongst tens of thousands of seeds, only 0.1% of them had a chance to become a Golden Mother Earth and the Golden Mother Earth would then need to endure one thousand years before finally producing a single drop of Golden Blood.

One could tell how valuable the Golden Blood was.

At this moment Qin Jiagui and Yuan Ni Ping were witnessing this scene where the seeds of the Mother Earth absorbed the nutrients from the corpses of the Lesser Goblins and became single entities, leaving the bodies before returning to the earth.

This scene was extremely breathtaking and seemed like a dream, Qin Jiagui and Yuan Ni Ping silently hid behind a tree as they watched the scene unfold before them with wide eyes.

Watching the little ‘jellyfishes’ which released a faint light as they gently floated to the ground, returning to the earth, there was

a sudden soft rustling sounds from the side as a large black figure suddenly appeared.

A bloody red forked tongue flew out as it immediately wrapped around three little 'jellyfishes' which were falling to the ground, dragging them back into its wide open mouth.

This was so sudden that Qin Jiagui shivered, Yuan Ni Ping almost lost control of herself and gasped but she was able to react quickly and used her hands to cover her mouth.

Utilising the light emitted from the little 'jellyfishes', Qin Jiagui and Yuan Ni Ping were able to see a tall black figure beside them, it was a monster whose entire body was covered in scales like that of a python.

Although the body of the monster was like that of a thick and solid python, it had four limbs and was able to walk like a man, from an initial glance it looked like a crocodile that could walk, however, the head of this monster was like a frog, its two eyes protruded out and its mouth was wide open, its tongue was like an arrow that shot forth, swiftly wrapping up the small 'jellyfishes' and sending them into its mouth, its speed was phenomenal and in the blink of an eye, more than half of the hundred 'jellyfishes' were already eaten.

This monster that suddenly appeared made the hands of the two people sweat.

“What should we do? Should we wake everyone up to run? Or

should we fight the monster? Or will the monster leave after eating all the small jellyfishes?” Many thoughts flashed through Qin Jiagui’s mind, from the figure of this monster, it would likely be difficult to deal with it, it was fortunate that the other party had not noticed them.

The little ‘jellyfishes’ seemed to become frantic as their floating bodies trembled, their speed was too slow and although they attempted to swiftly hide into the ground, they were all eaten within two to three minutes by the nameless monster.

The small ‘jellyfishes’ contained a poison within them that could make one hallucinate, even strong monsters like the Golden Gnome King and Golden Goblin did not dare to allow them to come into contact with their skin, all creatures have something that counteracts them and the monster before them was clearly something that could eat the little ‘jellyfishes’ without fear of its poison.

After swallowing over hundred of the young Mother Earths, this monster patted its belly before suddenly turning its head, its protruding eyes landing on Qin Jiagui and Yuan Ni Ping.

Qin Jiagui who was still hesitating understood that they had been discovered by the other party.

“There’s a monster!” Qin Jiagui suddenly yelled, the group who were in a deep sleep were shocked awake, as for the monster with the crocodile body and frog head, it suddenly pounced as its mouth opened wide, the blood red tongue within immediately shooting forward.

Qin Jiagui dodged to the side as the tongue shot into a tree trunk.

“Chi! Chi!”

The green smoke immediately emitted from the tree trunk as a small hole appeared on it.

Taking in a breath of cold air, he realised this monster’s tongue actually contained such a frightening poison.

“Ni Ping! Quick! Run away!” Qin Jiagui shouted at Yuan Ni Ping to back away as his right arm stretched forward, half his hand had already turned to metal but he did not face the monster head on but rather continued to dodge to the side. He wanted to delay as much time with the monster as possible to allow the others to get up and deal with the monster together.

He did not have the ‘Eye of Perception’ and was unable to tell what tier this monster was at or how powerful it was, however, he could instinctively feel that this monster would be difficult to deal with and fighting it alone would be too dangerous.

By the side, Ma Zi Ye, Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shichang, Zhou Birong and the others began to get a grasp on the situation.

Zhou Birong sat up as she drew the pistol from her waist as gunshots resounded.

The monster which was rushing over suddenly let out a frightening roar from its mouth as six bullets hit squarely on its body, sparks exploded out but the six bullets only managed to cause two scales to drop without causing any wounds, the scales on the body of the monster were simply too tough.

Zhou Birong threw away her pistol as her right hand began to transform, a black metal claw with three talons appeared, getting up as she rushed forward.

◦

Zhou Birong and Zhao Shichang pounced towards the monster while Ma Zi Ye who was close behind them activated the 'Web of Metal'.

This was how they had planned to work together, Zhou Birong and Zhao Shichang would protect Ma Zi Ye and allowing her to fully utilise the 'Web of Metal', trapping the enemy.

Qin Jiagui who had dodged to the side noticed that Zhao Shichang, Zhou Birong and Ma Zi Ye had already rushed to the front and immediately activated the 'Demolishing Iron Fist', howling as he pounced.

Below Ma Zi Ye's feet, strips of black rope-like objects began to extend outwards forming a black metal shaped thing that continued to shoot outwards like a spiders web.

This monster did not expect the group's reaction to be so fast, it could feel that the group was much weaker than it and thus rushed forward, the innate senses of a wild beast were much greater than

Qin Jiagui and the others but things were occurring out of its expectation.

By the time it realised that something was amiss, the ‘Web of Metal’ had already been sent forth, Ma Zi Ye was at the precipice of breaking into the tier two stage and the speed of activation and might of the ‘Web of Metal’ had risen, in the blink of an eye it had already locked the feet of the monster in place.

Zhou Birong, Zhao Shichang and Qin Jiagui pounced from three different directions.

“Thud!”

Suddenly, a blood red light flashed like a whip, Zhou Birong suddenly cried miserably as her body fell to the ground, her hands clutching her face as she shrieked.

Chapter 103: Disfigured

The group behind had just rushed forward and looked at Zhou Birong who was currently rolling on the ground, large amounts of green smoke were rising from her face as ‘Chi! Chi!’ sounds resounded, the group were stunned and at the same time, Qin Jiagui’s ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’ and Zhao Shichang’s ‘Bone Blade’ struck the monster.

“Bang!”

Qin Jiagui’s right fist exploded forth as the scales ruptured, the might of the Demolishing Iron Fist was extremely strong and it had immediately caused a bloody hole to appear on the body of the monster. As for Zhao Shichang, his Bone Blade managed to directly pierce one chinese foot into the body of the monster.

This monster’s entire body was covered in scales and its defense was very frightening, compared to the Demolishing Iron Fist, the Bone Blade was clearly more effective.

The monster howled after suffering two blows, the Web of Metal had lasted for only a second before losing its effectiveness, Ma Zi Ye leapt through the air as she threw out a flying kick.

“Bang!”

Ma Zi Ye’s kick was blocked by the monster but when she landed on the ground, she turned as she threw out a sweeping kick.

“Pa!”

The crisp sound of bone snapping could be heard as the monster fell to the ground, its right leg had been hit by Ma Zi Ye’s sweeping kick and the monster’s large body fell to the ground.

Seeing the chance, Qin Jiagui, Zhao Shichang and Ma Zi Ye acted at the same time, hoping to deal the final blow to the monster.

Ma Zi Ye and Qin Jiagui were already at the precipice to breaking through to the next stage, if they were able to kill this monster they would definitely promote to become a tier two dark iron warrior.

Zhao Shichang was slightly weaker than them but the monster before them was extremely strong, possibly even a tier two beast soldier, if it really was, he would also be able to advance after killing the monster.

“Roar!” The monster that had fallen to the ground gripped the ground with its two hands as its entire body shivered, suddenly exploding forward with a frightening strength like that of a tank as it rushed forward.

Qin Jiagui, Zhao Shichang and Ma Zi Ye spat out blood, they were knocked aside however one of their three attacks managed to land on the monster.

The monster was crazed as it let out frightening howls, crazily rushing around as all the people hurriedly dodged.

“Aaaahhh!” Suddenly the shrill cry of a female could be heard and Qin Jiagui who had fallen on the ground felt his heart lurch. When he turned around, he saw Ning Yan who was in a dream-like state being hit by the monster as she dodged a little too late.

Seeing that it was not Yuan Ni Ping, Qin Jiagui let out a sigh of relief.

Although Ning Yan was a member of the group and their classmate, Qin Jiagui did not really like her. Qin Jiagui had attempted to chase her when he had just entered university, but that was already a long while back.

Ning Yan had been knocked by the monster and her body heavily flew away before landing with a ‘thud’. The monster opened its gaping maw as a bloody red tongue shot forward and landed on Ning Yan’s face.

“Chi! Chi!”

Green smoke immediately began to emanate from Ning Yan’s face as the frightening toxic poison instantly melted her face, similar to what had occurred to Zhou Birong.

An indescribable pain made Ning Yan no longer be able to maintain her calm and otherworldly aloofness, she could not help

but clutch her face as she let out a shrill cry, wildly rolling on the ground as the pain consumed her.

The other females all felt their hairs stand on end as they retreated further away in fear, what was more frightening than becoming disfigured to them?

“Ha!” Qin Jiagui roared as Zhao Shichang and Ma Zi Ye who were beside him climbed back up, on the other side, half of Zhang Zhong Mou’s face had already become stone, taking the metal spade from Li Dong’s hands, he then hurled it towards the monster.

Ma Zi Ye stomped her feet as she once again activated the Web of Metal, Qin Jiagui’s right arm swung as the Demolishing Iron Fist heavily smashed forward, Zhao Shichang had just fallen to the ground and felt something on his back that made his back ache, reaching his hand back, he realised that it was the four golden bone spikes that were in the form of the bone spike wheel which he had taken from the Golden Gnome King.

Feeling the bone spike wheel, Zhao Shichang immediately acted as his left hand grabbed and tossed it toward the monster.

“Whish”

The wheel flew forward and streaked forward like a faint rainbow, its speed was like a lightning bolt as it sped off.

The monster could sense the danger as it waved its arm.

“Chi!”

The wheel had flown away but the monster shrieked as its left arm was snapped at the elbow, blood began to flow out like a spring.

The monster shrieked as it thought of struggling but once again found itself trapped without any way to move, Ma Zi Ye's Web of Metal had activated and halted its movements.

At this instant, Qin Jiagui and Zhao Shichang howled at the same time as they pounced, Qin Jiagui smashed with his Demolishing Iron Fist at the monster's head while Zhao Shichang's one foot long Bone Blade pierced through the scales as it buried deep into the heart of the monster.

The two people had acted at almost the same time and the monster's shrieks were cut off as the Demolishing Iron Fist smashed its face in, the huge body immediately collapsed to the ground lifeless.

“Aaaahh!” Qin Jiagui yelled in elation, he had originally been at the cusp of breaking through to the next stage and if he were to absorb the crystal energy of the strong monster, he would definitely be able to become tier two.

A tier two dark iron warrior, this was a qualitative change, totally different from that of the first tier.

Qin Jiagui's elation was apparent, even a calm person like him could not help but yell out, he had clearly been yearning to become stronger, seeing the black crystal appear from the smashed in face of the monster, Qin Jiagui was full of smiles as he stretched his hand forward in elation to grab it, however, he only grasped air as the black crystal became a streak of light and flew into the right arm of Zhao Shichang, disappearing from sight.

The smile on Qin Jiagui's face became rigid as he turned his head with some difficulty, finally noticing Zhao Shichang's shocked and happy expression.

Zhao Shichang had acted at the same time as Qin Jiagui and although the might of the Demolishing Iron Fist was stronger, what finally killed the monster was Zhao Shichang's Bone Blade which pierced its heart.

Zhao Shichang's expression of astonishment quickly became happiness as the transformation of his right arm quickly extended till the shoulder region before stopping.

"Aaaahhh!" Zhao Shichang roared, this monster was definitely a tier two beast soldier and it had actually allowed Zhao Shichang to immediately promote to the tier two dark iron warrior stage.

Feeling the strange energy within his right arm beginning to change into qi, feeling the appearance of the 'door' within his shoulder, his entire left arm was covered in a layer of hard black crust, suddenly, Zhao Shichang yelled as he swung his left arm.

Chapter 104: The Tier Two Ability Of Zhao Shichang

“Swish”

A right arm expanded as an exceptionally sharp snow white bone blade appeared, together with the expanded right arm, their total length actually reached two metres.

This strange right arm swung down together with that enormous bone blade, slicing a thick tree that was quite a distance away like tofu, causing it to fall with a ‘Bang!’.

Zhang Zhong Mou hurried forward to inspect the tree trunk and noticed that the cut was smooth as he hooted: “Good fellow, so sharp.”

At this moment, all eyes were gathered on Zhao Shichang’s body, his right arm had thoroughly become akin to the forelimb of bugs or similar creatures. It was roughly a metre long, coupled with the frightening snow white bone blade that was also approximately one metre long, it was around two metres in length and the snow white blade made all the people feel shivers go down their spine.

Qin Jiagui’s face was rigid as he watched from the side, he felt disappointed as he lifted his head to look at the dark sky.

It was simply too unfair, how could it be like this? He was clearly stronger than Zhao Shichang and the monster should have died

under his hands and should have allowed him to promote, how could it be Zhao Shichang..... The heavens were simply being unfair to him.

Qin Jiagui was silent when suddenly his hands felt tight, they were firmly held by a pair of delicate hands.

Qin Jiagui turned his head in shock but realised that it was Yuan Ni Ping.

The others did not notice Qin Jiagui's current disappointment, only Yuan Ni Ping noticed this. She knew that Qin Jiagui excelled at everything but due to this he was very competitive and loved to win, Su Yu was much stronger than him and he was still not very convinced about it. What more, Zhao Shichang who was inferior to him actually promoted before him and this made him very unsettled.

Looking at Yuan Ni Ping's gentle eyes, Qin Jiagui immediately felt comforted.

On the ground, Zhou Birong who had been injured was already sitting up. She had stopped yelling as the powerful strange energy within her body circulated, the wounds on her face that were caused by the poison were slowly recovering.

Ning Yan also climbed back up, her hands were still clutching her face as she softly moaned, the strange energy within her body was much lesser than that of Zhou Birong and her recuperative speed was much slower. At this moment the group could see her

disfigured face between the gaps of her fingers and the group did not dare to even take a second glance.

Ning Yan who once had a beautiful visage now had a face that was sinister and frightening, the group saw this and all felt extremely awkward.

Ma Zi Ye had a bitter smile on her face as she looked at Zhao Shichang, she did not expect that he would be the first among the first tier to promote to the second tier.

Restraining the strange energy, Zhao Shichang's right arm which was transformed into that of an insect returned to normal as elation could be seen on his face.

Half a night had already gone by, although Ma Zi Ye was not as disheartened as Qin Jiagui, she still felt rather depressed as she had been longing to promote to a tier two dark iron warrior, in that way she would be able to close the gap between him by a little bit.....

Thinking of this, Ma Zi Ye grabbed a packet of instant noodles as she began to slowly chew, her eyes often drifting to Su Yu who was currently having a peaceful sleep.

By morning, Zhou Birong's face had already fully recovered, the poison on the tongue of the monster was extremely corrosive but the strange energy within her body was equally powerful.

Looking at Zhou Birong who had fully recovered, Ning Yan clutched her own face and suddenly shouted: “Why..... Why are you fine already?” After the blow last night, Ning Yan could no longer keep her calm and seeing Zhou Birong fully recovered, she became crazed as she suddenly screamed.

She was touching her face and could feel the many scars that had formed on it, there was a burning sensation all over and although she could not see it, she could guess that she was as ugly as a malicious spirit right now.

The people all around were shocked awake by Ning Yan as they all looked over.

“Sister Zhou, you’re alright already?” Looking at Zhou Birong’s recovered face, Ma Zi Ye smiled as she asked.

Zhou Birong nodded in response before sighing, she noticed Ning Yan who seemed rather crazed and could tell from the expressions of the people all around that no one had any good feelings towards Ning Yan and no one really cared even though Ning Yan had been injured.

Jade’s relationship with Ning Yan back in the school was rather good but after Ning Yan’s personality took a strange turn, Jade could not get close to her and she feared that if she attempted to console Ning Yan, Ning Yan would view it as being ridiculed and thus chose not to console her but let her calm herself down.

“We were affected by the same type of poison..... I believe that

my recuperative abilities are stronger because of the amount of strange energy within me..... Ning Yan, don't be anxious, I believe that if you advance to tier one, the scars on your face will also completely heal." Zhou Birong had thought hard before speaking, she was quite a few years older than Ning Yan and although Ning Yan did not really conform to the group, she did not feel repulsed by her and spoke to her like a big sister talking to a little sister.

Hearing Zhou Birong's words, Ning Yan finally began to calm down a little as she turned around, not letting anyone see her face. "Chi!" A big piece of cloth was torn from her clothing as she wrapped her face, only exposing her two eyes.

Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shichang and the others exchanged glances as they secretly laughed, this woman really cared too much about her appearance, she was so worried about exposing her disfigured face.

The few women understood how Ning Yan felt, the concern a woman felt for her appearance could sometimes even exceed that of her life, although they were in a forest where they could lose their lives at any time, this was a huge mental blow for Ning Yan.

Ning Yan turned back as the cloth around her face was bound tightly, only revealing her eyes which no longer contained her cool demeanour earlier but was replaced by viciousness and bloodthirstiness, her whole body was shaking as though she were extremely agitated by something.

A large majority of the group did not really care for her and busied themselves with other things after taking a glance, the mess

the night before had prevented them from having a good night's rest.

Jade rubbed her half open eyes as she looked at Su Yu who continued to sleep soundly, a fire burned in her chest as she kicked: "Stupid person, look at how well you're sleeping."

Zhang Zhong Mou yawned: "Jade, I think it's your turn to carry him."

Jade's face became red as she said angrily: "Zhang Zhong Mou, what are you talking about? Are you looking for a beating? Do you believe me if I say that I'll give you panda eyes?" Raising her fists as ill intent rose on her face.

Chapter 105: Reappearance Of The Giant Foot

Zhang Zhong Mou hurriedly waved his hands: “Sorry big sister, pretend I didn’t speak.” In his heart he was thinking that Jade was simply too fierce, if she said she would act she would definitely act, Ma Zi Ye was definitely more fun to tease. Although they often squabbled, she would not easily hit someone, although Ma Zi Ye was much stronger than Jade, she would not lightly throw her fists.

Qin Jiagui had already recovered from his disheartened state the night before as he retrieved the map to carefully inspect. A serious expression could be seen on his face, by his estimates, with the current speed they were moving at, they would be able to reach the exit indicated on the map within seven to eight days.

Only Zhao Shichang looked full of energy while the others seemed to be very lethargic from lack of sleep, constantly yawning. Zhao Shichang felt that his entire body was filled with energy, after promoting to tier two, not only did his physical strength rise, he was also now the strongest one in the group besides Su Yu who was sleeping, he had a feeling like he was the leader surge within him and as he looked at the group, he felt as though he were a pillar of the group.

The group had managed to pack everything as they prepared to move out when suddenly thunderous sounds of ‘Kaboom!’ ‘Kaboom!’ transmitted over from far away.

Things happened so suddenly that the group were given a fright

as they all lifted their heads to look into the distance. A huge foot the size of a mountain could be seen breaking through the clouds as it stepped on the forest below, exploding forth with the thunderous ‘Kaboom!’ sounds, the ground trembled as Qin Jiagui and the others who were far away could still feel the imposing pressure.

The expressions on the faces of everyone had swiftly changed, although this was the second time they were encountering this, this scene still made them feel stunned as their bodies began to feel cold. Their brains seemed to no longer have any cognitive processes as they all lifted their heads and stared into the distance.

This huge foot had broke through the cloud layer and landed when another huge foot also broke through the clouds and landed.

“Kaboom!”

The ground trembled again causing tens of thousands of monsters within the forest to shiver, as the huge foot landed, the other huge foot lifted as it went above the clouds before coming back down again.

The group still looked on in a daze as the huge feet continued to rise and fall, from one side of the horizon disappearing into the other side of the horizon. The ‘Kaboom!’ sounds swiftly grew further away before everything became peaceful once again as though the events earlier had not occurred.

Only after the giant feet had thoroughly disappeared did the

group finally come to their senses as they exchanged glances, their faces were pale and even Zhao Shichang who had promoted to a tier two dark iron warrior no longer felt any elation as his hands clenched tightly, his lips shivered and he seemed to be muttering something.

Qin Jiagui and Yuan Ni Ping were huddled close together, witnessing that giant foot made everyone feel cold, there was no question that if that huge foot which was like a mountain stepped onto them, they would instantly become meat pulp, regardless of tier two or three, they would all be squashed into mud.

A feeling of hopelessness welled up within them.

“Let’s go, we will only need seven to eight days to get out of this damned forest. Once we find the exit, no matter how frightening or strange this world is, it will be inconsequential to us.” Qin Jiagui’s will was firm as he forced himself to calm down.

His words had a strong persuasive power as Ma Zi Ye acknowledged while lifting several big bags from the ground: “It’s time we move out, let’s hope the precious treasure map is real and we are able to find the exit earlier.”

“Move out!” Zhao Shichang recalled that he was the only tier two dark iron warrior and should naturally take the lead as he lifted a few bags before walking forward first.

Qin Jiagui hurriedly called out: “Wrong way.” before looking at the map again and stuffing it into his bosom, lifting up a few bags

he began walking in another direction.

Zhao Shichang was mute and felt rather embarrassed, Zhang Zhong Mou looked over at him as he laughed heartily: “Brother Zhao, you seem overly impatient and excited.”

Zhao Shichang took a deep breath to calm himself down before drily laughing: “The frightening scene earlier really scared me, I actually thought that was the correct way.”

Zhang Zhong Mou placed a cigarette in his mouth as he lit it and took a long puff before lifting Su Yu, placing him onto his back. Within this group, he was the only one with a cigarette addiction thus he could not be bothered to offer the others cigarettes.

Jade was beside him fanning her face: “Early in the morning why are you smoking already, you’re forcing us to inhale secondhand smoke, you must be willing to compensate for the loss to our health.”

Zhang Zhong Mou took another long puff before replying: “Jade, you won’t understand it. We all have strange energy within our bodies and this little smoke won’t be able to affect our fitness, your words are too severe.”

Ma Zi Ye laughed as she interrupted: “Jade, don’t listen to this big cigarette addict, there’s no point trying to talk sense into him.”

Jade nodded as she earnestly replied: “As the saying goes,

beautiful women use actions rather than words.”

Zhang Zhong Mou felt speechless: “Beautiful woman? You’re a beautiful woman? Ai.....”

Jade’s face immediately turned red from anger as she put her hands in akimbo: “What’s the matter? This lady isn’t a beautiful woman? Are your eyes located at your butt? You can’t even differentiate between beauty and ugliness?”

Ma Zi Ye faintly smiled as she shook her head, this Jade was simply too fierce, her words made her feel like hooting on the inside. To be fair, Jade was rather pretty but her actions were too coarse like that of a male, making it difficult for people to associate her with a beautiful woman.

Zhang Zhong Mou was silent as he continued to carry Su Yu, puffing as he walked beside Qin Jiagui, whether it be him or Su Yu, they were both afraid of Jade.

Qin Jiagui was in the lead with Zhao Shichang by his side, Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang, Lei Rui and the others who had not advanced to the first tier were in the centre while Zhou Birong, Ma Zi Ye and the rest stood in the rear. The trees in the forest were sparse and distinct but the direction which Qin Jiagui followed based on the map was filled with dense trees with barely any room to maneuver, the group could only progress at a slow speed as Zhao Shichang continued to sweep his right hand with a faint smile on his face while he paved the way.

His metre long arm was covered in a hard crust and a metre long blade extended from it, this bone blade could extend and shorten according to his will and it was currently roughly a chinese foot long, easily slicing through all the branches, vines and thorns in the way.

This time, Qin Jiagui fell behind him and allowed Zhao Shichang to use his bone blade to open a path, improving their overall speed.

◦

“Brother Zhao, so formidable!” Zhang Zhong Mou who was carrying Su Yu spoke up.

“Haha.....” Zhao Shichang laughed, although his face seemed indifferent, he was exceptionally elated in his heart.

Chapter 106: Feeding Water

Along the way they did not meet with any danger, only encountering an area which was in a state of disarray where everything was destroyed and the gruesome corpses of a group of Gnomes laid there.

These corpses were either decapitated or disemboweled, their deaths did not seem to have been done by other monsters and seemed likely to be caused by humans.

Everyone felt inwardly stunned at the corpses whose fresh blood had not congealed, it seemed as though they had been killed not long ago. Could it be that within this forest not far away, there was actually a small group of humans like theirs? Or could there be a pair like York and Jennifer?

Initially, thinking that they were going to meet another group of humans, everyone felt slightly excited but upon thinking back to the couple of York and Jennifer, their hearts sank. Within this forest, meeting other groups of people was not necessarily a good thing. There would possibly even be negative consequences.

“Everyone be careful.” Qin Jiagui softly reminded as everyone nodded, the expressions on their faces becoming rigid.

In the road that followed, they did not meet any humans or monsters and by midday, the group finally stopped to rest. With their physical stamina, they had rushed for an entire morning but even then most of the group had gotten tired even with the strange

energy within their bodies.

Resting while eating and drinking, they realised they had already been in this forest for nine days. Each day was like living a nightmare and they were thankful that this would only last for another seven to eight days. They still had the hope of finding the exit to forever leave this place and this was the only thing that was holding them together.

“Su Yu continues to be in a deep sleep, do we need to feed him anything?” Zhang Zhong Mou placed Su Yu down as Ma Zi ye suddenly questioned.

“That’s right, what’s wrong with this fellow? How can he still be sleeping? Can we feed him? He doesn’t seem like he would be able to swallow anything.” Zhang Zhong Mou could not help but tousle his hair like Su Yu as he felt a headache.

Ma Zi Ye then replied: “Why not we try to feed him some water first.”

Zhang Zhong Mou nodded as he placed Su Yu’s head onto his leg, pinching his mouth as he attempted to pour water in. It seemed as though he had never done this before because none of the water entered the mouth but rather made Su Yu’s clothes wet.

Ma Zi Ye shook her head: “Big cigarette addict, your hands are simply too clumsy.”

Zhang Zhong Mou then replied: “Jade, why don’t you help to feed.”

Jade seemed to speak unwillingly: “Why must it be me? Only a ghost would attend to this fellow.” Although she said this, she still crouched down to attempt to do so but she was even worse than Zhang Zhong Mou, the water did not enter Su Yu’s mouth but rather entered into his nostrils.

Although he was unconscious, the water which had entered his nose made him immediately react as he sneezed, forcing the water from within out.

Jade was shocked as she shouted in elation: “You’re awake?” only to notice that Su Yu continued to sleep after sneezing.

Zhang Zhong Mou then helplessly said: “Jade, your actions seems to be even more retarded than mine.”

Jade’s face turned red but she did not have any retort.

Ma Zi Ye who was watching by the side gently bit her lip as she spoke up: “Let me try.”

Jade stood to the side with her red face as she passed the bottle of water to Ma Zi Ye.

Although they were both women, Ma Zi Ye was much better than Jade as she slowly fed the water bit by bit into Su Yu’s mouth, only

when the water seemed like it would overflow from his mouth would she stop. After feeding several times, she finally stopped before helping Su Yu to gently wipe his mouth.

Zhang Zhong Mou watched from the side as he sighed: “I did not expect you to have such a gentle side, whoever marries you will definitely be a lucky man. You can be aggressive and yet gentle at the same time.”

Ma Zi Ye glared at him understanding that he was merely jesting, she did not respond to his words because who knew what demeaning words he would follow up with if she did so.

Jade laughed: “Old Mou, it’s really rare for you to praise a woman, since you admire her so much, why don’t you just marry her? This will then be your good fortune.”

“Eh?” Zhang Zhong Mou’s face actually turned red as he drily laughed.

Ma Zi Ye faintly smiled as she looked over at Zhang Zhong Mou and Jade: “I actually feel that the two of you are quite compatible, your characters are very similar.”

“Ah!” Zhang Zhong Mou and Jade yelled out at the same time as they exchanged glances and feigned vomiting at the same time.

“Hey, am I really so unbearable? What are you vomiting for?” Jade immediately raged as she gave Zhang Zhong Mou a flying

kick.

Zhang Zhong Mou groaned: “Didn’t you almost vomit? Anyways, you’re young master Yu’s person, this little person wouldn’t dare be haughty in front of you. No, no, I wouldn’t even dare to think of it. How could I possibly dare to snatch you from young master Yu? I still want to keep this small life to look at beautiful women and smoke more cigarettes.”

Jade was so angry that her face had reddened as she shrilly screamed: “What do you mean I’m young master Yu’s person? This stupid Su Yu is even more disgusting than you, even if all the guys in the world die I won’t want him.”

Ma Zi Ye thought to herself strangely: “Why does Jade hate Su Yu so much?”

Zhang Zhong Mou seemed to be able to guess what Ma Zi Ye was thinking as he softly whispered to her: “I know why, when Su Yu was young he took a peek at Jade when she was bathing and even touched her butt.”

Ma Zi Ye’s face had an expression of incredulity as she looked at Zhang Zhong Mou then at the sleeping Su Yu before replying: “Impossible, how could he be such a person? You are more likely to commit such acts.”

Zhang Zhong Mou hurriedly answered: “I’m serious, Su Yu has been lascivious since young, we used to call him ‘Beast Yu’, like that of an animal.

Ma Zi Ye burst out into laughter: “‘Beast Yu’? This nickname is quite interesting, it’s a pity he’s changed already. I would really like to see what his beast-like nature used to be.”

Zhang Zhong Mou was speechless after hearing this as he lightly kicked Su Yu and sighed: “This fellow is so fortunate.....” taking out a cigarette, he prepared to light it but there was suddenly a commotion from not far away.

Qin Jiagui and Zhao Shichang immediately stood up and the group immediately entered into a cautious state, the smile on Ma Zi Ye’s face immediately receded and a valiant aura was released from her body.

Zhang Zhong Mou kept his lighter as he placed the cigarette in his hand behind his ear before standing up, staring at the area where the commotion was.

Looking past the dense forest, the group could see a group of Gnomes wearing leather armour, wooden shields and metal spades roughly thirty metres away, there were approximately fifteen to sixteen of them and at this moment the Gnomes had placed their wooden shields on the ground as they wielded their metal spades, continually digging.

This group of Gnomes did not notice them as the group silently watched, they exchanged puzzled glances as they thought, could the gnomes possibly be making a new dwelling?

The group quickly realised that this was not the case, at another side there were another seven to eight Gnomes with dismayed expressions on their faces as they carried an enormous Gnome.

The group looked at the enormous Gnome which had golden spots on it and recalled Su Yu mentioning that these monsters with golden spots on them had the heritage of the golden race and that enormous Gnome was likely to be a Golden Gnome.

Chapter 107: Summoning The Swarm

However, this Golden Goblin had clearly died and its entire body was covered in blood, at this moment it was being lifted by the group of dismayed Gnomes as they respectfully placed him by the side before continuing to dig a big hole.

The group watched all of this and immediately understood that this group of Gnomes was planning to bury the Golden Gnome.

Who knew that this group of monsters would actually have the empathy to bury corpses of their own race, the group were stunned and puzzled as Zhang Zhong Mou could not hold it in any longer and wanted to speak when Li Dong who was behind him squeezed forward in an attempt to get a better look when he stepped onto a dried twig creating a snapping sound.

This sound immediately alerted the group of Gnomes that were roughly thirty metres away and over twenty pairs of eyes instantly looked over at the group.

“Roar!” The group of Gnomes seemed to be exceptionally infuriated due to being peeked on as they immediately picked up their wooden shields as they wielded their metal spades and rushed towards the group.

Over twenty Gnomes surged forward, although they were the lowest tier of monster, their numbers were too plentiful and the group did not dare to be flippant as Zhao Shichang stretched his right arm which immediately began to twist and extend, swinging

it, a thick tree by his side was immediately chopped in two. He had already advanced to a tier two dark iron warrior and his right arm together with the sharp bone blade which could extend and retract at his will was frightening. Looking at this group of Gnomes, he wanted to test his new found abilities.

Turning, the bone blade extended and combined with the right arm to reach an astounding two metres, sweeping forward, fresh blood splattered through the air as two Gnomes miserably screamed, their wooden shields together with their bodies completely rent in two.

Ma Zi Ye said in a heavy voice: “Zhao Shichang, have you forgotten what we talked about? Leave these monsters to the rest to handle.”

Zhao Shichang’s bone blade was extremely powerful and he felt extremely satisfied, hearing Ma Zi Ye’s words, he laughed: “Alright, let’s leave it to them.” Although he said this, his body continued to pounce, the bone blade sweeping once again as two other Gnomes were chopped at the legs while he cackled: “These Gnomes are simply too weak, I’ll stop killing them, you guys go ahead.”

Zhou Birong glanced to the side at Ning Yan whose face was currently wrapped up in cloth: “So what’s it going to be? Are you still not going to kill monsters? If you wish to recover your looks, you will definitely need to promote to the first tier.”

Ning Yan’s hands firmly grasped a metal spade as light seemed to shine from her eyes, filled with killing intent. However, this

quickly changed to fear, as though she were in facing a huge dilemma.

If she wanted to recover her looks, she would have to kill monsters, however, it seemed that killing monsters created a terrifying fear within her, these two thoughts continued to conflict with each other making her unable to make a decision.

Zhou Birong saw Ning Yan's body language and assumed that she was merely too afraid to kill the Gnomes, stretching her right hand forward, three claws extended out, as a Gnome was immediately clawed till its guts spilled out, thereafter, Zhou Birong tossed the Gnome before Ning Yan as it continued to howl, it was severely injured but had not yet died.

Zhou Birong used an encouraging look to egg Ning Yan on.

Ning Yan hesitated for a moment before lifting the metal spade and smashed towards the head of the Gnome.

As the metal spade was about to hit, Ning Yan suddenly became rigid as the metal spade stopped just before the throat of the Gnome, no longer continuing down.

“No!” Suddenly, Ning Yan threw away the metal spade as she stumbled backwards, her two hands clutching at her chest, her eyes filled with an expression of fear as she muttered: “No, no..... I can't..... I can't kill..... No..... no.....” She then touched her disfigured face as a struggle could be seen in her eyes, it was not something that words could describe.

It seemed that killing a monster was extremely terrifying for Ning Yan.

Ning Yan's weird actions made Zhou Birong stunned, was killing a Gnome really that difficult?

"Ning Yan, what's the matter with you?" Zhou Birong was very curious as she walked over and asked in concern.

Ning Yan turned around as she used her arms to hug herself, her entire body was trembling but she did not speak, she seemed to be closing off her heart, purposefully distancing herself from the group.

Zhou Birong stood there dazed, not sure what to say.

Qin Jiagui, Ma Zi Ye and the others who had already promoted to the first tier followed their previous arrangement and only injured the Gnomes, leaving them for those who had not promoted to the first tier.

When the twenty odd Gnomes were finally killed, Li Dong had finally advanced and became a tier one dark iron warrior.

Li Dong's transformation also occurred on his right hand, Zhang Zhong Mou laughed: "Li Dong, why don't you showcase to the group what your abilities are?"

Li Dong immediately clenched his right hand as it began to swell, small hole began to appear atop it, making it seem like a beehive.

Everyone felt extremely uncomfortable because this transformation was simply too ugly, the small holes that covered the surface made one feel uneasy.

“What is this ability?” Zhang Zhong Mou was extremely curious after seeing Li Dong’s right hand become something like a beehive.

Li Dong looked at the extremely puzzled expressions on the faces of the group and could not help but speak in discontentment: “Ignore the ugly appearance, this ability may not lose to any of you.....”

Thereafter, Li Dong slowly closed his eyes as a he suddenly shouted, the holes contracted and expanded as buzzing noises could be heard, strange yellow wasps began to fly out of the holes as a buzzing sound filled the air, there seemed to be at least a hundred of them.

“This..... This is.....” The group were in shock.

Li Dong was rather proud of himself: “My ability allows me to summon groups of poisonous wasps, these wasps have poison and listen to my orders to attack. What do you guys think of my ability?”

Zhao Shichang, Qin Jiagui, Ma Zi Ye and the others exchanged

glances, this was the first time they had encountered such a unique ability and his transformed right hand could actually summon living creatures? This was simply too inconceivable and freakish.

Li Dong continued: “However, summoning this group of poisonous wasps is extremely taxing on the usage of strange energy. I’ve already used all my strange energy and have only managed to summon such a small group of poisonous wasps. Haha, I really wish to know what it would be like once I reach the second tier.....”

Having said this, Li Dong’s face filled with anticipation. Although the others found his right hand unbearably ugly, he was extremely satisfied and felt that his ability was very unique, he even felt that his ability was possibly even greater than Qin Jiagui and Su Yu.

“If I am able to promote to the third tier..... I think that I’ll be stronger than Su Yu.” Li Dong silently thought to himself with a satisfied smile on his face.

Ma Zi Ye muttered: “You actually need to expend large amounts of strange energy? I understand, these poisonous wasps are likely formed from the strange energy but this ability is definitely unique.”

The group would have never imagined that the strange energy could actually be used to form living creatures, looking at the buzzing yellow wasps, they were all bemused.

LI Dong’s face was extremely satisfied as he rescinded his strange

energy, his right arm returned to normal as the buzzing poisonous wasps instantly disappeared.

“Let’s go take a look at the corpse of the Golden Gnome.” Qin Jiagui was already walking forward, he wanted to check the corpse of the Golden Gnome. There was the precious treasure within the Golden Gnome’s body and he wanted to see if the precious treasure was still there.

When Qin Jiagui walked to the side of the corpse, his body suddenly shivered as the expression on his face changed.

Chapter 108: Stream

Qin Jiagui walked beside the corpse of the Golden Gnome and his body suddenly shivered as his expression changed.

Zhao Shichang who followed closely behind him also let out an exclamation.

The corpse of the Golden Gnome lying on the ground had been desecrated by somebody and its chest and stomach had been dug out, its four limbs had also been chopped off and it was twisted like a piece of fried dough crisp, this Golden Gnome had died a very tragic death. When Qin Jiagui and Zhao Shichang noticed this, their minds immediately had the same thought, this Golden Gnome had been killed by humans.

Qin Jiagui was hopeful as he still stretched out his hand to thoroughly inspect the corpse, however, there was indeed no treasure and it was likely that the person who killed it had already taken the precious treasure.

The Golden Gnome was weaker than the Golden Gnome King but it was still a monster that was on the same level as a Golden Goblin, a person who could kill a Golden Gnome needed to at least be an expert of tier two or higher.

Qin Jiagui and Zhao Shichang exchanged glances, Zhao Shichang did not feel very worried as he was already a tier two dark iron warrior, even if it were a living Golden Gnome, he would have dared to engage it in combat.

Qin Jiagui, on the other hand, had thought much further than him. He was currently trying to imagine the person who killed the Golden Gnome, he had tortured and killed the Golden Gnome, regardless of how the person really was, he was definitely cruel and was he working alone or was he together with a small group?

This was merely the corpse of a Golden Gnome and it could not give them too much information.

After a short rest, the group pressed forward. Su Yu continued to be unconscious as Zhang Zhong Mou, Ma Zi ye, Jade and the others gradually began to grow more concerned although Su Yu was alright by all appearances and seemed to be in a regular sleep.

After struggling past the dense forest, the features of the land began to change. Although the area in front of them did not have sparse vegetation, the ground was littered with more rocks as wild grass and shrubs became more scarce. This allowed the pace of the group to pick up, as the terrain grew steeper, the group saw a huge stone cliff that was roughly hundred metres high, the slope below it was covered in moss and different kinds of grass and flowers. What was more exciting for the group was that there was actually a stream at the bottom of the slope and from a distance, although the stream was very thin, it moved like a little snake and seeing a stream was something that made one feel happy.

“Everyone, be careful.” Zhao Shichang raised his voice, although the moss and vegetation on the slope was dense, the forest did not seem to have any poisonous bugs or snakes, they had lived within this forest for many days and had not seen even a single poisonous snake, this forest was simply too different from the forests back in

the world they were familiar with.

Qin Jiagui took out the map to take a look before looking at the surroundings, he realised that bypassing this area would be difficult and under the current circumstances they should follow the slope down before making further plans.

“Ni Ping, be careful. Hold on to me.” Qin Jiagui grabbed a vine as his other hand stretched towards his girlfriend Yuan Ni Ping.

Ma Zi Ye measured the slope with her eyes before placing all the bags of food in her possession down and began to help Zhang Zhong Mou to send Su Yu down.

Looking at Ma Zi Ye’s actions, the others also placed their bags below the slope and this would make it much easier to tackle the slope.

Although it was a slope, its incline was very steep and the group would need to use the vines and large amounts of vegetation on it to stabilise their bodies as they slowly made their way down, amongst the group, Zhao Shichang was the fastest.

Since entering tier two, the amount of strength within his body was clearly different. At this moment, he had already dumped his baggage down the slope and grabbed onto two vines as he jumped and fell directly downwards with a ‘Shuaaaa’ sound.

After a distance of forty to fifty metres, he had already arrived

at the bottom of the slope in the blink of an eye. After landing, he immediately tumbled to reduce the force of impact before standing up and steadying himself. Thereafter, he waved his hands at the people who were still slowly climbing down with a smile: “Hurry up, there’s no problem, just fall straight down.”

Zhao Shichang lifted his head and continued to wave when the smile on his face suddenly grew rigid as he yelled: “Everyone be careful! Hurry and fall!”

Above the slope, a crocodile-like monster that was standing like a human had suddenly appeared, its entire body was covered in scales and its head was like that of a frog, they had already met this type of monster the night before and Zhao Shichang had dealt the killing blow to the monster to promote to a tier two dark iron warrior.

The group did not expect that a monster would suddenly appear while they were making their way down the steep slope.

Hearing Zhao Shichang’s yell, the people who were climbing felt their hearts shiver as they lifted their heads, the image of the monster immediately sending a jolt through their bodies as the speed they scaled the slope became much faster.

“Ni Ping!” Qin Jiagui realised that they were in a very bad situation as he yelled while pulling his girlfriend, no longer caring about anything else as he hastily made his way down.

From the direction which the monster was sliding in, it was clear

that it was aiming for Zhang Zhong Mou, Ma Zi Ye and Su Yu.

Su Yu was unconscious, Zhang Zhong Mou and Ma Zi Ye were currently working together to carry him down, each of their hands were holding a vine as they slowly worked their way down. Amongst the group, they were the slowest and had fallen behind, the monster was currently moving directly towards them.

“Careful!” Zhou Birong who was on the other side screamed, she had been struck on the face by the monster and could still remember the pain that she had experienced, at this moment her pistol was already drawn. “Bang! Bang! Bang!” Following the sounds of firing, the last few bullets struck the chest of the monster.

The monster which had been sliding down trembled and stopped, turning to look in Zhou Birong’s direction.

Zhou Birong wanted to lure its attention and cause it to pounce towards her, thereafter she would let go of the vine and just fall, Zhao Shichang was at the bottom of the slope and he should be sufficient to deal with the monster, she was alright with risking injury.

Zhao Shichang pulled some vines as he began to climb up, however, it was more difficult to scale the slope and his speed of ascent was very slow. After halting for a moment and looking at Zhou Birong, it ignored her and continued towards Zhang Zhong Mou and the two others.

“Careful! Hurry and slide down!” Zhao Shichang yelled in panic.

“This damned monster.” Half of Zhang Zhong Mou’s face had already turned to stone and his heart was extremely anxious but helpless, he could only watch as the monster opened its mouth and suddenly shoot its blood red tongue forth.

“Hurry! Jump!” Zhang Zhong Mou let go of the vine as he hugged Su Yu and immediately slid down.

Ma Zi Ye was more precise and immediately grabbed a large bunch of vines as she let out a delicate shout, dodging the blood red tongue while forcefully breaking the vines which the monster was holding. “Hua la la!” sounds could be heard as rubble began to tumble down and Ma Zi Ye fell towards the ground together with the monster.

Chapter 109: Ma Zi Ye's New Abilities

“Bang!”

Zhang Zhong Mou, Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye and the monster tumbled and smashed into the ground at the same time as groans and miserable cries could be heard. Zhao Shichang who had climbed five to six metres high recovered from his shock as he hurriedly jumped down.

The monster tumbled about on the ground as it emitted out frightening noises from it's mouth. It's body weight was way more than Zhang Zhong Mou and Ma Zi Ye's weight as it crashed onto the ground with a forceful impact. Among everybody, Zhang Zhong Mou and Su Yu also fell and slid down the incline, suffering light injuries from the knocks. As for Ma Zi Ye, she continued to spare no effort as she pulled the large bunch of green vines, causing the green vines to snap. The monster howled tragically as it fell heavily towards the ground. Ma Zi Ye followed along and slid straight down, her two feet stepping down on the slope as she appeared to be stamping down while she was coming down.

“Bang”

A sound came from the ground, Ma Zi Ye tucked in her legs and she rolled down before flipping her body. Without saying a word, she took large strides before sending out a flying kick towards the monster's face who had just fell heavily onto the ground, still confused and disoriented.

“Ka Cha”

The monster’s face had no scales for protection, this particular kick of Ma Zi Ye was of her full strength. One must know that Ma Zi Ye was already on the verge of breaking through. The strange energy within her body when compared to a tier two dark iron warrior was not much weaker.

When this full powered kick landed on the monster, it howled as it’s eye sockets ruptured. When it finally reacted and wanted to flail about it’s hands to brush off Ma Zi Ye, it suddenly realized that it could not move its body at all.

It turns out that when Ma Zi Ye kicked the monster heavily on it’s face, at the same time she also released her Web of Metal.

This particular situation was the first time she utilised it while kicking and it was also done to such an effect. From below her right foot, a piece of dark steel extended out as it interweaved into a web, in almost no time a dark coloured web of metal was formed. Binding the monster’s entire body tightly, causing the monster to be suppressed and unable to strike back.

“Haa!”

Ma Zi Ye shouted out, although the web of metal could only maintain for approximately one second, that was more than enough. When she utilised the strange energy in her left leg again for the second time and heavily stamped down on the monster’s face.

The first strike had already caused the monster's face to completely sink in and its eyeballs nearly exploded. The following second attack that heavily landed down on the monster made it howl and sounds of cracking could be heard from its skull, followed by sounds of teeth and bone being shattered also rang out. The two eyeballs ruptured and the entire skull was like a mushy watermelon. Ma Zi Ye's left foot touched the muddy ground, fresh blood and white brain matter seeped out into the ground.

Everyone was dazedly looking at Ma Zi Ye, that included Zhang Zhong Mou who was slowly getting back up, Zhao Shichang who was coming in from behind, Qin Jiagui who was still supporting Yuan Ni Ping as they rolled down. All of them without exception was looking at Ma Zi Ye who made use of the green vines to catch the monster off guard, resulting in the monster fall off the slope and then following up with two leg stomps that killed a monster that was close to a tier two beast soldier in strength. This courage, insight and technique immediately swept through everyone, causing her to be in the limelight.

This girl was truly from a wushu family, especially these few days, when she managed to gradually activate the hidden potential of the strange energy. Just recently, the repeated actions could be said to be very natural and unforced, like the sound of ten thousand thunders. Even if it was Su Yu, he might not have been able to clear the monster as perfectly as her.

Ma Zi Ye's last strike on the monster's monster's skull was followed by a low grunt. Everyone saw a crystal assimilate into her body, afterwards a piece of dark iron metal chain fluttered about like a small snake as it encircled around her left leg, continuously

dancing about as it extended until her entire left leg was totally wrapped up. Finally adhering to her left leg as the chain interweaved, resulting in her left leg wearing a sort of 'tights' that was made of metal web. However this tights was capable of moving about.

Ma Zi Ye felt the strange energy within her body undergo a turbulent change. She was already on the cusp of breaking through, after killing this monster that was almost a tier two beast soldier, she naturally evolved immediately and became a tier two dark iron warrior. Furthermore, the strange energy within her body was very powerful, to the extent of faintly surpassing Zhao Shichang's strange energy.

Upon becoming tier two and experiencing the strange energy's transformation within her body, she sensed that her web of metal's might has increased and it's abilities were raised. She also comprehended a new strange energy method and acquired a new technique.

Tier two was a completely different realm from tier one.

After Su Yu and Zhao Shichang, Ma Zi Ye became the third person to become a Tier two dark iron warrior.

"Ma Zi Ye, how is it? Did you comprehend a new ability?" Zhao Shichang stepped forward and asked after he woke up from his daze. He did not seem to be concerned about her but was instead curious about whether her new ability was stronger than his after she became a tier two dark iron warrior.

Humans were naturally curious, especially now that Su Yu was in deep sleep, this was Zhao Shichang's chance for him to surpass Su Yu.

This included Qin Jiagui who had disappointment written all over his face, yesterday Zhao Shichang broke through and today Ma Zi Ye broke through. Originally he was one of the people in the group who had the highest chance of challenging Su Yu for the position of strongest. But who could have thought that in a blink of an eye, Su Yu was already at tier three and have left them behind in the dust. Now even Ma Zi Ye and Zhao Shichang are ahead of him, this was simply intolerable for Qin Jiagui who was naturally fond of directing other people and craved for leadership roles.

Yuan Ni Ping understood Qin Jiagui very well, she felt his hand faintly trembled and thus she gripped Qin Jiagui's hand tightly. She whispered softly and said: "In my heart, you are always the strongest, you will eventually surpass all of them and will be more formidable than them, they..... merely have good luck."

Yuan Ni Ping's words made Qin Jiagui exhale out a long breath, indeed they were just lucky, one only needs to kill a tier two.... Or just a tier one monster to evolve into tier two. Qin Jiagui always believed that his evolution will give him the strongest ability amongst the others. Being at tier one he already possessed the Demolishing Iron Fist and Iron Arrow Claw, when he finally becomes tier two he would definitely comprehend an even more formidable ability that would thoroughly overpower the others.

"Oh ya, instant noodles, what new ability did you acquire? What is it?" Zhang Zhong Mou saw that Su Yu who was lying on the

ground uninjured, he breathed a sigh of relief and then quickly inquired her.

In the past, Ma Zi Ye's dark steel chains on her legs could only extend out and protect up to her knees, now it could completely protect her entire left leg. It was obvious that she had broke through and entered the Tier two realm.

Ma Zi Ye saw that Zhao Shichang and Zhang Zhong Mou were both very curious, she faintly laughed and did conceal her ability. On her left leg, chains of metal twisted and intertwined like a [fried dough twist](#). Ma Zi Ye stretched out her right hand and grabbed onto the chain and slowly raised it, a rod that was made of interweaved metal chains soon slowly appeared at it continuously extended out.

Soon, Ma Zi Ye shouted out delicately as she raised her left hand and brandished a metal spear that was made from sections of metal chains.

[\[1\]](#) T/N: It's a type of Chinese snack, google fried dough fritters.

Chapter 110: Poisonous River

“Steel Spear, this is the new ability that I have gained.” An unsatisfied expression could be seen on Ma Zi Ye’s face as she suddenly tossed the steel spear within her hand.

“Chi!”

The steel spear flew through the air before smashing into a dirt wall, immediately penetrating it until at least half the spear could not be seen.

“Impressive, in the future when you use the Web of Metal to trap monsters, you can use this Steel Spear to finish them, such a combination can be said to be absolutely perfect.” Zhang Zhong Mou thought deeply before exclaiming.

Ma Zi Ye glared over at him as she retorted: “Perfect combination? There isn’t any strange energy within my arms, although my strength has increased by two to three times, if I were to meet a frightening monster that was on the same tier as me, even if I use the Steel Spear, it would likely be useless. The enemy would just have to touch it and this spear would likely be knocked aside, such an ability is absolutely redundant without any use.” Ma Zi Ye had a gloomy expression on her face as she said gruffly.

Zhao Shichang silently nodded, his strange energy was contained within his right arm and after gaining the unique ability to form a blade, its might was extremely frightening regardless of speed or strength, it was something that Ma Zi Ye paled far in comparison.

After promoting to tier two, Ma Zi Ye's ability did indeed seem quite redundant.

Qin Jiagui noticed all this and rather than feeling empathy for Ma Zi Ye, he actually felt a little happy.

It was possibly because he had always viewed her as a competitor, seeing that she had gained a redundant ability, a feeling of happiness in others demise welled up within him.

Qin Jiagui immediately reprimanded himself for such despicable thoughts.

Zhang Zhong Mou saw Ma Zi Ye's depressed look and laughed: "Don't be like that, I feel that it could still have its uses."

Ma Zi Ye sighed: "Unless..... unless my right arm also contains strong amounts of strange energy..... only then will I be able to utilise the strength of this Steel spear."

Zhang Zhong Mou seemed to think of something as he replied: "That actually isn't an impossibility." He recalled that when Su Yu had entered the third tier, the scales on his left arm had actually extended and covered his chest area as well.

Ma Zi Ye heard his words but shook her head and did not reply. The Steel spear which had been thrown by her was gradually disappearing and the metal chains that were covering her right leg also disappeared, returning to normalcy.

The rest of the group finally gathered around and realised that Ma Zi Ye had advanced to the second tier, although they were envious, their feelings of elation were stronger as the strength of the group was clearly increasing and their safety was solidified. Su Yu was currently unconscious but the group suddenly had two more tier two dark iron warriors, this was a great relief to the stress they had been facing.

The bottom of the slope was littered with rubble and a stream could be seen there, going closer, the group realised that the water was bluish green and clearly not ordinary.

Everyone exchanged glances and no one was willing to lightly test. Zhao Shichang contemplated for a moment before stretching his right hand, a bone blade emerged as he chopped and sliced off the arm of the monster which Ma Zi Ye had killed, placing it into the stream.

Qin Jiagui frowned as he thought to himself: “How could this possibly test for anything?” The severed arm was submerged into the water but there was indeed no reaction as Zhao Shichang tossed it away, pausing for a moment, he then proceeded to submerge his bone blade into the water.

Upon immersion, he immediately groaned as he hurriedly retracted his hand, the originally snow white bone blade had actually become black.

“Such a ferocious vile poison.” The group noticed this and were

shocked as they hurriedly retreated, moving further away from the stream.

Zhao Shichang's expression was ugly but it was fortunate that the strange energy within his body began to take effect as the portion of the bone blade which had turned black slowly receded.

Since the water contained poison, the group immediately threw away the idea of staying here as Zhang Zhong Mou said to Qin Jiagui: "Where should we head to next?"

Qin Jiagui measured his surroundings as he frowned before finally pointing to a direction which was along the stream: "Let's walk this way, the direction should be correct."

Zhang Zhong Mou lifted Su Yu onto his back once again as the others began to pick up the large bags of food on the ground before moving along the stream. As they continued to move, they came across a deep pond of water which was filled with the bluish green poisonous water, the flow of the stream ended in this deep pond and passing this deep pond was a deep ravine.

Qin Jiagui nodded as an excited expression appeared on his face: "It can't be wrong, this is the ravine that is indicated on the map. This is definitely the correct direction, let's hurry and continue advancing forward."

Qin Jiagui's speed immediately increased as he hurried forward.

The others in the group also began to feel excited as they heard Qin Jiagui's words and moved deep into the ravine. After hurrying for a period of time, a faint miserable cry was suddenly heard in front.

“Hey, did you guys hear that? It seems that something is crying miserably.” Zhao Shichang said apprehensively.

Ma Zi Ye acknowledged: “I seem to have heard it too.” However, upon listening intently, no other sounds could be heard and only the sound of the wind blowing through the ravine howled beside them.

Qin Jiagui frowned: “There doesn't seem to be any noise, did any of you hear it?”

The others shook their heads and indicated that they did not hear anything, only Ma Zi Ye and Zhao Shichang seemed to have heard something.

Qin Jiagui did not hear anything but Ma Zi Ye and Zhao Shichang were the only people who were at the tier two stage within the group, they had both heard the noise and could it be possible that they had both been mistaken? Qin Jiagui could not help but be cautious.

Zhao Shichang continued: “Let's ignore it for now, it is possible that I was mistaken, let's carry on.” After becoming a tier two dark iron warrior, Zhao Shichang seemed to have become more spontaneous and brave as he swiftly continued walking.

“Let’s go.” Qin Jiagui contemplated for a moment before quickly following behind Zhao Shichang as he cautiously proceeded.

Continuing deeper, the walls on both sides became taller and it was becoming darker, there was a bloody scent that filled the air and their hearts were shocked as they bypassed a boulder and saw a pile of monster corpses.

This was a group of monsters that were small and resembled mole crickets, however, their bodies were covered in black scales and they had a tail which was over a metre long. At this moment their corpses were strewn all over the place, their deaths were all different, some had been split at the torso, others had been struck in the head and some had even been burnt black by a fire.

Trails of blood covered the entire ground which seemed to indicate to the group that a fierce and cruel battle had occurred here.

The group took this all in as they exchanged glances before looking into deeper into the ravine, there was an enormous pile of boulders there and there were four figures that were seated in a relaxed posture at the bottom while a single person sat atop the pile of boulders, as the wind blew and his clothes fluttered, he actually gave one a feeling of solidarity and arrogance.

When the group noticed these five people, they were actually bringing thin pieces of meat in the blood covered hands to their mouths and eating them. By their side, the corpse of a monster had

been dissected and the skin on its four limbs had been removed, its flesh had also been sliced up and it was clear that the bloody meat which the five people were currently consuming was that of the monster.

Chapter 111: Meeting Another Group

In this instant, the group felt their throats itch as they had a slight feeling of disgust, Jade, Lei Rui, Yuan Ni Ping and the other girls immediately turned and did not dare to continue looking.

When the group noticed the five people, the other party also noticed them at the same time. The four people beneath the pile of rocks immediately placed the meat into their mouths before standing up.

Only the female who was sitting atop the rockpile continued to slowly place the meat slices into her mouth, her actions were very graceful and this continued until the final piece of meat entered her mouth.

The two parties had suddenly met in this twisted corridor, the floor was littered with the corpses of monsters and the dense smell of blood was in the air, both sides began to measure each other and caution was written on everyone's faces.

A female was seated atop the pile of rocks, traces of blood stained her face and her hair was disheveled, her left ear was severed and only a small bloody red scar remained. Her eyes were extremely bright and the black and whites of her eyes were extremely clear, filled with a sort of keenness.

The four people who were previously seated beneath the pile of rocks were all males, their clothes were all in tatters and their bodies were covered in fresh blood, it was clear that they had

endured a cruel and grueling battle before managing to live. One of the males had their right arm snapped off at the elbow, his right sleeve was torn and the group could clearly see the remaining half of his right arm currently beside his body, gently swaying in the wind.

Both parties were deathly silent for a moment and amongst the one female and four males, a skinny male who was about 1.7m tall who wore a pair of shades shifted them down while asking: “Food?”

In no time, their eyes fell on the bags that were being carried by Qin Jiagui, Zhao Shichang and the others. Everyone of them could not help but walk forward as the fire of greed seemed to fill their eyes.

Within this forest that was filled with death, those bags that were so precious such that they were all carried on their backs, if they were not filled with food what else could it be?

Looking at the floor which was littered with the corpses of monsters, it was unquestionable that they had all been killed by these five people. Although Qin Jiagui and the others did not know the tier that these monsters were at, these five people were definitely not weak. Qin Jiagui’s mind swiftly churned as he took in a deep breath, placing a bag off his back before tossing it towards the pile of rocks.

The four people immediately retreated back cautiously, only when the bag no longer made any movements did they slowly surround it.

“It’s all food inside, it should be enough for the few of you to eat for two days.” Qin Jiagui spread his hands in a friendly manner.

The four people exchanged glances and the male whose right arm was half broken finally raised his left arm to open the bag and look within it. He yelled excitedly as he hurriedly took out a bread and used his mouth to rip apart the packaging, wolfing the entire bread down.

“Cough.....” Having taken two bites, he choked and his entire face turned red as he began to cough drily.

“Haha.....” One of the stout males laughed and the few people relaxed from their cautious states as they walked forward, immediately seeing the bag which was filled with bread, ham, sausage, chocolates, mineral water and other assorted food and drinks.

“Boss.” The stout male took two pieces of bread from the bag, he did not wolf the bread down in a starved manner like the single armed male but rather tossed a piece of bread to the female who only had one ear remaining.

The female stretch her hand to catch the bread and immediately began to inspect it, she was clearly in no hurry to eat it.

In reality they had already eaten much of the monster’s meat and were no longer hungry, it was only that they had finally seen ordinary food and the male could not resist tasting it.

Looking at Qin Jiagui as he tossed a bag of food without any care to a couple of strangers, Li Dong was unsatisfied as he harrumphed but under the current circumstances he chose to keep quiet.

Qin Jiagui noticed that these people had let their guards down after accepting the bag of food and proceeded to slowly move forward. Zhao Shichang and Ma Zi Ye were afraid that something untoward would happen to him and also closely followed behind.

If they wanted to traverse through this valley they would need to go past these people, having learnt their lesson from York and Jennifer, Qin Jiagui did not wish to invite these people to join the group. It was obvious that the also did not wish for any altercations to occur between the groups especially when they had no information on the other party. In this moment, he really missed Su Yu's 'Eye of Perception'.

With the 'Eye of Perception', they would immediately be able to tell how strong or weak these people were. It was clear that the other party also did not possess the 'Eye of Perception' or a similar ability as they had a very cautious attitude towards them.

If he had not thrown a bag of food earlier to the other party, judging by the fiery light within the other party's eyes, it was likely that they would have engaged in conflict. At this moment, using a bag of food to prevent any altercations and removing the nervous atmosphere enabled Qin Jiagui to show that they were not hostile.

Watching as they slowly approached, the male whose body was

stout smiled as he spoke: I can't believe that you guys have so much food, that's so impressive. I wonder where the few of your are headed? How did the few of you come here?"

The skinny male with his shades pushed it aside as he also spoke up: "Do you still need to ask? Big guy, they are clearly here due to the same reasons as us."

"Four eyed chicken, do you think that you are very smart? Why don't you guess what their first names are? If you are able to guess it, I'll be willing to acquiesce that your are impressive." The stout male was not convinced.

The male with the shades could not help but adjust the spectacles on his nose, he was really stumped by this question.

"Stop talking nonsense." Suddenly, the female who had a slightly arrogant air about her jumped down as she stared into the valley up ahead while saying in a cold voice: "There's something that is drawing closer to us, everyone be careful."

"Monster again?" The stout male did not seem frightening but rather had a cruel and elated expression as he asked while looking at the Qin Jiagui and the others.

Both parties were secretly measuring the other side, trying to estimate the strength that the other party possessed. Su Yu who was still sleeping on Zhang Zhong Mou's back, Ning Yan whose face was still wrapped by cloth and the food carried on their backs, all this captured the interest of the other party.

The female said dully: “No idea what it is but it’s here” Her words had just been spoken when a loud ‘Kaboom!’ suddenly rang out, Qin Jiagui and the others did not understand what was happening and were shocked as they immediately formed a circular formation with all the food on their backs placed in the centre. Zhang Zhong Mou also hurriedly placed Su Yu who was sleep fast asleep in the centre of the formation.

Looking at the actions of Qin Jiagui and the others, the expressions of the five people changed, it was clear that their group of ten odd people were not a random mash of people but rather a group that had trained together.

In contrast, the party of five were standing according to their wishes. Even so, they were in a rough circular formation but were separated by a distance of around 1.5metres.

Chapter 112: The Strength Of Tier Two

The rocks on the two sides began to tumble as the dirt wall collapsed exposing one hole after another like that of a beehive. From these holes swiftly came groups of monsters which instantly surrounded them.

These monsters that had suddenly appeared were identical to those monsters that had miserably died on the ground earlier, they were all akin to mole crickets but had hard black scales on them with an enormous tail, their claws were sharp and watching as they appeared from within the dirt, Qin Jiagui felt as though this group of monsters were a mix of pangolins and mole crickets.

Their thick scales and claws were the sharp instruments which allowed them to dig through the dirt wall.

Looking as the surroundings filled with over twenty of the strange monsters in the blink of an eye, Qin Jiagui and the others had ugly expressions. They not only needed to fend off against this group of monsters, they also had to be wary of the five people, no one was certain that the other group would not act to attempt to steal the food.

Besides Su Yu who was fast asleep, the remaining eleven people were in a tight circle. Zhao Shichang was silent as his right hand stretched forth, it swiftly lengthen and immediately became a metre long, transforming into something akin to the forelimbs of a two segment insect with a hard carapace.

The party of five were constantly measuring Qin Jiagui and the others, they were not really concerned about the twenty odd black scaled creatures and noticing Zhao Shichang's right arm transform, apprehension could be seen in the eyes of the five as they clearly became more cautious.

The twenty odd monsters did not make any unnecessary actions, after surrounding the two groups they immediately began their assault.

Because Qin Jiagui and the others had a larger group, a majority of the monsters were rushing towards them, only six to seven of the monsters headed towards the other party.

Watching these ten odd monsters surround them and strike, Zhao Shichang immediately swung his transformed right arm, a bone blade extended out as a flash of white went forth, a monster which was approaching had its chest rent apart as the blood within its body spurted out before falling to the ground.

Strands of black rope appeared on Ma Zi Ye's right leg as she stomped on the ground, instantly activating the Web of Metal.

After promoting to a tier two dark iron warrior, the speed with which Ma Zi Ye activated the Web of Metal was much faster, the area that was within her control radius was also much greater and in the blink of an eye she had already trapped three of the monsters, causing them to be stuck in position.

Zhang Zhong Mou who was close beside her laughed as half his

face turned to stone, immediately rushing towards the monsters who were trapped by her.

There were indeed benefits to be reaped from following beside Ma Zi Ye.

Zhang Zhong Mou was not the only one with such a notion, Li Dong who had recently promoted to the first tier had also been trying to stay near Ma Zi Ye, waving his right arm, it immediately transformed into that of a bee hive as “Weng.... Weng.....” sounds filled the air. Immediately, a group of poisonous wasps flew out as they surged towards the incoming monsters.

Qin Jiagui noticed as Zhao Shichang easily injured a monster and immediately guessed that the monsters were definitely not tier two beast soldiers, they were likely a group of monsters with strengths at the level of a Greater Goblin.

Calming down, Qin Jiagui finally pounced.

“Kaboom!”

A thunderous sound was emitted as the Demolishing Iron Fist shot forth and heavily smashed into the chest of a monster, causing the scales to immediately rupture as the monster was sent tumbling away. Upon falling to the ground, it did not immediately die but it had clearly sustained heavy injuries.

The bullets within Zhou Birong’s pistol had already been used

and her pistol was already thrown away, her right arm was currently extended and had been transformed as three claws emerged, clashing head on with the sharp claws of a monster with neither gaining the upper hand.

In the blink of an eye, everyone was engaged in a messy battle with the group of monsters.

On the other side, the party of five also acted, it was clear that the five people did not regard the monsters heavily, they had already dispatched a large group of these monsters and a majority of their focus was on Qin Jiagui and the others. Finally, the group of five took a sigh of relief as they saw that the other party were rather weak.

“Let me help you guys, haha.....” The stout fellow suddenly laughed loudly as his right hand stretched forth and suddenly swept, his right arm had suddenly become covered in thick black fur like that of a bear’s arm, this thick bear palm was extremely powerful and a monster that was pouncing was immediately smashed flying.

“Bang!”

The monster’s head smashed into a boulder as its brain juices leaked out, immediately dying. The big fellow continued to take large strides as he rushed toward Qin Jiagui and the others.

“Bang!”

The bear-like arm smashed out and another monster had its skull crushed in like that of a watermelon bursting, the frightening strength was simply terrifying and the cruel manner which the head was pressed into the chest of the monster was simply horrifying.

These actions immediately caused the other monsters to tremble, Qin Jiagui turned his head and his facial expression changed, this big fellow with his transformed right arm was definitely at the tier two level or higher.

As the group continued to level up, Qin Jiagui and the others also began to have a greater understanding of the transformation of dark iron warriors. After reaching the second tier, their four limbs would have gone through a complete change, like Su Yu who had his left arm completely changed, Zhao Shichang with his right arm and Ma Zi Ye with her right leg.

The right arm of the big fellow before them had completely changed and was naturally at least a tier two dark iron warrior.

Following closely behind the stout fellow was a the male with only his left arm remaining, he also strode forward to assist Qin Jiagui and the others.

The transformation for this male was at his chest region and branch-like objects could be seen extended from his chest, entwining themselves to form a dark green armour. Atop the armour were branches that were one to two metres in length, looked like tentacles and could be moved according to his will.

These branches instantly extended out and trapped a monster in the blink of an eye, the monster which was trapped, flailed wildly with its two arms and its eyes were widened as it attempted to remove the branch which had wrapped around its neck. The male with a single-arm smiled as the branch suddenly contracted, a crisp snapping noise could be heard from the neck of the monster.

The monster groaned as its skull bent over, its neck had already been snapped by the branch.

When the branch finally released itself, the monster immediately fell limply to the ground, clearly dead.

The big fellow and the single armed male acted to help and in the blink of an eye four of the monsters had already been dispatched by them. Zhao Shichang who swung with his bone blade could freely extend and retract, using it like a whip, he immediately killed another monster and two other monsters had also been heavily injured by him.

By the side, the skinny male with the shades pushed his glasses and his right arm went forward, “poof poof poof” sounds could be heard as three black holes appeared on his right arm and immediately emitted black smoke from them.

Chapter 113: Single-Eared Woman

The three streams of black smoke seemed to have intelligence as they curled about his right palm and formed a mysterious black cloud.

The man with the glasses used his left hand to push the glasses on the bridge of his nose as something shot forth from within his body. He stretched out his right hand to press down on the face of a monster and in a short moment, a black mist swirled about his right hand, shrouding the head of the monster.

“Haaaooo”

This particular monster let out a blood-curdling screech as it raised both claws frantically to strike back but the attacks only struck air. The male with glasses had long retracted his right hand and the plague went for another monster.

The previous monster that had its head enveloped with mist was constantly emitting miserable shrieks as if it was blind. It was swaying about as it fled haphazardly with both hands reaching for its face as it attempted to grab something. However, only “Chi Chi Chi” sounds could be heard and very soon both of its hands became charred black as though they were burned from being struck by lightning.

The miserable shrieks of this monster swiftly became weaker as it finally swayed and fell to the ground. The black mist that covered its face gradually dissipated and its head had already been

charred black, as though it had been burnt within a blast furnace.

Amongst the four males, besides the stout bloke, single-armed male and glasses male, the final person's clothes were in a state of total shambles, there were merely a few pieces of cloth which had been stuffed into his waist, exposing his bare upper body which was covered in beautiful tattoos. On his upper right arm, there was a word 'Loyal' that was tattooed there, his entire body that was covered in tattoos coupled with his sinister face and killing intent made one feel from their first glance that this person was definitely someone who had mixed around in the vicious underworld.

However, regardless of what experiences he had been through or what strength he might have had, after arriving in this place, he would also have no choice but to accept the cruel reality. His clothes were in tatters like that of a stray dog, fallen to the point where he had to eat the flesh from monsters to continue living, facing the threat of death in every moment. However, this sort of cruel environment actually made his killing intent even thicker.

This group of four males and one female, based solely on their eyes and killing intent, he was definitely the most fearsome.

A ball of black mist was shot out from the right arm of the glasses male and in the blink of an eye it had taken care of two monsters, the male whose body was covered in tattoos stretched his right hand as cracking sounds were emitted like that of metal machinery assembling.

In no time, his right arm had transformed into something that

looked like a metal circular cylinder, his right hand was clenched tightly and became covered in metal like that of Qin Jiagui, the only difference was that his skin was not black in colour but rather a faint frosty white colour.

Crisp cracking sounds resounded out as the male with tattoos suddenly stretched his right arm, his right fist that was currently covered in metal retracted and immediately disappeared into the metal circular cylinder, closely after, a pillar of white mist was emitted from within the metal circular cylinder.

The male with the tattoos began to move as he swiftly began running in the outskirts of the area, the white mist which was shot from his right arm followed the swing of his arm and immediately enveloped three of the monsters which were pouncing forward.

Being hit by this pillar of mist, the bodies of the three monsters immediately became rigid, wherever the pillar of mist came into contact with their bodies, a thick layer of ice could be seen and actually caused their bodies to be encased in ice.

These three monsters revealed expressions of shock on their face as they looked down at their body being covered in frost. The tattoo covered man's right hand made cracking noises again as from within the frosty metal cylinder, suddenly a fist shot out.

“Rumble”

The frost enveloped fist slammed viciously into the first monster's body that was covered in frost and immediately the area

that was covered in frost started to shatter. This frost fist seemed unstoppable as it continue to smash apart the first monster's chest while proceeding on to the second monster and finally the third monster....

Qin Jiagui had always been on guard against the other party. Naturally he noticed the other party's activities, when he saw the male with tattoos' right arm's evolution that transformed into a metal cylinder which sprayed out mist that managed to freeze three monsters followed by shooting out his frost enveloped fist that smashed three monsters in one attack. All of this happened in a flash, the three monster's body were shattered as they collapsed, causing Qin Jiagui to suck in a breath of cold air.

This fellow, how the hell did he appear? Why was it that each of them was more terrifying than the other? Although the sole female had not made a move, it seemed like she was the leader among this group, could it be that she was even more powerful?

From the methods that they have revealed recently, these four males, every one of them were at least at the tier two realm of the dark iron warrior.

The six to seven monsters that surrounded the tattooed male, glasses male and others were taken care off effortlessly within a few moves. As for the other side, the singled armed man, large man with trees, Zhao Shichang, Ma Zi Ye were fully displaying their abilities as they confronted the monsters that were not even tier two beast soldiers. Tier two dark iron warriors had the absolute advantage when facing the monsters.

The stout fellow and the single armed male had swiftly taken

care of four monsters each, Zhao Shichang had taken care of three monsters and Zhang Zhong Mou had taken advantage of Ma Zi Ye's usage of the Web of Metal to kill one of the trapped monsters with his Rock Head Cannon Pulveriser.

Ma Zi Ye had taken care of the other two which were trapped while Zhou Hua Kang was the most fortunate, when Qin Jiagui heavily injured a monster with his Demolishing Iron Fist, he had taken the chance to heavily smash down with the metal spade, causing the monster's neck to snap.

After killing this monster, Zhou Hua Kang almost jumped from his elation as he finally advanced, becoming an actual tier one dark iron warrior.

Qin Jiagui glared over at Zhou Hua Kang and was rather dismayed that he had snatched his kill, however, upon seeing him advance to the next tier, increasing the strength of the group, he did not speak out.

Till now, the twenty odd monsters had finally been cleared as the big bloke laughed in a loud manner: "Wonderful, really wonderful, hahaha. Too bad there's no alcohol, after coming to this damned place for seven to eight days, I haven't had a single bit of alcohol."

The glasses male pushed the shades on his nose as he asked: "You being able to survive till now is already a miracle of the heavens, you still wish for their to be alcohol to drink?" shaking his head as an expression of disbelief filled his face.

“Four eyed chicken, what nonsense are you talking about? I think that you’re already tired of living right?” The big bloke began to angrily exclaim while the glasses male adjusted his glasses calmly without talking, as though he could not be bothered to argue with the other male.

“Everyone shut up! What we’ve been waiting for has finally arrived!” The female who only had a single ear exclaimed in a cold voice as her remaining ear seemed to tremble slightly, as though she had heard something.

Her words had just been spoken when a dirt wall suddenly collapsed with a ‘Kaboom!’ exposing a large hole within. Within the large hole came a monster that was over two metres tall, opening its mouth as it howled towards the sky.

Chapter 114: Awakening In A Death Battle

This was a monster that similarly had thick scales covering its body, dragging a large tail and seemed like a pangolin, it was only that its body was several times larger than the ones the group had killed before, making it clear that this monster was likely the leader of that group of monsters.

With the appearance of this monster, the single-eared woman and the other four people began to swiftly disperse as they stood in five different directions, thoroughly surrounding the monster.

“Lunkhead!” The single-eared woman stood unmoving as she coldly shouted.

“Understood, boss!” The big fellow laughed in response as his right arm transformed into a huge black bear fist which heavily smashed towards the monster.

The fist of this big fellow was extremely frightening and even the leader tier monster had to stop its roars as it raised its front claw to block while its other claw explosively swiped towards the big fellow’s chest.

The woman pointed: “Old Li!”

The single-armed man did not speak but his figure had already closely followed as he went forward, the branches covering his chest extended out wildly and immediately blocked the claw which was swiping towards the big fellow’s chest.

“Four eyes, loyal man!” The woman exclaimed in succession as the glasses male and the tattooed male moved like lightning from the left and right as they did a pincer attack.

The right hand of the glasses male stretched forth as a ball of black mist immediately covered the left hind leg of the monster, the tattooed man’s right arm emitted crisp metallic cracking noises as an icy mist spat forth before his icy fist flew forward, his target was the right hind leg of the monster.

By the side, Qin Jiagui, Zhao Shichang and the others could only watch as the few people combined their attacks and worked in unison, their targets were clear and this monster whose might was clearly exceptional actually miserably shrieked in a mere instant as its legs were crippled causing its huge frame to fall. As for the big fellow, he had achieved his aim and explosively retreated.

The big fellow was the first to rush forward, attracting the attention of the monster. The single-armed male’s job was to protect the big fellow and the glasses male and the tattooed man were assigned the role of attacking, in a single exchange they had managed to cripple the two hind legs of the monster.

Losing its hind legs, the monster fell to the ground and at the same time, the single-eared woman finally struck, her speed was even faster than the men as she flew forward with a ‘swish’.

In the instant that she pounced forward, her left and right hand also struck and a shocking scene appeared before the group’s eyes,

a ball of dull fiery red light exploded from her left hand while a dull fiery red long sword appeared within her right hand.

This long sword was roughly 1.2 metres from hilt to end, slightly broad about three fingers thick and the body of the sword was flowing with streaks of fiery red vein patterns that seemed like charms, filled with an energy fluctuation that even ordinary people could sense.

As the monster fell, the woman easily leapt as she appeared behind the monster, both hands wielding the long sword as she slashed down.

“Chi!”

The long sword seemed like it was piercing tofu as it easily entered the monster’s body.

“Howl!” The miserable shriek of the monster could be heard as its entire body trembled before beginning to shrink back.

Having done this, the female leapt once again as she gently patted her hands, seemingly having done something simple as she instructed: “Loyal man.”

The tattooed man nodded, the monster had suffered a blow from the long sword and after releasing a miserable shriek, its body had contracted and was now gradually expanding, its eyes had lost its glow and seemed like it was not far away from dying.

The tattooed man did not continued to hesitate as he immediately pounced forward, the metallic cylinder on his right hand emitted crisp crackling noises as his icy fist heavily smashed out.

“Pa!”

This fist which was filled with all his strength smashed heavily into the monster’s fallen head, even if the monster’s head was made from granite it would also have been crushed.

Looking as the monster’s skull cave in, a black crystal appeared which immediately flew into the right arm of the tattooed man.

A low growl was emitted from his mouth as the big fellow walked forward and asked: “So did you manage to breakthrough?”

The tattooed male continued to growl for a while before raised his head dejectedly: “I still require a little more, damn, is it really so hard to promote to tier three?”

Hearing his words, the others sighed as disappointed expressions appeared on their faces.

The single-eared woman walked forward as she plucked the long sword out from the monster back, turning her hand, the group could see the long sword give off a dazzling red light before swiftly disappearing into the left hand of the woman. At this moment, the

group noticed that atop her left hand was actually an unassuming bracelet.

Looking at the long sword in her hand appear and disappear like magic, the group exchanged glances as they felt puzzled.

Could it be that her long sword was kept within that bracelet? That was simply impossible and went against the logic of science, however, Qin Jiagui and the others could guess that the long sword was not so simple, it could even possibly be like Li Dong's poisonous wasps and could be summoned.

Looking at the perfect combination of the five people as they easily dealt with a seemingly frightening monster before thinking back to themselves, Qin Jiagui suddenly felt that compared to these five people, their group was like a random mob thrown together.

Having taken care of the leader monster, the big fellow laughed loudly as he came before Qin Jiagui and the others with an amiable expression on his face: "Everyone let's move out together, you people can actually find food in such an environment, that's simply too outstanding. It's only..... your group seems rather strange, hahaha."

He was actually curious as to how a group with so many mediocre females managed to live, that was simply a miracle.

Thereafter, he laughed as he pointed at Su Yu who was still asleep on the ground: "What's wrong with him? Did he sustain a

heavy injury and thus remains unconscious?”

Qin Jiagui did not know how to explain and merely nodded, although this big fellow seemed extremely amiable, the other party were all experts of tier two or higher, in comparison, their group merely had two tier twos and felt a suffocating pressure.

“Let’s go, there are too many dangers within this damned forest, moving together will be much safer, haha.” The big fellow laughed in a forthright manner before pointing to himself: “Let me introduce myself, I am Lu Wei, the others call me lunkhead. Haha, that person there is known as four eyed frog, his name is Wang Quan Feng, he’s an annoying fellow who usually opposes me, I actually hate people who wear glasses.”

Having said this, he realised that Lei Rui also wore glasses as he changed his words while laughed: “Of course, females are exceptions, haha, females are exceptions.”

The glasses male who was referred to as four eyed frog otherwise known as Wang Quan Feng walked over as he adjusted his glasses: “When lunkhead handles matters, it’s always a strong start but a weak finish. Since you’ve began introducing us, you should introduce all of us.” Having said this, he pointed to the tattooed man: “That fellow is called Su Ge, we call him loyal man.”

Zhang Zhong Mou could not help but interrupt: “Such a weird alias, why is he called loyal man?” The big fellow who was known as lunkhead and Wang Quan Feng who was known as four eyed frog were understandable but why was this Su Ge whose entire body was covered in tattoos known as loyal man? If it were him

giving out aliases, he would certainly refer to the person as tattooed man.

Lu Wei laughed: “Haven’t you noticed the ‘loyal’ tattooed on his right arm? That is why we call him loyal man.”

Zhang Zhong Mou suddenly understood. This Su Ge was not a man of many words and only indifferently looked at them without saying a word.

Wang Quan Feng then pointed towards the single-armed male and introduced: “This is Li Feng Xuan, we refer to him as old Li.” Finally, he pointed towards the woman: “This is the boss of our group, her name is simply wonderful, she’s called Chu Xiang, lovely and moving’s Chu, Concubine Chu Xiang’s Xiang*.”

T/N*: They are describing the Chinese character of Chu Xiang’s name.

This single-eared woman gently nodded towards Qin Jiagui and the others, her eyes focused on Qin Jiagui’s handsome visage for a moment longer.

Looking at the party as they amiably introduced themselves, even if Qin Jiagui and the others were unwilling they had to at least say their names, as for Chu Xiang and their group of five, they paid close attention to Zhao Shichang and Ma Zi Ye.

Within their group, only Zhao Shichang and Ma Zi Ye had reached the second tier, as for Su Yu who was currently unconscious, Qin Jiagui and the others did not introduce him. The

group of five did not care about this, an injured person who was unconscious would certainly cause them no harm.

Because of the matter with York and Jennifer, Qin Jiagui was especially cautious of strangers, however, the other party was clearly much stronger than them and it was not the time to engage in a conflict with the other party. Only when Su Yu wakes up would they be able to negotiate.

Having this thought, Qin Jiagui had a smile on his face as he portrayed a warm attitude.

Zhou Hua Kang could not help but question: “Do we wish to go together?” He was also unwilling to travel with the group of five, although the other party were strong, they were also a threat.

Lu Wei glanced at him as he laughed: “What’s the matter? Could it be that this young fellow does not wish to travel together with us? Do you feel that we’re incompatible? Hahaha.” Although Zhou Hua Kang introduced his name, Lu Wei did not really remember his name, a fellow that had only risen to the first tier was not someone Lu Wei paid heed to.

Zhou Hua Kang could see viciousness under Lu Wei’s smile and his heart felt cold, no longer daring to speak up. Wang Quan Feng was already adjusting the glasses on his nose as he spoke up: “Let’s move out together, we’ve stayed in this place for far too long.”

Whether Qin Jiagui and the others were willing or not, the group of five had already decided to move together and seemed to treat

them as a single entity. Lu Wei came before Zhou Hua Kang as he laughed: “Come, carrying those bags by yourself is too strenuous, let me help you with them.”

Zhou Hua Kang was shocked as he hurriedly grabbed the bags as he shook his head.

Lu Wei did not insist as a mysterious smile was plastered on his face.

Grudgingly, Qin Jiagui and the others followed the five people as they continued into the depths of the valley.

Qin Jiagui and the others did not feel safe together with these five people, although they appeared amiable on the surface, their amiability carried a form of overbearingness that seemed to only hold concern for themselves, this made Qin Jiagui and the others extremely uncomfortable, however, the group knew that it was not the time to engage in a conflict with the other party, they could only bear with it until Su Yu awoke, if Qin Jiagui and Zhang Zhong Mou reached tier two, they would then have the strength to negotiate.

Over the many days, the group had all matured and were no longer reckless. Although they were unwilling, they decided to bear with it and wait for an opportune moment.

In the route that followed, they continued to meet with the monster that was like a pangolin, it was only that the group of five would kill the monsters cleanly without leaving a single for Qin

Jiagui and the others, it was unknown whether this was done intentionally.

Qin Jiagui and the others exchanged glances, if this continued, even though it seemed safe, they would not have any means to advance.

“Haha, brother Qin, what do you think? With our groups merged, we can basically kill everything within this forest.” Lu Wei had killed a few of the monsters as he suddenly patted Qin Jiagui’s shoulder with a smile on his face.

Qin Jiagui laughed grudgingly: “Yes.”

Lu Wei suddenly noticed that Qin Jiagui and Yuan Ni Ping’s hands were clasped together and began to measure Yuan Ni Ping before saying to Qin Jiagui: “Your girlfriend?”

Qin Jiagui responded: “Yup.” Although Lu Wei seemed forthright, he was asking too many questions and Qin Jiagui actually felt rather uncomfortable.

Lu Wei seemed to measure Yuan Ni Ping with unadulterated intentions, his eyes wantonly gazing at her breasts before laughing: “Brother Qin, your luck with woman is quite good, haha, who knew that you would still have such a beautiful female companion within this dangerous forest, really so impressive, i really admire you, you’re faring so much better than us haha.”

Yuan Ni Ping could feel his wanton gaze and could not help but cover her breasts.

Qin Jiagui also noticed this as a fire raged within his heart, however, he could not engage in a conflict under the current circumstances and could only smile: “That’s right, actually, I really admire your group. Your teamwork is impeccable, I wonder what brother Lu used to do?” as he hurriedly diverted the topic.

“About that.....” Lu Wei laughed before suddenly whispering: “Brother Qin, look at loyal man, that fellow haha.”

Qin Jiagui looked over and saw Su Ge with his cold countenance staring at Zhou Birong, a fiery light could be seen within the depths of his eyes.

Qin Jiagui’s heart trembled, this fiery light seemed like that of a hungry wolf looking at its prey.

“This fellow used to be in the triads, it could be said that the police were their mortal enemies, however, he seems to be especially caring towards that policewoman, look at his eyes, it’s clear that he wants to swallow her whole haha.”

His voice was very soft and only Qin Jiagui could hear him, Qin Jiagui’s expression changed multiple times, Zhou Birong was wearing a police uniform and although it was dirty, it was very eye-grabbing.

“Brother Lu, what is your intention in telling me all this?” Qin Jiagui faintly sighed before questioning in a low voice. Lu Wei suddenly talking to him in this manner was simply too strange.

Lu Wei looked at him deeply before saying in a soft voice: “I think highly of you that’s why I’ve decided to secretly inform you. Loyal man has some ideas towards the female cop and if he were to do anything, you guys better not be foolish and attempt to stop him. If this fellow rages, even I am afraid of him, also, he has already risen to tier two and should be breaking through to tier three soon, extremely frightening.”

Qin Jiagui smiled but this smile was extremely forced, he did not believe that Lu Wei really regarded him highly and had thus chosen to inform him, it was more likely that Lu Wei wanted to tease him, wanting to see his frightened expression. At this moment Qin Jiagui was extremely disgusted with Lu Wei and if he had the ability, he would have ripped off the mouth on Lu Wei’s face.

On the surface, although Lu Wei appeared extremely forthright, Qin Jiagui could feel a sort of detestable arrogant aura emanating from him.

The sky swiftly became darker and even this group of five did not wish to proceed in the darkness.

“Everyone, let’s rest here for the night.” Wang Quan Feng had just spoken when Lu Wei suddenly stretched his hand, taking a large bag of food from Zhou Hua Kang’s side as he laughed: “Haha, I’ve been tired for a while now. Damn, eating the raw flesh from

these monsters for the past few days makes it feel as though i have forgotten about chicken.”

An angry expression appeared on Zhou Hua Kang’s face as he clenched his fists but did not act out.

Lu Wei did not care about him and had already ripped open the large bag of food, treating himself as family as he smiled while handing out food to the others.

“Boss, what do you feel like eating? Bread or biscuit? Eh? There’s even so much mineral water in here, haha.” Lu Wei held the bag as he laughed while speaking to Chu Xiang.

“We still have urgent matters to attend to, we’ll be making a move first.” Qin Jiagui could feel that if they stayed the night, frightening matters would occur. Seeing that these five people wanted to rest, although the sky was dark, he suddenly said these words in an attempt to leave.

Ma Zi Ye understood his intentions as she immediately followed: “That’s right, this matter is urgent and we must hurry through the night.”

Qin Jiagui looked towards the five with an apologetic expression on his face: “I’m so sorry, we really have urgent matters to attend to and must leave. These two bags of food will be left for all of you, I believe it will last for several days.” While saying this, he began placing the bags on his person on the ground.

Chu Xiang and the other four were dazed, they did not expect that the people before them actually wanted to rush in the night.

“Urgent matters? What urgent matters would require you rushing through the night within this forest?” Wang Quan Feng habitually adjusted his black shades as he questioned the group.

Qin Jiagui hurriedly replied: “The school that we came from isn’t far away, everyone is still there waiting for us. We need to bring this food back, the rest have been starving for days and cannot wait any longer.”

“School?” Lu Wei was stunned.

Wang Quan Feng laughed: “Since they’ve already been starving for several days, there’s no need to worry about a single night. Rushing in the night is several times more dangerous, I believe that the friends within your school do not wish anything untoward to befall all of you. Also, there are so many things that can be eaten within this forest, wild grass, leaves, monster flesh..... all this can be eaten. Although it may be difficult to swallow, I believe that they will not die from hunger. You guys can just rest easy and stay the night. We will move out together tomorrow, if we stick together it will be much safer.”

“That’s right, everyone should stay. Don’t take such unnecessary risks.” Lu Wei appeared very friendly as he held onto Qin Jiagui, however, the force he used was very large and Qin Jiagui could not get out of his grasp.

Qin Jiagui attempted to struggle but simply could not extricate himself. Looking towards Lu Wei, the other party was smiling and clearly would not allow them to leave.

Wang Quan Feng, Su Ge and Li Feng Xuan stood up one after another as they blocked the group.

A smile appeared on Wang Quan Feng's face as his left hand adjusted his glasses before drily laughing, Su Ge and Li Feng Xuan's faces became heavy as they coldly measured the group, clearly filled with ill intent.

Zhao Shichang and Ma Zi Ye hurried to Qin Jiagui's side as the atmosphere became tense.

“What's the matter? The few of you are really too much, I've been treating all of you like companions yet the few of you seem to not appreciate this.” Lu Wei's mocking voice could be heard as he suddenly turned around: “Boss, what do you think?”

Behind him, Chu Xiang who was rummaging through the contents of the bag heard Lu Wei as she retracted her hand and slowly stood up, her left hand stretched forth as her right hand gently touched the bracelet on her left hand while she calmly spoke: “If you really wish to leave it's fine, however, leave all the food behind.”

Lu Wei was dazed for a moment before furiously clapping as he laughed: “No wonder you're the boss, so straightforward. Haha, since the few of you want to leave, we won't force you to stay,

leave behind all the food and you can leave.”

Anger could be seen on Zhao Shichang’s face as he spoke: “Aren’t you guys being too overbearing? We don’t have any ill intentions, why must you act this way? All of us have landed ourselves in these dire straits and should help one another.....”

Zhou Hua Kang also yelled: “Why are you guys so unreasonable!”

Ma Zi Ye glanced over at them: “You people are really naive, trying to speak logic at this point in time?” Her right leg was ready and even though the opponent was frightening, if her Web of Metal was able to trap them all at once, they would certainly have a shot at winning.

Su Ge whose body was covered in tattoos said in a cold voice: “She has to stay.” as he pointed towards Zhou Birong.

Anger could be seen on Zhou Birong’s face but she did not speak, at times like this it was better to keep calm.

Qin Jiagui’s back was covered in cold sweat as his mind churned to compare the strengths of the two groups. The other party were tier two at the very least and Chu Xiang was even at tier three, as for their group only Zhao Shichang and Ma Zi Ye were at tier two. What was most frightening was that the other party also cooperated superbly while Ma Zi Ye and Zhao Shichang had only recently entered the second tier, in comparison, they simply did not have much of a shot at victory.

“Alright, we’ll leave the food!” Suddenly, Qin Jiagui grit his teeth as he exclaimed.

When these words were spoken, everyone was stunned.

If they engaged with the other party, it was likely a death sentence. In that case, giving up the food and preserving their lives was more important. Once Su Yu woke up, they would have sufficient strength to attempt to get back their losses, it was more important to not engage in conflict and preserve their lives.

“Qin Jiagui, are you mad?” Li Dong grasped the big bag by his side tightly as he shouted at Qin Jiagui in a hoarse voice.

Qin Jiagui sternly said: “Leave all the food behind, did you all forget that everyone is still waiting for us to return back at the school? Let’s hurry back first, the problem with food can be solved at a later date.”

Li Dong wanted to protest but Lei Rui suddenly spoke up: “That’s right, everyone leave the food behind, let’s head back first.”

Looking at the scene unfold before her, Chu Xiang suddenly laughed as she gently clapped: “So this is what it is to endure humiliation in view of the greater picture? It’s really hard to see, haha, such talent.’ as she measured Qin Jiagui with a mysterious expression.

Hearing her words, Qin Jiagui realised that the situation was

getting out of hand, it seemed like the other party had hardened their hearts and did not wish to leave behind any possible threats.

Wang Quan Feng adjusted his glasses as he suddenly spoke: “Boss, I actually have a suggestion.”

“Oh? Four eyes, what good idea have you come up with?” Chu Xiang smiled.

Wang Quan Feng continued: “Although our group of five is indeed quite decent, I feel that we can still expand a little, there’s so much food and the five of us will surely be unable to carry it all.”

Lu Wei nodded: “Your words are true, so what’s the plan?”

Wang Quan Feng stared at Qin Jiagui and the others: “I believe we can accept three people, amongst you, who is willing?”

Qin Jiagui and the others exchanged glances, a strange smile appeared on Wang Quan Feng’s mouth: “We only require elites because we are a small group of elites. If you wish to join us, you have to prove that you are the best within your group and kill the others. The last three survivors will be our future teammates.”

As his words were spoken, Qin Jiagui and the others felt their hearts palpitate as they retreated a step away from each other. In an instant, each person could only fend for themselves, Wang Quan Feng’s words had incited unrest and no one within the group

felt they could trust another person.

Wang Quan Feng continued: “This is your only method for survival, otherwise, we are also willing to personally act and kill everyone. We require our teammates to be elites, wastrels do not have the right to continue living within this forest and wasting resources.”

The single-armed Li Feng Xuan suddenly spoke: “This is too troublesome, even leaving one of them alive would be a bother on our minds, I feel we should kill all of them.”

Su Ge interrupted: “No can do, that female cop cannot die, I want her, the rest can die.”

Lu Wei sighed as he looked at the Qin Jiagui and the few others: “Actually, there’s so much food and the few of us will simply be unable to carry it all. We were planning to be comrades for two more days, in that way there would be free help in helping us carry the food. However, you people actually wanted to shirk us off..... Since you carry such intentions, you are a threat to us. We will definitely not allow you to leave alive tonight, otherwise, you may come back in future to take revenge when you’re stronger. Haha, four eyes, you’re really too evil. What’s this talk about leaving three alive? The way I see it, you’re planning to kill them all in the end right? Actually, faced with such a bunch of useless people, why bother using such methods? Let’s just kill them all. Boss, it’s your call!”

Wang Quan Feng adjusted his glasses as he smiled: “It seems like lunkhead isn’t all brawn, he’s got some brains on him after all.”

Chu Xiang's gaze flickered as Qin Jiagui suddenly kicked causing a large bag of food to immediately fly in the air, heavily smashing towards Lu Wei who was before him as he shouted: "Ma Zi Ye!"

Ma Zi Ye understood him and immediately stomped her right leg as she activated the Web of Metal.

The other party were very clear in their attitudes and would not allow them to live. In that case, they could only fight.

Earlier, Qin Jiagui had continually acquiesced and pleaded as though he did not have any backbone, however, now that he had steeled his heart, he was fierce like a lion as he first kicked the bag of food towards Lu Wei before yelling at Ma Zi Ye to act, thereafter, his right arm swiftly transformed into metal as he used the Demolishing Iron Fist to smash towards Lu Wei's face, all this occurred at lightning speed.

Ma Zi Ye had already advanced to tier two and the Web of Metal could be instantly activated as streaks of rope expanded outwards. Zhao Shichang was only slightly slower than them as he shouted, his right hand sweeping as his arm transformed and a bone blade appeared, he was also tier two and was not fearful of the other party.

Zhang Zhong Mou, Li Dong, Zhou Birong and the others began to act, everyone knew that pleading for mercy was impossible and they could only gamble with their lives, grasping for that sliver of hope.

It was useless to be afraid of death at this moment.

Lu Wei laughed loudly as he hastily retreated backwards, his right arm stretched forth and instantly became a black bear arm.

Wang Quan Feng, Su Ge and Li Feng Xuan's first reactions were actually to retreat backwards, Ma Zi Ye's Web of Metal had actually failed to trap even a single one of them.

"That's too simple, little lady, the biggest mistake you committed was knowing that your strength was inferior to ours yet not hiding your trump cards. If you did not utilise this move earlier and suddenly used it now, we might actually have been in dire straits." Wang Quan Feng explosively retreated while adjusting his glasses, sighing and shaking his head.

Ma Zi Ye's heart felt tight, she felt regretful, although the words of Wang Quan Feng were difficult to listen to, they were not without logic.

While Wang Quan Feng was talking, Su Ge's right arm clenched. Crisp cracking sounds were emitted as a metallic cylinder appeared, his right hand which was clenched in a fist retracted into the cylinder and dense white mist was spat forth, its target Ma Zi Ye.

Wherever the white mist touched, they would instantly be covered in a thick layer of frost.

Ma Zi Ye could only choose to dodge but Su Ge suddenly exclaimed as he rushed forward, the metallic cylinder once again make cracking noises as the frost covered fist actually flew out.

Ma Zi Ye's expression changed, Zhao Shichang who was behind, shouted as he swung his two metre long arm and bone blade forward.

“Dang!”

A crisp sound could be heard as the bone blade and the frost fist collided as fragments of ice exploded out, Zhao Shichang's bone blade was extremely sharp and even with the layer of ice covering Su Ge's fist, it had managed to slice a fissure and blood coloured water was flowing out. However, the strength of Su Ge's fist was much stronger and Zhao Shichang groaned as he was sent flying back.

These events happened in the blink of an eye, Wang Quan Feng, Su Ge, Li Feng Xuan and Lu Wei had explosively retreated at the same time before attacking together, their target was clear and they were rushing towards Ma Zi Ye.

Ma Zi Ye's Web of Metal held the greatest threat to them and if they were careless it was possible for them to be trapped.

Su Ge had been blocked by Zhao Shichang, Wang Quan Feng adjusted his glasses as his right hand stretched forth, three balls of black smoke were emitted from his right arm as his right hand

clenched and tossed the black smoke at Ma Zi Ye who was retreating.

Branches began to appear before Li Feng Xuan's body, these branches were entwined forming a branch chest armour, the chest armour did not only assist him in blocking attacks but also could extend and attack, wrapping around the legs of Ma Zi Ye.

These four people were acting in unison while Chu Xiang appeared exceptionally graceful, although she had lost an ear, she seemed to have a natural arrogance as she slowly walked towards Qin Jiagui and the others, her right hand gently touching the bracelet on her left hand as a faint right light could suddenly be seen.

She was going to make her move.

Chu Xiang's right hand gently touched the bracelet on her left hand as though she were touching her lover, a faint red glow was emitted from the bracelet, suddenly, her body stooped as she flew forward, her right hand swept as a streak of red light swept forth like lightning.

"Aaahhh!" Qin Jiagui suddenly yelled as fresh blood spurted from his chest, in this moment between life and death, his legs kicked the ground as his body swiftly retreated backwards, a frightening inch deep wound from his left shoulder to his right waist could be seen.

"Jia Gui!" Yuan Ni Ping leapt forward in shock, Chu Xiang lightly

belched, her right hand was already holding a long sword that was gleaming with a red light, she found it weird that her blow had not been able to sever Qin Jiagui's body in two.

“Buzz, Buzz”

Suddenly, a group of poisonous wasps appeared above her head like clouds as they pressed down.

This was Li Dong's ability: Call of the Wasps.

Chu Xiang's long sword was erect as her legs kicked, her head began to change, her speed increased as the long sword sliced like lightning towards Li Dong.

Although Li Dong's Call of the Wasps was still a tier one ability, it could summon one hundred poisonous wasps and this was not easy to deal with. Chu Xiang had analysed the situation and immediately decided to go after Li Dong, ignoring the heavily injured Qin Jiagui.

Her abilities had been activated and Chu Xiang's speed exploded, Li Dong was shocked as he commanded the poisonous wasps to attack while retreating backwards.

Chu Xiang was simply too frightening, even Qin Jiagui who was so strong had been severely injured in a single exchange, how could Li Dong possibly defend himself?

Li Dong fled while the figure of Chu Xiang had already rushed before Zhou Birong, Lei Rui, Jade and the others. Zhou Birong yelled as three claws appeared from her right hand, clawing towards Chu Xiang.

Chu Xiang stooped down to dodge while the long sword swept, sweeping upwards from her waist.

“Chi!”

Zhou Birong groaned as the long sword pierced her, Chu Xiang then smashed with her shoulder sending Zhou Birong flying like a broken kite.

“Aaaahhhh!” Jade could not help but scream as Lei Rui pulled her to retreat in panic. Chu Xiang smiled as she suddenly tossed the sword which was covered in blood.

“Swish”

The long sword flew through the air and instantly appeared before Jade’s chest.

Lei Rui could see clearly from the back and could not help but shriek as her hands pushed, causing Jade to fall while the long sword which was piercing towards Jade instantly entered Lei Rui’s chest.

Lei Rui’s eyes rolled up and did not even manage to scream before

falling to the ground.

Su Ge's right arm which had a metallic cylinder heavily struck, Zhao Shichang groaned, his right arm was very long and allowed him to easily wield his bone blade, however, it's hardness was reduced and Su Ge who was close to him had heavily smashed with the metallic cylinder, Zhao Shichang could not withstand the blow as he groaned and fell away. Su Ge growled as the frost fist flew forward.

“Bang!”

The fist was about to smash into Zhao Shichang's chest but Zhao Shichang managed to react and managed to retract his right arm to block in time. The frost fist slammed onto his right arm causing it to smash onto his chest, miserably shouting as he spat out blood, his body tumbled away.

Lu Wei's right arm had become a huge bear arm, together with Wang Quan Feng and Li Feng Xuan, they were conducting a pincer attack on Ma Zi Ye. Ma Zi Ye had no way to dodge and could only steel her heart as she once again activated the Web of Metal, while doing so, she also activated the Steel Spear as she heavily stabbed in the direction of Lu Wei's chest.

Lu Wei's bear palm swept.

“Pa!”

Ma Zi Ye's Steel Spear was sent flying as an intense pain filled her hand, the webbing between her fingers had actually torn.

Zhang Zhong Mou who was by the side did not speak as half his face turned to stone, utilising the Rock Head Cannon Pulveriser as he smashed towards Wang Quan Feng, assisting Ma Zi Ye in blocking one person.

Zhang Zhong Mou was merely at tier one and his speed and reflexes were laughable in comparison to Wang Quan Feng. Wang Quan Feng dodged as his right hand grabbed, immediately grabbing Zhang Zhong Mou's face as the black mist instantly shrouded Zhang Zhong Mou's head.

"Aaahhhh!" Zhang Zhong Mou let out an explosive yell as his hands crazily attacked, attempting to grab Wang Quan Feng as he wildly yelled: "Su Yu! If you still don't wake up we're all finished!"

Lei Rui had fallen to the ground after being stabbed by the sword and Jade was dazed for a moment before recovering, covering her face with her hands as she screamed.

Chu Xiang smiled as she continued forward after tossing her sword, rushing towards Li Dong who was still attempting to flee.

Ma Zi Ye had activated the Web of Metal but did not expect that Li Feng Xuan was actually faster than her and had extended his branches to trap her legs, pulling and causing Ma Zi Ye to fall as she screamed.

“Bang!”

The branches that had extended from Li Feng Xuan’s chest were extremely frightening, after trapping Ma Zi Ye’s legs, they actually pulled and seemed like they were pulling a paper man, immediately causing her to fly into the air as she heavily fell.

Ma Zi Ye tumbled and coincidentally smashed into Su Yu who was currently sleeping like a rock.

“Ergh.....”

This blow was simply too forceful and Ma Zi Ye groaned as blood appeared on her lips.

Lu Wei saw the opportunity as he laughed and strode forward, his bear paw sweeping from above with a frightening force, heavily smashing towards the skull of Ma Zi Ye as he felt regretful, such a pretty lady was about to die.

Ma Zi Ye had just been smashed into Su Yu’s body and the force from the collision was simply too frightening, her mind was in a daze and in this instant she did not have the strength to struggle as she managed to barely lift her head, watching as the frightening black bear paw of Lu Wei swung down, slowly nearing her face.

Realising that she could not dodge, an expression of hopelessness and unwillingness appeared on her face, she knew that it was over and in that instant, the image of her parents appeared within her

mind, she really wanted to see her parents, looking at that for the final time.

“Pa!”

An explosive sound rang out and a sinister smile appeared on Lu Wei's face. The huge black bear paw had firmly landed, exploding with a frightening sound. He could almost imagine Ma Zi Ye's beautiful face which had been smashed into meat pulp and the red blood and white brain matter mixed together, that scene would definitely be beautiful.

His hand had firmly landed but Lu Wei felt that something was amiss because the wonderful feeling of exploding a skull was missing, it seemed like he had smashed into a piece of metal and his bear paw was actually feeling pain.

The bear paw of Lu Wei was focused on strength and in his group, his bear paw carried the most force.

What was going on? How could the lady's head be harder than metal? It could actually cause his bear paw to feel pain.

Lu Wei was shocked and wished to lift his bear paw to take a look but suddenly felt that his bear paw was trapped, the other party's strength was simply too frightening and Lu Wei pulled but could not move.

At this moment, he realised that something was wrong as he used

all his force to attempt to explosively retreat. Suddenly, ‘Chi! Chi!’ sounds could be heard as the intense pain of tearing could be felt from his bear paw.

“Aaaahhhh!”

Lu Wei howled, this pain was simply indescribable, it was as though there were tens of thousands of different forces that were slowly ripping and tearing his bear paw apart, piece by piece.

Minced flesh, shattered bone, fresh blood..... these items were mixed together as they flew in all directions, Lu Wei howled as he explosively retreated, he was shocked to realise that the huge bear paw which he was proud of had actually be minced and destroyed.....

“No!!!” Lu Wei yelled, Chu Xiang, Wang Quan Feng, Su Ge and Li Feng Xuan instantly looked over, each person had shock in their eyes as they saw the youth who had been unconscious on the group lift his hand from beside Ma Zi Ye, his left arm was covered in black scales and the black scales were raised and rotating, upon contact with Lu Wei’s bear paw it had actually minced the entire bear paw in an instant.

Lu Wei howled as he retreated, his bear paw was gone and fresh blood flowed like a spring. His face was white like a sheet of paper and the youth who had always been unconscious gently pushed Ma Zi Ye as he soundlessly stood up before tousling his hair, a look of puzzlement appearing on his face.

Chapter 115: Third Tier Chu Xiang

“Su Yu!”

“It’s Su Yu!”

“Su Yu!!!”

“Su Yu’s awake!”

In this instant, Zhao Shichang, Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang, Jade and the others began to yell, their voices were filled with elation, this feeling was as though the clouds had suddenly parted allowing the sun to shine forth.

Su Yu tousled his hair as he looked around, seeing Qin Jiagui who was on the ground, Lei Rui who was stabbed by a sword, Zhao Shichang who had spat blood and was on the ground, Zhang Zhong Mou whose face was shrouded in a black fog and screaming, the entire scene was simply a complete disorder.

Lu Wei was injured as he retreated while howling, events had transpired too suddenly, Wang Quan Feng, Su Ge and Li Feng Xuan stared blankly and could not help but stop.

Su Yu saw Wang Quan Feng and the others in front of him and had not gathered his senses as he asked in bewilderment: “You guys are…….”

Ma Zi Ye had fallen to the ground and struggled to climb back up as she grit her teeth: “Su Yu, they are the enemy! This was the result of their actions!”

Su Yu stopped tousling his hair as he nodded his head, his body suddenly shrinking as he kicked with his legs, pouncing forward at Lu Wei who had lost his hand.

Wang Quan Feng pressed the glasses on his nose and soundlessly produced a ball of black mist within his right hand which he swung towards Su Yu.

Crisp cracking noises were emitted from the metallic cylinder on the right hand of Su Ge as a white mist was spat forth, shooting towards Su Yu from behind.

Su Yu awakening was out of their expectations and he had suddenly injured Lu Wei causing them to feel alarmed, however, these people remained calm as they instantly surrounded and attacked Su Yu.

Zhao Shichang climbed back up as he wiped the blood by his lips, the bone blade on his right hand swept forth as he shouted: “Tattooed fellow, you’re mine!” before rushing towards Su Ge.

Ma Zi Ye pressed her temples as she forced herself to come out of her dizziness, swiftly standing as she began to assist Su Yu.

Su Yu’s sudden appearance caused a big boost in confidence

within the group, they had a kind of blind faith in Su Yu's abilities.

Su Yu had just pounced towards Lu Wei when he was suddenly attacked from both sides by Wang Quan Feng and Su Ge, their attacks seemed as though they would hit him but Su Yu rotated his body as his entire body seemed to be flung in the air, instantly colliding with Wang Quan Feng.

Wang Quan Feng groaned, his left hand no longer pressed his glasses as he attempted to retaliate but Su Yu was faster than him as his left hand clamped down, immediately twisting the right arm of Wang Quan Feng which was carrying the ball of black mist.

“Crack!”

Su Yu's strength was simply too terrifying, Wang Quan Feng miserably howled as his right arm was bent backwards.

“You were the one who attacked old Mou.” Su Yu softly spoke.

Zhang Zhong Mou's face was shrouded in black smoke, within the group only Wang Quan Feng's strange energy could cause this and Su Yu had instantly realised that he was the one who had acted against Zhang Zhong Mou.

Su Yu's voice resounded beside Wang Quan Feng's ear and he could even feel Su Yu's breath on his face, causing his face to feel ticklish. Wang Quan Feng was suddenly filled with an uncontrollable fear as he felt death looming over him, causing him

to shout and wanted to retaliate but Su Yu had already clamped down his right arm behind his back as he suddenly gave a heavy push.

At this moment, Su Ge had shot out a large amount white mist from his metallic cylinder and Wang Quan Feng was helpless as he flew inside the mist, in an instant his head and chest were covered in frost.

Su Yu then strode forward as the Rending Storm flew forward, smashing towards the back of Wang Quan Feng.

Wang Quan Feng's body was about to be pierced when a red light suddenly flashed, the black scales on Su Yu's left arm emitted sparks as a piercing "Clang!" resounded.

Su Yu groaned as shock registered within his eyes, he noticed that a fiery red long sword had chopped down on his left arm and although the black scales were as hard as steel causing this blade to be rebounded, there were still white traces marking the area where the sword had chopped.

Chu Xiang had pounced over silently as she chopped down with her long sword, saving Wang Quan Feng's life. Su Yu swiftly shook his arm as he activated the Fang Bullet Burst.

Wang Quan Feng miserably groaned as his back endured four blows, four bloody holes could be seen as his body tumbled away. Su Ge shouted as he dodged, by the side Zhao Shichang had already arrived and was wielding his bone blade in a crazed manner.

Everyone understood that this was the most critical moment, Su Yu was their final hope and they could not allow Su Yu to be surrounded by the rest of them. With their teamwork and methods, it was possible that Su Yu would fall like the leader tier monster earlier.

Due to this, regardless of Zhao Shichang, Ma Zi Ye or the others, they all rushed forward to provide assistance.

“F*** your mother!” Zhou Hua Kang was the first to rush towards Lu Wei who was injured, Lu Wei’s expression as he snatched away his food was still flashing within his mind and Zhou Hua Kang harboured a deep hatred for him. Since Lu Wei was injured to the extent that his bear paw had been minced into shreds by Su Yu, was it not a good chance to take revenge?

Lu Wei’s transformation occurred within his right hand and now that it had been destroyed, large amounts of his strange energy had been lost. Although he did not die miserably like Jennifer, he was still severely injured and his face was exceptionally pale, he continually retreated as he howled.

“Bzzz, Bzzz”

The sounds of poisonous wasps could be heard from above as Lu Wei wildly yelled, the hundred wasps were flying wildly towards his face.

In an instant, all areas of his face began to emit a piercing pain as

Lu Wei wildly waved his two hands, hugging his head. At this moment, his face was filled with terror and no longer had his previous arrogance and haughtiness.

Zhou Hua Kang lifted his leg as he gave a heavy kick to Lu Wei's crotch region while laughing sinisterly: "Weren't you very arrogant? Why don't you continue being arrogant? F*** your mother!" as he wildly kicked and stepped on Lu Wei's body.

Lu Wei hugged his head as he continued to howled, rolling on the ground as his face swelled with countless tumours, all causing by the stings from the wasps.

Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang surrounded Lu Wei who was rolling on the ground as they continued to step and kick, they had never felt so comfortable venting their anger. Finally, Zhou Hua Kang was unsatisfied with merely kicking as he raised a metal spade, continually smashing down. In no time, the metal blade was covered in fresh blood.....

Zhao Shichang seemed crazed as he wielded his bone blade, tangling with Su Ge and preventing him from diverting his attention to attack Su Yu. Ma Zi Ye did not speak as she activated her Web of Metal, streaks of rope began to expand out towards Su Ge, Li Feng Xuan, Chu Xiang and Wang Quan Feng.

Wang Quan Feng's face and upper body had been frozen by Su Ge's white mist as he stood there rigidly while looking at Ma Zi Ye, Jade and the others rush over. Fear could be seen on his face as he suddenly turned and ran.

Chu Xiang's right hand held a fiery red long sword and her face and upper body had gone through a transformation. Seeing this, Su Yu trembled in his heart, a person who was able to transform her head and upper body was definitely a tier three expert.

Chapter 116: Killed In An Instant

“Boss, hurry and use your real abilities!” By the side, Li Feng Xuan shouted, Chu Xiang’s real abilities were terrifying but she seemed to continue to hide them, Li Feng Xuan felt that the situation was very grim and could not help but shout.

Chu Xiang nodded as a divine light flashed through her eyes, cruel killing intent could be seen on her face as she stooped lower before kicking, wielding her sword with both hands as she suddenly chopped forward. At the same time, a symbol appeared in the centre of her forehead, her true strength as a tier three dark iron warrior was about to be exhibited.

Hearing the howl of Li Feng Xuan, Su Yu wordless retreated as his right hand pressed towards the ground.

“Chi! Chi! Chi!”

Following the explosive sounds from the ground, sharp obelisks began to shoot out from the ground, in an instant, the area of several metres was covered with dense and numerous rock awls, Chu Xiang’s eyes were wide as she struggled to look down, her body was currently pierced by the sharp stone obelisks and large amounts of fresh blood was flowing down.

“Ho..... How.....” Chu Xiang’s eyes became wider as her entire body trembled.

By the side, Li Feng Xuan’s eyes seemed as though they would

pop out, he simply could not believe the scene before him.

With regards to Chu Xiang, Li Feng Xuan, Su Ge and the others were completely confident in her strength. The faith they had in her strength was similar to that which Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shichang and the others had for Su Yu.

In their hearts, once Chu Xiang utilised her real abilities, she would have been able to easily kill Su Yu and the others. However, the reality was that Chu Xiang had been unable to exhibit her real strength before suddenly being pierced by countless stone obelisks.

The vitality of a third tier dark iron warrior was frightening, even though her body had been pierced by the summoned stone obelisks from the Earth Spikes Assault, she did not die immediately as she continued to tremble. Suddenly, the symbol on the centre of her forehead exploded with a blinding light as a frightening streak of lightning shot out.

Su Yu could not dodge in time and could only lift his left arm.

“Pa!”

Su Yu's left arm was covered in a layer of black scales and the lightning caused his entire body to feel numb. Groaning, Su Yu suddenly crouched down as he pounced, the stone obelisks from the Earth Spikes Assault disappeared as Chu Xiang's bloody body fell to the ground, at the same time, Su Yu reached her side as his left arm smashed.

“Peng!”

The Rending Storm heartlessly minced through Chu Xiang’s face which was filled with indignation, she had a frightening strength which she had not showcased, she was indignant but no longer had any chance.

After shredding Chu Xiang’s face which was filled with hate, indignation, fright and other mixed feelings, Su Yu suddenly groaned as his left arm trembled, black smoke could be seen wafting out from under the black scales. The streak of lightning had struck his left hand and a frightening wound was created, causing his left arm to continually tremble, in this instant, his left arm felt like there was a mountain weighing down on it and simply could not be lifted.

Li Feng Xuan was dazed for a moment before letting out a shrill cry as he rushed forward, his face was filled with ferocity as the branches at his chest area filled the air like poisonous pythons as they moved towards Su Yu.

Even Chu Xiang did not know that Li Feng Xuan had a huge crush on her, it was only that love within this forest was simply too laughable, causing Li Feng Xuan to control himself and not confess, hiding it deeply within his heart as he silently protected her, that was already sufficient for him.

At this moment, Chu Xiang had suddenly died miserably and Li Feng Xuan seemed to have been struck by lightning as he attacked in a crazed manner, utilising all the strange energy within his body as he exploded forth with the most powerful attack of his life.

At this moment, Su Yu's left arm felt as though it was weighed down by a mountain and simply could not be lifted, the Earth Spikes Assault could not be activated again and Li Feng Xuan's sudden berserk attack caused Su Yu to be unable to dodge, in an instant, his neck, arms and body were firmly wrapped by the thick branches.

“Die! Let's die together!” Li Feng Xuan shouted in a crazed manner as his hands clamped down on Su Yu's neck in a death grasp, branches wrapped firmly around Su Yu's body as they contracted, wanting to squash Su Yu into meat pulp.

In this moment, Su Yu felt all the bones in his body emit crisp cracking sounds, breathing became more difficult, even though he was already a tier three expert, he had no way to get out of his current predicament.

“Guu..... Gu.....”

Blood began to flow out of Su Yu's mouth, his left arm was still immobile and Li Feng Xuan opened his mouth as he suddenly bit into Su Yu's shoulder.

Groaning, Su Yu frowned as he suddenly took in a deep breath, his right arm which was wrapped by the branches slowly opened as a streak of golden light suddenly shot out from his palm.

Zhao Shichang madly chopped as he kept Su Ge busy, the attitudes of both parties had gone through a drastic change, Zhao

Shichang was like a crazed tiger and his might seemed to overpower Su Ge, however, as Chu Xiang screamed and died, Su Ge's emotions were riled and began to have thoughts of running away as he barely managed to lift his right arm, blocking Zhao Shichang's bone blade as he retreated. Suddenly, he felt as though something was tangling his legs, causing him to be unable to lift them.

Su Ge's heart trembled as he looked down, his legs were already wrapped in black steel ropes.

Ma Zi Ye's Web of Metal had finally caught him.

“No!”

Su Ge howled as his metallic cylinder began to emit large amounts of frost, attempting to block Zhao Shichang's attack. However, Zhao Shichang swiftly appeared behind him and took advantage of his immobility to pierce through with his bone blade, Su Ge could not dodge and only felt a cold sensation from his back, looking down, he was able to see a bone blade that was stained with blood protruding from his chest.

Zhao Shichang then swept his arm as Su Ge cried, his upper body was sliced off, the Web of Metal had lost its effect as he tumbled away, his upper body was rent open and the organs and intestines within began to flow out together with copious amounts of blood.

Ma Zi Ye also wanted to pounce but suddenly saw that Su Yu had been trapped by numerous branches, her heart trembled as she

flew with a flying kick towards the back of Li Feng Xuan's head.

It was almost at the same time where Ma Zi Ye saw a scene that left her shocked.

Su Yu noticed that the situation was grim and his right hand had extended, a ball of golden light had shot out from his palm, the golden light that exploded forth became streaks of golden thread which began to expand out from his right arm, in an instant, the black scales on his left arm were covered in the golden thread.

Su Yu suddenly took in a deep breath as the strange energy within his body began to surge, his left arm pulled and the branches began to tear, the black scales which were covered in golden veins seemed as though they were ravaging the brittle and ripping out the rotten, destroying the branches as he heavily smashed Li Feng Xuan's chest.

The chest armour made from branches that covered Li Feng Xuan's chest was like mud and a big hole was instantly punched through, blood, bone and organs were minced together as an enormous hole exploded from the back of Li Feng Xuan.

Chapter 117: The Power Of The Golden Blood

Su Yu's face was like ice, his left arm had pierced Li Feng Xuan's chest and was lifted high into the air, his legs kicked as he suddenly brought Li Feng Xuan's body into the air with him.

“Kaboom!”

Li Feng Xuan's body was heavily smashed downwards, smashing against the body of Wang Quan Feng who was running away.

It was impossible to describe how frightening the energy was, when Su Yu's left fist which was covered in black scales with golden veins smashed into the ground, dirt and rock exploded everywhere, Li Feng Xuan and Wang Quan Feng's bodies were like ice sculptures that had suddenly been shattered, pieces of meat were mixed with the dirt and it was impossible to make out any human form.

Ma Zi Ye's kick missed as she fell to the ground dazed, to completely shred two living people into a pile of minced meat, how much strength was required? If it were the Su Yu before he had entered his unconscious state, there was simply no way such an outcome would have occurred.

As Su Yu slowly stood up, the black scales which were covered in golden veins slowly receded as he began to gasp for air.

This was the power of the Golden Blood, after being unconscious for so long he had finally gained a new ability, this ability was

simply too ferocious, although Su Yu had reached the third tier of strength, it was still too much for him to handle and that single attack had caused him to be filled with fatigue, causing him to pant breathlessly.

When he had first acquired the power of the Golden Blood, the burden on his body was too great which resulted in him becoming unconscious. Finally, at the most critical moment, he was awoken by Ma Zi Ye heavily knocking into him.

Su Yu did not only gain the abilities from the Golden Blood, he had also killed a large number of monsters including the Golden Gnome King, Golden Goblin, Savage Bull Demon and other monsters. This caused the strange energy within his body to surge and become thick to a frightening level, when Su Yu utilised all the strange energy within his body, his left arm, chest and back were all completely covered in black scales, at an initial glance, it seemed as though he were wearing a black scale chest armour.

Thinking back to the pleasure of the capability to ravage the brittle and ripping out the rotten after using the Golden Blood, Su Yu could tell that the Golden Blood had caused his strength and attack speed to increase tremendously, especially the frightening destructive power, looking at the condition of Li Feng Xuan and Wang Quan Feng's body, the destructive power had clearly went up by several notches.

This was only a small portion of power from a single drop of Golden Blood, as for the complete power, even Su Yu did not dare to recklessly use it.

If his entire body had absorbed the Golden Blood, what level of power would he attain? Such a thought suddenly filled Su Yu's mind.

When Su Yu smashed Li Feng Xuan and Wang Quan Feng into meta pulp, Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang panted as they finally stopped, Li Dong's feet were covered in fresh blood, Zhou Hua Kang tossed the metal spade in his hand to the side, it was dripping with blood and minced meat could be seen stuck to it. On the ground, the stout Lu Wei was drenched in blood, although a human form was still visible, every inch of his body was battered, his face had become a pile of meat and had already died miserably.

As for Su Ge, he had already suffered several cut wounds from Zhao Shichang and had also died miserably, amongst the five people, his death was the most direct, his corpse was actually intact.

This battle had started and ended quickly, Chu Xiang's group of five had all perished, Qin Jiagui and the others were severely injured, if it were not for Su Yu gaining consciousness at a crucial moment, the outcome of this battle would have been totally different and it was likely that Qin Jiagui and the others would have been the ones dead.

"Su Yu! Hurry and take a look at Lei Rui!" Jade anxiously shouted.

Lei Rui had been pierced by Chu Xiang's sword because of her, if Lei Rui died, Jade's heart would be filled with guilt for the rest of her life.

Su Yu who was still panting felt his heart shiver as he rushed over.

Qin Jiagui had also taken a blow from Chu Xiang's sword, an inch long wound could be seen as he laid on the ground, it was fortunate that his vitality was strong and although the wound was frightening, it was not life threatening. Yuan Ni Ping held tightly onto his hands, her face filled with concern, seeing that Qin Jiagui's wound had stopped bleeding, she was able to finally let out a sigh of relief.

Zhang Zhong Mou's face had been enveloped in black mist, it was fortunate that Su Yu had swiftly dealt with Wang Quan Feng, with the death of its owner, the black mist dissipated and Zhang Zhong Mou was able to groan softly, his strange energy was located in his face and if it were anyone else who had suffered from the black mist, they would have already died. He was the only one who was fine, although his face was in agonising pain, it was continually recovering and there was no life threatening risk.

Amongst the group, Lei Rui was in the most danger.

Zhou Birong and Lei Rui had been pierced by Chu Xiang's sword, Zhou Birong had not been wounded at a critical location but Lei Rui had been pierced directly in the chest, if it were a normal person they would have already died. Even though Lei Rui had strange energy within her, being pierced in the chest was a devastating wound and she could lose her life at any moment, Jade was extremely anxious as she breathed deeply by the side.

Su Yu hurried over as his left hand pressed over Lei Rui's wound, transferring the strange energy which was in the form of qi into Lei Rui.

At this moment, the strange energy in the form of qi within Su Yu was exceptionally strong and constantly flowed between his left arm and chest, constantly rushing against the four 'doors', under Su Yu's directions, the qi began to continually flow from his left palm into Lei Rui's body.

"Su Yu, you have to save her! Lei Rui, you can't die, I don't want to owe you this favour forever without being able to return it, Lei Rui, do you hear me?! Hurry and wake up!" Jade nervously held onto Lei Rui's hands as she screamed, her entire body trembling.

Su Yu's face was solemn as he silently transferred large amounts of qi into Lei Rui's body, however it was like a clay ox entering the sea*, there was simply no effect and he could only feel Lei Rui's vitality becoming weaker and weaker, although his strange energy had already begun to swiftly heal the wound on her chest, the wound on her heart was not getting any better.

[T/N* Disappear with no hope of returning]

Impossible to save?

Su Yu suddenly stretched his right hand, in the centre of his right palm was a ball of golden light, streaks of golden thread began to extend forth from his right palm, in no time, Su Yu's left palm had streaks of golden veins as he continued to press heavily down onto

Lei Rui's body, Lei Rui suddenly groaned as she spat out large amounts of blood.

“Lei Rui!” Jade cried out in alarm.

Su Yu panted as his forehead became covered in cold sweat, the Golden Blood was roiling within his body and the strange energy within his was like a tsunami as it instantly filled Lei Rui's entire body. Finally, Su Yu was able to feel Lei Rui's pierced heart begin to recover with a frightening speed.

“Alright!” Su Yu let out a long breath as his entire body fell to the ground by the side, his entire body was drenched in sweat as though he had climbed out from a pond.

Su Yu had just relaxed his hands when Lei Rui who was lying on the ground suddenly sat up.

Jade wiped the tears on her face as she hugged Lei Rui from the back in elation: “Lei Rui! It's wonderful that you're alright.....” Having said this, she felt that something was amiss, although Lei Rui had sat up, her body was still rigid without any response.

Su Yu also swiftly noticed that Lei Rui was seated there dazed, her entire body was extremely tense but her face was wooden, her eyes did not have any lustre like a wooden puppet.

“Lei Rui? Lei Rui, it's me, Jade. You..... Why aren't you responding?” Jade hurriedly came before Lei Rui, her elation

turned to shock, Lei Rui was awake but seemed to be in a vegetative state.

Su Yu's heart trembled as his hand pressed forward, he was able to feel that although Lei Rui's body had completely healed and her heart was whole, it was not beating and all the functions within her body had stopped. The reason she had suddenly sat up was likely due to the frightening amount of strange energy that had caused her to rebound upwards.

Lei Rui was already dead.

Her soul had already left her body.

"Lei Rui..... Lei Rui....." Jade gradually understood what had happened as she hugged Lei Rui and began to cry.

"Why did you save me! I really don't understand, if it were me..... I wouldn't be able to do the same..... I really don't understand..... I don't understand..... Why did you have to die for me....." Jade's cries were hoarse as she continually shook Lei Rui.

In that moment between life and death, Lei Rui had suddenly pushed Jade aside and took the blow from the sword for her, nobody would know what she was thinking in that instant.

"Jade, don't act like this. She's already dead....." Looking at Jade who was crying pitifully, Su Yu's face was solemn as he gently

patted her shoulders to comfort her.

Su Yu did not really have a deep relationship with Lei Rui, back in school, Su Yu's results were mediocre while Lei Rui was akin to Ning Yan and had fantastic results. She also had exceptional leadership abilities and had become the class president, her outstanding performance was too stark from Su Yu's mediocrity and they had not interacted much.

It was only when the school was transported into this strange forest, Su Yu's brave and ferocious performance had allowed him to kill several Lesser Goblins, he had been severely injured and Lei Rui had fed him a meal, the relations between the two parties had then gotten closer.

It was due to the gratitude for the meal that Su Yu had allowed Lei Rui to join the group, they did not have a deep relationship but looking at Lei Rui die, especially to save Jade, Su Yu was rather deeply impacted.

Zhao Shichang walked over as he suddenly held Lei Rui's hand, he seemed to have felt something as he lifted Lei Rui's eyelids before finally speaking: "She isn't dead. Jade, there's no need to be so upset."

Jade was dazed as she lifted her head and looked with her blurry vision at Zhao Shichang: "She isn't dead?"

Zhao Shichang nodded: "My grandfather and father were both chinese physicians, although I don't have much interest in

medicine, I've heard of many diagnoses since i was young. Look at how Lei Rui is able to keep her eyes wide open, how does she look like a dead person?"

Su Yu was stunned for a moment, Lei Rui had suddenly sat up, although she was like a wooden puppet, her eyes were wide open but seemed lifeless.

Zhao Shichang had just spoken when Lei Rui's eyes actually slowly closed before opening again.

"That's right, if my deduction is right, she is blinking but her speed is several times slower than that of ordinary people. Her current condition can be called 'death-like state' or 'suspended animation'..... In any case, she hasn't really died."

Zhao Shichang's point of view made everyone feel that this was inconceivable, Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang and the others gathered around as they measured Lei Rui who was seated there dazed.

"I'm sure you people have heard of similar incidents, a person died and their corpse was about to be cremated when they suddenly came alive." Zhao Shichang continued: "There are several reasons and I can't really explain them, in any case, I'm certain that Lei Rui isn't dead, there may come a day when she wakes up..... It is also possible that she will never wake up and become a vegetable, however, her current condition is definitely much better than a vegetable."

Listening to Zhao Shichang's explanation, Jade's crying

gradually stopped.

Zhou Hua Kang who was by the side interrupted: “If she remains in this state, do we have to continue to carry her? Wouldn’t this be extremely tiring.....”

His sentence had not completed when Jade suddenly jumped up and grabbed his collar as she screamed: “What did you say?! Who are you calling a burden?!” Jade’s eyes were red and her expression seemed as though she wanted to eat a person alive.

Zhou Hua Kang was alarmed, his collar had been firmly gripped by Jade and it was extremely difficult to breathe as he hurriedly exclaimed: “Let go! Otherwise, don’t blame me for being unkind.” If it were any other woman, Zhou Hua Kang would have already hit her, however, he did not dare to do so towards Jade.

Chapter 118: Secret Treasure Weapon

Zhou Hua Kang was not dumb, he could clearly see the relationship between Su Yu and Jade, although the two people often bickered and seemed to not see eye to eye, people who knew them understood that they had been together since young, although they were not directly related, their relationship was definitely akin to a blood brother or sister.

It was due to Jade that Su Yu had persisted in returning to the school, in Su Yu's heart, Jade was extremely important and likely exceeded what he imagined.

Su Yu saw that Zhou Hua Kang's face was swollen red in shock and anger but did not dare to retaliate, embarrassment could be seen on his face as he hurriedly pulled Jade as he whispered: "Jade, calm down, this isn't like you."

Zhou Hua Kang sighed in relief as he swiftly retreated to the side, he had finally witnessed Jade's explosive anger and scolded in his heart but felt exceptionally helpless.

Jade spoke in a hoarse voice: "Su Yu, what are you talking about? Lei Rui ended up in this state because of me, he actually called Lei Rui a burden, is he even human?"

Su Yu secretly thought to himself: "The person Lei Rui saved was you and not Zhou Hua Kang, it is natural for him to feel that she is a burden." He did not dare to say this as he hurriedly consoled: "I understand, I understand. Nobody feels that she is a burden, Zhao

Shichang has already said that she should be able to gain consciousness soon, by then everything would be okay.”

While speaking he also patted Jade’s back, a strange thought filled his mind, if it were the past, he would never have imagined himself being so close to Jade, if they had not entered this frightening world and experienced so many events, would Jade have decided to rely on him?

Jade gradually calmed down as she looked at Lei Rui who sat on the ground immobile. Gritting her teeth, she looked towards Su Yu with an extremely solemn expression as she said in a heavy voice: “Su Yu, I want to become strong.”

Su Yu stared blankly for a moment before nodding, he had a stunned expression on his face.

Jade slowly continued: “I want to become stronger, nobody is going to get hurt because of me in the future..... I want to become stronger, strong enough to protect Lei Rui, I won’t allow any harm to come to her, Su Yu, You have to help me, help me to become stronger.”

Su Yu was silent for a moment before replying: “I understand.”

It was good that Jade was willing to become stronger, she had finally understood the cruelty of this world and in this way the chances of her surviving had increased significantly.

The sky was already dark and they had many injured people, the group decided to rest the night. Jade looked after Lei Rui as she gently fed her.

Su Yu and Zhang Zhong Mou saw this as they exchanged glances, feeling that this was simply unimaginable.

Zhang Zhong Mou had stopped moaning as he held his face, clean, flat and smooth, this fellow's ability was all within his face and although the withering effect of the black smoke was extremely terrifying, Zhang Zhong Mou's face was extremely tough and was able to recover in a short period of time.

Su Yu looked at the group who were mostly injured as Ma Zi Ye slowly recounted the events that had transpired after he had fallen unconscious. Su Yu felt alarmed and also recognised the need to make his teammates grow stronger.

“Young master Yu, thinking about it, I should pass this to you.”

Zhang Zhong Mou seemed to recall something as he took a ball of light which was shining with a faint golden colour, this was the precious treasure within the Golden Goblin that had been killed by Su Yu after he obtained the Golden Blood, Su Yu had fallen unconscious and Zhang Zhong Mou had kept it, this precious treasure could only be opened by the person who killed the monster.

Receiving the golden ball of light, Su Yu seemed to think of something as he suddenly stood up, he remembered that Chu

Xiang had held a fiery red long sword and it did not seem as though it was formed from strange energy.

Su Yu found Chu Xiang's corpse but did not see the fiery red long sword, upon closer inspection, Su Yu noticed an ordinary looking bracelet on her wrist.

With a thought, Su Yu's Eye of Perception activated as it locked on the bracelet, a stream of information quickly appeared within his mind.

Name of Precious Treasure: Red Lotus Bracelet

Information: Ability to summon a Red Lotus Sword

Sword Abilities: Red Lotus Fire Assault

Cooldown: 24 Hours

Others: Ownerless

This bracelet was indeed a precious treasure, it could summon a Red Lotus Sword which could utilise the Red Lotus Fire Assault ability, however, the cooldown

for the ability was similar to his ring and needed a full day before it could be used again.

At this moment, he finally understood why Chu Xiang was so

indignant in the moment of her death, Chu Xiang was a tier three dark iron warrior and her strength was definitely not inferior to him, she also had the Red Lotus Sword but had been struck by Su Yu's Earth Spikes Assault before she had the chance to use the Red Lotus Fire Assault, there was also the possibility that the ability had not been refreshed since its last usage.

The strength of this Red Lotus Sword was definitely not ordinary but Su Yu had the Rending Storm with its tremendous destructive power, if he were to hold a long sword it would actually hinder his ability, if he held it in his right hand, he would be distracted and be confused about when to use his left arm or the sword in his right, this sword simply did not suit Su Yu's purposes.

Su Yu currently understood how important it was for his comrades to become stronger, upon seeing the information of this sword, he was already considering who was most suitable for the sword.

Qin Jiagui's battle method was similar to his and was struck off the list, Zhao Shichang already had a bone blade and did not need a sword, Su Yu was swiftly thinking of the various members of the team like Ma Zi Ye, Zhang Zhong Mou and Jade.

Giving the sword to Jade would be due to personal reasons, she had just mentioned wanting to become stronger and passing her this sword would definitely help her improve her strength, however, she was not the most suitable person, she was still tier zero and there was no indication how her strange energy would develop, the most suitable choices were either Ma Zi Ye or Zhang Zhong Mou.

Both people lacked strong offensive methods, Zhang Zhong Mou could only rely on his head to smash the enemy, as for Ma Zi Ye, although she had reached the tier two level, besides using her leg to do a flying kick, she did not have any good methods and simply could not compare to Su Yu's Rending Storm, Qin Jiagui's Demolishing Iron Fist or Zhao Shichang's Bone Blade.

Most importantly, Ma Zi Ye had a martial arts background and should have practiced sword arts previously. If a sword was given to her combined with her Web of Metal, her killing ability would certainly rise tremendously.

Su Yu's mind was churning and his gaze swiftly fell onto Ma Zi Ye. Without question, if emotions were taken out of the picture, Ma Zi Ye was definitely the most suitable person for the Red Lotus Sword, within a short period of time, she was also the best candidate to get used to it.

Chapter 119: Star Blade

As for the others, they had never practiced the sword before and if they obtained it they would only recklessly hack with it.

Based on relationship, Zhang Zhong Mou had the strongest relationship.

Su Yu began to hesitate, should he decide based on personal feelings to give it to Zhang Zhong Mou or look at the greater picture and pass it to Ma Zi Ye who could utilise its full potential.

In no time, Su Yu's mind began to think of all that Ma Zi Ye had contributed during this journey and his heart came to a firm decision, he would act for the greater good and pass the sword to Ma Zi Ye, this would improve the strength of the group and thus their likelihood of living.

With his decision made, Su Yu lightly sighed before crushing the ball of light in his hand.

With the ball of light shattered, the precious treasure that was contained within was immediately exposed.

The new treasure was actually also a bracelet.

On the back of Su Yu's left hand, the Eye of Perception appeared as he suddenly sucked in a large amount of air: "So coincidental."

Name: Star Bracelet

Information: Able to summon Star Blade

Abilities: Starlight

Cooldown: 24 Hours

Others: Ownerless

Who knew that this precious treasure was actually a weapon, this would allow him to pass a sword to both Zhang Zhong Mou and Ma Zi Ye, solving his dilemma.

Walking directly to Ma Zi Ye with a faint smile on his face, Su Yu spoke up: “Are you more familiar with a blade or sword?” Ma Zi Ye was still his first choice and he decided to ask for her opinion.

Ma Zi Ye was dazed for a moment before replying: “I’ve practiced both the blade and sword but based on my character, I prefer the might and prowess of a blade, the agile sword isn’t so interesting. Why are you asking this?”

Ma Zi Ye did not know what Su Yu had taken from the ball of light nor did she think that the sword that Chu Xiang had used was actually a precious treasure that could be summoned from the bracelet.

Su Yu had previously imagined that Ma Zi Ye would prefer the

sword since she was a girl but her reply was contrary to this and she actually preferred the blade.

Faintly smiling, Su Yu continued: “Nothing much, I’ve just obtained an item and I feel that it’s suitable for your usage.” Before handing the Star Bracelet over to her.

“Wear it and use your strange energy to activate it, if you do so the precious treasure will regard you as the owner.” This Star Bracelet was an ownerless object and the method for it recognising an owner was simple, Su Yu had already understood this and explained it.

Ma Zi Ye was stunned, she did not expect Su Yu to pass a treasure bracelet to her and could not help but measure him a few times, disbelief written on her face.

Su Yu turned and was prepared to pass the Red Lotus Bracelet to Zhang Zhong Mou but suddenly noticed that Zhao Shichang was pulling Zhang Zhong Mou and speaking to him before pulling a golden wheel and passing it to him.

Su Yu’s mind churned, this golden wheel seemed as though it was the weapon of the Golden Gnome King, why was it with Zhao Shichang?

For the battle this day, it was not only Su Yu but even Zhao Shichang had noticed the importance of the strength of one’s teammates, Zhao Shichang’s right arm had already transformed into a frightening insect bone blade, this golden wheel did not have

much use for him and he immediately thought of Zhang Zhong Mou who did not have any good offensive methods, immediately deciding to pass this golden wheel to him.

The Golden Gnome also had a precious treasure hidden within its body, when it advanced to a Golden Gnome King, the precious treasure within it would actually merge with a drop of Golden Blood, advancing to become a Golden Weapon. The Golden Gnome King was killed by Su Yu, the weapon after it was killed by a human would become not become an ownerless object but rather identify Su Yu as the owner.

Although Zhao Shichang managed to obtain the golden wheel, he could only use it as a normal weapon and could not utilise its full power.

When Zhang Zhong Mou received it, his brows frowned. Although this golden wheel looked nice and flashed with a golden light, when held it simply did not have much use, it could at best be 'better than nothing', it was no wonder that Zhao Shichang would gift it to him.

Su Yu noticed this and the Eye of Perception activated as it immediately gathered the information regarding the golden wheel which flashed through his mind.

There was simply no way to understand an unknown precious treasure, with the information from the Eye of Perception, Su Yu noticed that the owner was actually himself.

Su Yu was dazed for a moment before recalling that this golden wheel was actually the precious treasure weapon within the Golden Gnome King that had fused with the Golden Blood, when he had killed it, this golden wheel had recognised him as the owner.

Su Yu walked over before speaking: “Old Mou, this is for you.” handing over the Red Lotus Bracelet.

Zhang Zhong Mou was curious: “What’s this bracelet for? I’m not a lady why would I wear a bracelet?”

Su Yu glared at him before continuing: “This contains the Red Lotus Sword within, wear it and you will understand.”

Zhang Zhong Mou was not dim-witted and immediately understood: “This is a precious treasure? Similar to your ring?” Elation could be seen on his face.

Su Yu affirmed with a nod then continued: “Give this to me, you guys won’t be able to utilise it. Let me see if there’s anything special about it.” as he pointed at the golden wheel within Zhang Zhong Mou’s grasp.

Zhang Zhong Mou was elated as he accepted the Red Lotus Bracelet, hurrying to wear it on his right hand, as for the golden wheel which he felt was a useless item, he swiftly handed it over to Su Yu.

Su Yu had a faint smile on his face while Zhao Shichang asked curiously: “Su Yu, this weapon actually has other abilities?”

Su Yu replied: “That should be the case, this is actually a precious treasure that has actually advanced, a drop of the Golden Blood within the Golden Gnome King has actually merged with it but you guys are unable to utilise it.”

Listening to his reply, Zhao Shichang’s face became slightly red as he immediately understood, this Golden Gnome King had been killed by Su Yu and this golden wheel was actually a precious treasure, it had already identified Su Yu as the owner and would not be able to showcase its might in the hands of others.

Su Yu held the golden wheel and circulated his strange energy, the golden wheel gradually released a faint light and this eventually formed a golden ball the size of a millstone.

This strange scene also made Su Yu feel shocked as the others slowly walked over, in no time, Su Yu was able to sense the drop of Golden Blood within his right arm, it seemed to feel something as it reacted and voluntarily blew up the golden rays of light.

“What?” Su Yu was alarmed, as the golden ball of light exploded, even Su Yu could not help but back away.

The others that were surrounding it were also given a fright.

When the golden light faded, there was a bluish-white necklace

that was covered in dark gold stripes on the ground.

When Su Yu picked it up, he saw that the pendant of the necklace slowly became dark blue. There was a bizarre lightning bolt symbol on top of it and inside it, one could faintly see blue rays of light surging about.

Chapter 120: Progressive Precious Treasure

Su Yu knew that the Golden Gnome King would have a precious treasure within it, thereafter the precious treasure fused with the Golden Blood and advanced, however, there seemed to have some complications during the fusion process causing the weapon to become an unimpressive golden wheel. At this moment, thanks to the aggravation from the Golden Blood within him, the precious treasure was finally fully advanced.

The Eye of Perception activated as it locked on the precious treasure, the information it obtained was as follows:

Information: Origin Force Necklace, first form, have not advanced yet.

Others: Unknown

The information that Su Yu obtained left him befuddled, what was the Origin Force Necklace that had not advanced? Could it be advanced further?

At this moment Zhang Zhong Mou exclaimed as he pressed the bracelet on his right hand, a streak of red light was released as he pulled a fiery red long sword covered in markings out, this was clearly the Red Lotus Sword.

Zhang Zhong Mou's face was filled with elation as he placed the sword within his right hand, waving it in the air as he felt the frightening power contained within the sword allowing him to

easily create whooshing noises in the air. The sword inadvertently went towards a stone and actually cleanly sliced it in two.

“Really impressive, haha, hahaha, this is going to be great.” Zhang Zhong Mou was extremely excited.

By the side, Ma Zi Ye’s eyes were squinting as she placed the bracelet on her left hand, her right hand pressed on the Star Bracelet as she slowly pulled, a slender blade that was flashing with a dark red light was pulled out.

This blade was carved with silver stars and seemed exceptionally dazzling, Ma Zi Ye did not speak but rather wielded the Star Blade as she executed various blade arts.

As she brandished the Star Blade, it seemed almost impregnable. A ferocious hissing wind sounded out as she swung it around, this show of strength was incomparable, starkly contrasting to Zhang Zhong Mou’s display.

Zhang Zhong Mou noticed this and his face was filled with envy as he muttered: “Someone with a martial arts background is really different, grandnanny, this blade dance is really nice to look at, hopefully it isn’t just artistically pleasing.”

Su Yu constantly looked at the ‘Origin Force Necklace’ within his hand, he felt that this was definitely not an ordinary precious treasure and although there was not much information on it, he still placed it around his neck, safely against his flesh.

When he placed this necklace onto his neck, he swiftly felt the strange energy within his body surged into the heart of the pendant as though it were feeding the necklace, it was fortunate that the necklace absorbed the strange energy gradually and did not cause much problems.

Su Yu recalled the information regarding the necklace that mentioned it could advance, the absorption of his strange energy, was this something that could allow the necklace to advance?

His body contained over ten holes that could absorb and circulate strange energy, he was not afraid of the loss of strange energy but rather felt that the necklace was absorbing the strange energy too slowly, he was looking forward to the effects on the necklace when it was filled with the strange energy.

Having worn the necklace, Su Yu finally noticed Ning Yan, she was still seated alone in the corner like a stranger, her face was covered with a cloth as she quietly sat there. Su Yu did not know that her face had been disfigured, although Ma Zi Ye filled Su Yu in on the events that transpired since he went unconscious, she did not mention Ning Yan.

At this moment looking at her face which was covered by a cloth, he wondered what she was up to. He could not help but secretly ask Zhang Zhong Mou as he pointed at Ning Yan, indicating to him to fill him in on what was going on.

Zhang Zhong Mou hurriedly lowered his voice as he whispered: "When we encountered a monster, the tongue of the monster had a toxic poison and actually licked her face, causing it to be

disfigured.”

Su Yu’s body trembled as he muttered: “She has strange energy within her, it should be able to recover.”

Zhang Zhong Mou then mentioned Zhou Birong’s matters before continuing: “She is still tier zero and her strange energy is insufficient to fully recover.” Thereafter he seemed to think of something as he smiled: “Dear brother, this is your chance, with your power, you can even heal instant noodle sister’s sliced off foot, aiding Ning Yan in healing her face shouldn’t be a problem.”

Hearing Zhang Zhong Mou address him as brother Yu made the goosebumps on his body stand as he glared at him before looking into the distance at Ning Yan. He seemed to think of something as he turned to Zhang Zhong Mou: “If I wish to help her..... she has to first remove the piece of cloth covering her face, not everyone can bear to do this, it’s so difficult for her to have an objective to work towards, this may be the pushing factor that will force her to work hard and recover.”

The ‘666’ marking that was on Ning Yan’s neck floated through his mind, coupled with the fact that she was adamant against killing monsters, this made Su Yu very puzzled and he really wanted to know what would happen if Ning Yan killed a monster and advanced to a tier one dark iron warrior.

Ma Zi Ye wielded the Star Blade in a blade dance before panting as she stopped, her face was filled with elation as she gently stroked the Star Blade, feeling the Star Blade and the ability “Starlight” which it contained, she seemed to comprehend

something as she kept the blade within her Star Bracelet and walked over to Su Yu and Zhang Zhong Mou.

Zhang Zhong Mou also placed the Red Lotus Sword back into his bracelet, carrying a sword was rather inconvenient.

“Thank you.” Ma Zi Ye’s face was slightly flushed as she looked towards Su Yu.

Su Yu waved his hand: “There’s nothing to be thankful about, you have a martial arts background and this blade is most suitable for you, I’ve done this in consideration of the group, the stronger we are the greater our chances of living on.”

Ma Zi Ye acquiesced: “That’s right, right now we have to prioritise helping everyone become stronger. If we were all tier two dark iron warriors, the group of five would not have been so arrogant.” Thinking of Lei Rui’s miserable state, she could not help but sigh.

The night was gradually becoming darker and after a round of chatting everyone began to rest. Ning Yan continued to sit in a dark corner as her eyes occasionally glanced over at Lei Rui who was still in a vegetative state, a flash of hunger could also be seen in her eyes but she would always shake her head as though she were tossing away an idea, her eyes swiftly showing helplessness and fear as she hugged her body, continually trembling as though she were exceptionally lonely.

It was a peaceful night, when Su Yu finally woke up, he rubbed

his eyes and noticed that the grey clouds in the sky had parted, exposing a brilliant sun which caused this sinister forest to seem more alive.

After a night of rest, Zhao Shichang's injuries had fully healed while Qin Jiagui and Zhao Bi Rong who were more heavily injured had not fully recovered but were in a condition where they could walk.

Chapter 121: Newly Arrived Personnel

At this moment, Qin Jiagui's head was lifted as he stared at the sky and muttered: "If our school was really swallowed by a Sky Hole and dropped here, the place we arrived at should be an underworld, why is there still a sun within the underworld?....."

Zhao Shichang continued: "Everything is only a conjecture at the moment, nobody knows if it's really because of the Sky Holes..... Also, even if it were really the Sky Holes, we may not necessarily have fallen into the underworld, I remember some books mentioning that there exists different dimensions or super realistic virtual worlds within this planet..... Ai, I really don't understand what's going on with this damned world, Qin Jiagui, do you really think that we are no longer within our previous world? If that's the case, do we have any hope of returning?"

Qin Jiagui was silent as Su Yu continued: "Whether this world is within our original world or another dimension, since it exists, there will definitely be a reason. As long as we understand the underlying principles, we will definitely be able to return to our original world. Since we are able to arrive here, there must be a way back, the most important thing is finding this 'door' which will allow us to leave."

Qin Jiagui nodded: "That's right, we obtained the map which possibly shows us the 'door' within this world." As he said this, he opened the map and began to analyse it carefully: "This valley is recorded within the map, based on the distance indicated on the map, we should be able to reach the exit in six to seven days."

Having said this, the group's spirits were lifted, they only needed to endure for six to seven more days before leaving this frightening forest.

Ma Zi Ye swallowed her instant noodles as she hurriedly spoke up: "Today is the tenth day, we've already been in this forest for ten days."

There were varied expressions on the faces of everyone as they heard these words, Li Dong sighed: "Who knew that we would be able to survive within this forest, we've already managed to hold on for ten days and after six to seven days we will finally reach the end, I really hope that it really is the exit of this world. Fellows, if we really manage to leave this world, do you think that we will be able to keep the power that we have obtained? If we continue to have such strength, wouldn't we be like superhumans in the real world?"

Having said this, an expression of excitement appeared on his face, it was clear that he was imagining the benefits of having such strength within their familiar world.

Qin Jiagui glanced over at him: "If you have the time to daydream, why not think of how to survive the remaining few days, within this forest many things can happen and we do not know what other frightening monsters live within this forest."

As he spoke, he also began lifting up large bags of food as he prepared to leave.

Su Yu noticed Jade attempting to lift Lei Rui who was currently in a vegetative state, walking over he spoke up: “Let me do it.”

Jade gently bit her lower lips as she shook her head: “No, I will personally carry her.” before carefully placing Lei Rui onto her back, it was fortunate that Jade was rather fit, together with the strange energy in her body, carrying Lei Rui was not too punishing a task.

Su Yu watched Jade’s actions and immediately knew that she felt that she owed Lei Rui too much, causing her to want to personally help Lei Rui. Sighing, she assisted to lift Lei Rui’s bags of food off the ground.

Qin Jiagui and Zhao Shichang continued to walk in front, Yuan Ni Ping was close beside Qin Jiagui, Jade who carried Lei Rui was in the centre while Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye and Zhang Zhong Mou fell to the back of the group.

Zhang Zhong Mou constantly touched his Red Lotus bracelet, he was filled with anticipation for the appearance of a monster to allow him to test the strength of the Red Lotus Sword as well as the Red Lotus Fire Assault ability.

Su Yu could still feel the Origin Force Necklace slowly absorbing the strange energy within his body, there were no other abnormalities.

The group of people followed the valley and continued deeper, the valley was extremely long and one could not see the end of it,

after several minutes without any warning, the ground suddenly began to tremble.

Qin Jiagui who was walking in front immediately stopped as he carefully scrutinised the surroundings, panic could be seen on his face as the trembling became more intense as though there were an earthquake.

“What’s going on! Everyone be careful!” Qin Jiagui loudly shouted.

Su Yu immediately stood beside Jade as a precaution.

“Eh? Look over there!” Zhao Shichang suddenly cried out in alarm as his hand stretched to point in a direction. The group noticed that following the tremors, the ten odd metres of ground ahead of them had suddenly sunk in forming a hole that was over ten metres wide.

“Sky Hole?” Su Yu was extremely shocked as he rushed forward but swiftly stopped, the tremors were becoming more intense and the everyone an energy fluctuation, thereafter an object was slowly emerging from this Sky Hole.

This tremor only lasted for several seconds before everything became calm again. Qin Jiagui, Su Yu, Zhao Shichang and the others stared dazedly in front of them, the Sky Hole which had appeared before them had raised back up and returned to normal, what was strange was that atop this hole that had been filled, there was actually a tourist bus with sounds of alarm coming from

within.

“Bang! Bang!”

The windows of the bus were smashed as a person began to climb outside, cries of a child could be heard from within.

Su Yu, Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhong Mou and the others were standing ten odd metres away as they exchanged glances, weird expressions were on their faces as Su Yu suddenly said: “I understand now.”

Qin Jiagui also followed up: “I also understand.”

Suddenly, everyone understood what was going on. Their school must have also arrived within this forest in the same manner, the tourist bus and the people within must be a new batch of people that were sent into this world, looking at the unbelievable scene before them, everyone seemed to think of this possibility.

“Initially when we surmised that we had fallen into this world through the Sky Hole, we imagined that we had fallen from the sky..... Who knew that this was not the case and we actually arrived from below the ground..... Damn, what’s going on with this world.....” Su Yu muttered to himself, as for Qin Jiagui, he had already rushed forward as he forcefully opened the door of the tourist bus.

Male, female, old and young, people were climbing out in panic

from the fallen tourist bus. Looking at the numbers, there were over twenty people, after exiting the bus, besides a few children who were crying, the others began to slowly calm down as they measured their surroundings before noticing Qin Jiagui, Su Yu and the others.

Chapter 122: Tourist Bus That Fell Into Sky Hole

“There’s been an accident, hurry and call the cops.”

“Is anyone injured?”

“Be good, precious, don’t cry, everything is already!”

“Isn’t this a valley? Has the bus fallen into a valley?”

“We’re really lucky, falling into such a deep valley without being injured.”

“Eh, my handphone doesn’t have any reception!”

“Driver, what’s the matter with you? How could you allow the bus to fall into here? If anything untoward were to befall any of us, who would be responsible?”

The twenty odd people were in a clamor and the scene was a mess, the middle aged driver who wore a grey cap was pale-faced as he climbed out of the bus, looking at the surroundings, shock could be seen etched on his face.

Amongst the group, he was the most clear about what had happened. While he was driving the tourist bus on the highway, a hole of over ten odd metres had suddenly appeared before the bus

and he did not have the time to react as the entire tourist bus fell into the hole, the surroundings had suddenly become dark as the entire bus trembled, everyone was panicking and after several seconds, the trembling had stopped and this bus had suddenly appeared within this valley.

“I know, the bus must have fallen into a large hole along the highway and slipped into this valley, it’s really a miracle that we made it out unharmed.” The middle aged driver removed his grey cap as he exposed his bald head, rubbing away the sweat which covered it.

Su Yu and the others exchanged glances, they realised that this group of people did not know that they had fallen into a Sky Hole and were in a completely different world, they really believed that they had merely slipped off the highway into a valley, thinking that it was a simple incident that occurred.

At this moment, there were parents who were placating their children, others had their phones out but did not have any reception, there were also a large majority who were staring at Su Yu, Qin Jiagui and the others.

“This valley is simply too deep, the signal strength within a mountainous region is already bad, do any of you have reception? Sh*t, we can’t even call the police.” Someone shouted.

“Hey, are the few of you..... living in this area? Eh? Police officer?” When the group finally calmed down, several people began to earnestly measure Su Yu and the others, they could see their tattered attire and disheveled appearances, finally, they also

noticed Zhou Birong who was wearing a police uniform but also saw that it was in tatters, she did not seem like a real police officer and after asking they did not walk forward but rather began to slowly back away.

“Could these people be living in this mountainous region?” Several people began to discreetly talk.

“That’s not right, ordinary civilians wouldn’t be like this, could they be aboriginals living in this area? Look at their attires and the stench from their bodies..... We couldn’t possibly have run into cannibals right? It’s over..... We’re going to be cooked and eaten alive.”

“Nonsense, crow mouth*, we have over twenty people, we don’t need to be afraid of them.” Another person muttered with an indifferent expression on his face, looking at Su Yu and the others, he did feel that something was off.

Qin Jiagui noticed that not a single person from the other group came forward and voluntarily walked over: “Everyone, calm down, I have something to inform all of you.....” He was thinking of informing these people on the matters of the world, allowing more of them to survive.

The bald headed bus driver continued to examine his surroundings, attempting to make some sense of where he was. He was familiar with the area they had gotten trapped in and even if the bus fell, based on logic it should not be too far from the highway. However, as he examined the surroundings, he realised that nothing was familiar and he felt alarmed, hearing Qin Jiagui’s

cultured and gentle speech which was in contrast to his tattered appearance, he sighed in relief as he rushed over: “Little brother, are you a civilian living in this area? What district is this area? Shipaizhen* or White Marsh town*? We’ve had an accident and our bus tumbled down, how can we get out of this valley?”

T/N*:places in China

Both sides of the valley were sheer cliffs which were impossible to scale, the path seemed endless on both sides and this bus driver simply did not know which direction they should walk in.

A middle aged man whose face was dark, thin and carried a grey bag continually pressed his outdated handphone in a panicked manner, hearing the bus driver speak, he added: “That’s right, which direction should we head in? I have urgent matters to attend to in the city, initially I imagined that taking a tourist bus would be faster but who knew that we would get into an accident. This is so problematic, I should have taken the train.”

By the side, a youth who seemed like a hooligan was together with a male and two females, this bunch of youths wore ordinary clothes and upon hearing the words of the middle aged man, he actually lit a cigarette and smiled: “This uncle, since you have urgent matters to attend to, why didn’t you take an aeroplane? Wouldn’t that be even fast?”

The middle aged man glanced at him but did not reply as he rushed the bus driver: “Hurry and think of a solution, I really have urgent matters to attend to.”

The bus driver was also anxious as he snapped: “Calm down, everyone is anxious and I’m also feeling anxious, we’ve met with an accident and should calmly handle the situation. Just like what this brother mentioned, if you really had urgent matters to attend to, you should have taken a flight, then you wouldn’t be stuck in this situation.”

The middle aged man was incensed as his entire body trembled while he spoke in a hoarse voice: “My wife is critically ill and needs to have an operation done otherwise her life would be at risk, I would love to sit on a plane but I can’t afford it. After receiving this news, I scrimped to borrow money for my wife’s operation, how would I have the funds for taking a flight? The hospital is waiting for my signature and my payment, otherwise, they will not commence with the operation. I’m anxious, big brother, I’m really extremely anxious, help me think of a solution please.”

The dark and skinny middle aged man spoke while tears began to stream down his face.

The people in the surroundings became silent as a few mothers with kids actually had compassionate expressions on their faces.

The bus driver touched his bald head as he replied: “Brother, I understand, but can’t you keep quiet for a moment, I’m already asking for directions. Once we get back to the main road, we can hitch a ride, don’t worry, we won’t waste too much time here.”

Listening to these persuasive words, this uncle who seemed to

have been through many of life's struggles finally calmed down as he grasped the grey bag in his hand tightly.

The two pairs of youths who seemed like hooligans constantly stared at the grey bag within his hand, from the words spoken by the middle aged man, his wife urgently needed an operation and a large amount of money was required, he had borrowed the money and was rushing to the hospital to make payment, looking at the way he nervously held onto the grey bag, it seemed likely that the money was within the bag.

The two pairs of youths exchanged glances, ill intent clear in their eyes.

Chapter 123: Avid Reader

Qin Jiagui frowned before sighing.

Li Dong looked at this bunch of people who had fallen into another world without knowing anything and felt superior in his heart, looking at the group, he actually felt that it was rather laughable, if they came into contact with monsters, what would that scenario be like? Haha..... His heart was filled with a feeling of schadenfreude.

Although this middle aged man's wife was within the hospital and could die at any moment, Li Dong did not feel any compassion. If this was the past he might have felt some compassion, however, after being in this forest for over ten days and watching as countless classmates and teachers die, Li Dong already lost his feeling for compassion.

Even he could die at any moment, under such circumstances, he did not have the time to be bothered about someone else.

Zhao Shichang then spoke up: "Don't quarrel, this place isn't the world that you were previously familiar with. Everywhere is filled with monsters and danger, you people better think of ways to find weapons to protect yourselves, in that way you will have a better chance of living."

Zhao Shichang's words had just been spoken and several people looked at him, some had compassion in their eyes while others seemed as though they were looking at a retard.

It was clear that they felt Zhao Shichang was a lunatic and no one bothered with him.

The middle aged bus driver felt that the group of people before him were rather strange, he had questioned Qin Jiagui whether this region was Shipaizhen or White Marsh town but was interrupted by the tanned and skinny middle aged man, seeing Zhao Shichang's crazed talk, he hurriedly grabbed hold of Qin Jiagui and asked: "Little brother, where exactly are we?"

Qin Jiagui looked towards Zhao Shichang as he replied: "He's already answered you, you people have fallen into a Sky Hole and arrived in this place, we aren't sure where exactly this place is, but one thing is for certain, this world is completely different from the world that we are familiar with. There are various frightening monsters, everyone should look for some items to protect yourselves."

Qin Jiagui's words made the bus driver speechless as he shook his head and muttered: "Such bad luck, another lunatic, these bunch of people must have something wrong in their heads..... . this is problematic."

In the other group, there was youth who seemed to be lacking sleep, he was holding a laptop bag and had seemed troubled when he heard Qin Jiagui's words, he actually laughed: "I know about the Sky Holes, I've heard that they are the indication of the end of the world in 2012, it's been appearing all over the world. Hey, do you mean to tell us that we've been transported through them? Haha, I often read such novels, if you've got the time you should

write your own novel, I feel that you should make it even more realistic, for example, you should state that this place is a world at the heart of the earth and you are the natives of this area, we have fallen into the heart of the world..... Wait, there's actually a sun here, why not we just call it a mysterious and mystical mainland China world, you are original natives of that world, how's that? I feel this idea is quite good..... That's right..... Sky holes..... falling into a mystical world..... This is such excellent material! Inspiration..... This is inspiration! I've finally got a concept for my new novel!"

This youth who had dark eye circles hurriedly took out a pen and some papers and actually began to write, rushing to note down everything he had just mentioned.

Hearing the words of this youth, Qin Jiagui and the others exchanged glances, it was not weird for the other party to not believe their words, to the other party, they had fallen from the highway and landed within the valley, at this moment if someone at the bottom of the valley told them that they had arrived at another unknown world, it would simply be too difficult to digest, it was no wonder that they treated Qin Jiagui and Zhao Shichang as lunatics.

"There's still no reception on the phone, I don't think anyone will be able to rescue us anytime soon, let's move out on our own, this place shouldn't be too far away from the highway."

At this moment, there were already people beginning to explore the area ahead, rubble covered the bottom of the valley and the tourist bus had landed on its side, it could no longer move and they

could only rely on their feet to travel.

Zhou Birong noticed that this group of people simply did not listen to the warnings of Qin Jiagui and Zhao Shichang as she personally spoke up in a loud voice: “Everyone, I am a police officer, listen to me, what they just said is completely real, this place isn’t the world that all of you are familiar with. There’s danger everywhere and it’s actually filled with various monsters that exceed our understanding, everyone should do your best to prepare some weapons to defend yourselves.....”

She was still speaking but a large majority of the people ignored her as they inspected their surroundings, they did not see any danger and climbed back aboard the tourist bus to take their luggage.

Zhou Birong was dazed, the youth with large eye rings hurried over with his laptop bag, elation evident on his face as he spoke: “This police officer, are you an original resident of this area or did you arrive in this place before us? Hmmmm, so many people being transported over..... this concept seems to be a group transportation, it will be easy to make errors in the plot in this way.....” The youth bit on a ballpoint pen as he frowned.

Zhou Birong was helpless as she finally shook her head and sighed, she understood that there was simply no way to convince this group of people, her police uniform was in tatters and this group of people clearly did not think that she was a real police officer.

The youth before her was constantly talking and she could not

help but stretch her right hand as a three hooked black claw suddenly appeared as she spoke in a heavy voice: “Do all of you believe me now? There are frightening monsters everywhere, after killing these monsters you can gain unique abilities like me, have all of you understood this? This is no longer the world that you are familiar with.”

Zhou Birong suddenly used her strange energy, transforming her right arm into the black claw, the group heard her exclamation and looked over, immediately becoming speechless.

The hooligan youth could not help but laugh: “What prop is that? It actually looks like the real deal. Hey, I know, are you people some actors in a show?”

“That’s right, no wonder you’re in such pitiful straits, are you filming a apocalyptic genre? I was really frightened a moment ago.” A mother who was hugging her child shouted.

Amongst these people, only the youth with dark eye rings stared speechlessly at Zhou Birong’s right arm, he had personally seen Zhou Birong’s right hand transform and this was definitely not a simple prop, could what she was saying be true?

The youth’s mouth was wide open in shock.

Zhou Birong looked at this bunch of people who were still adamantly refusing to believe and could only rescind the strange energy within her right hand, causing it to return to normal as she looked back: “Su Yu, Qin Jiagui, let’s go.”

Su Yu nodded as the group continued walking forwards in the valley.

The youth with the dark eye circles noticed the entire process of transformation and rushed over with his laptop bag shouting: “My name is Liu Zheng, I’m willing to travel with your group. This police officer, can you tell me what’s going on with your right arm?”

At this moment the bald headed bus driver had grabbed his cap and pointed in the other direction of the valley: “Based on my estimations, that should be the correct direction. I remember that White Marsh town lies in that direction, I think we should walk in that direction and we will be able to see the highway.”

The group of people were still rather trusting in the bus driver who was experienced, they took their luggage and moved together with the bus driver in the other direction.

Su Yu looked back, a large majority of the people had believed in the bus driver and followed him and only two people had remained behind.

Of these two people, one of them was the youth with the dark eye circles, he had introduced himself Liu Zheng and based on his words earlier, he should be a avid reader of fantasy(Xuan Huan) novels as well as an amateur writer.

There was another young male, he was slightly older than Su Yu

and the others, he seemed to be around twenty six years of age, he was wearing a pair of thick rimmed spectacles, his attire was black and seemed to be a gentle, quiet and ordinary male.

Zhou Birong looked curiously over at him, she did not expect that someone beside Liu Zheng would actually remain.

“Hey brother, do you really believe what they are saying?” Liu Zheng noticed that someone besides him had remained and could not help but ask in curiosity.

“The male clothed in black shook his head as he said faintly: “Instinct.”

Liu Zheng was stunned as Qin Jiagui looked back: “What’s your name?”

“Xu Ruyun.” The male clothed in black did not seem as though he liked speaking and each word he spoke was extremely simple.

Qin Jiagui nodded: “Follow us, you will swiftly understand that every word we said was true.”

They had walked for a short period of time before frightening screams could be heard from the other side of the valley.

The hearts of the group trembled and Liu Zheng’s face finally changed as he spoke in a soft voice: “Those are their screams, could it really be..... really.....”

Although he had personally seen Zhou Birong's transformation, his heart was still doubtful, hearing the frightening screams of the other group, he felt terror surge in his heart and gradually began to believe that Zhou Birong and others words to be true.

Xu Ruyun's gaze seemed to flash but his face continued to remain calm, he did not show signs of franticness or panic.

“Have those people met monsters? I wonder how many people will be able to live.” Qin Jiagui sighed.

Zhao Shichang continued: “They should have met a monster, if they encountered Lesser Goblins or Gnomes they would still have a shot, if it were any other monster..... Only if there's some miracle.”

The Lesser Goblin was the weakest monster they had met but it was still several times stronger than an ordinary human, as for the Gnome, it was slightly stronger than the Lesser Goblin.

Chapter 124: Sudden Appearance Of The Giant Foot, Everyone Is Like An Ant

Everyone continued moving forward, they had gone forward for a short period of time when loud shouting noises could suddenly be heard from the back, curious, the group stopped to look back and saw the bald headed bus driver, tanned and skinny middle aged man, the youth who was a hooligan and a few others racing towards them in a crazed manner as they shouted: “Wait for us! Wait for us!”

“Eh? They’ve all returned, didn’t they meet a monster?” Zhao Shichang was puzzled, more and more figures appeared and the twenty odd people who had left all returned, of them were several mothers carrying their children, panting as sweat covered their entire bodies.

“I understand now, their shrill cries earlier weren’t due to a monsters attack but rather the floor that was littered with the corpses of monsters or the corpses of that other group of people.” Qin Jiagui was astute and immediately thought of this.

Qin Jiagui’s guess was correct, when this group of people had seen the corpses Chu Xiang and the others, their hearts were shocked and suspected if Qin Jiagui and the others were killers who were trying to escape from the crime scene. However, they swiftly discovered the corpses of monsters which littered the floor, causing several people among them to cry out.

The words of Zhou Birong and the others flashed through the minds of every person, although they could not understand what

was happening, the valley suddenly became extremely sinister, the floor that was littered with the corpses of monsters was the best example, these monster corpses could not simply be explained away as movie props, they were simply terrifying and they had not dared to venture further, rushing in a crazed manner to seek Zhou Birong and the others.

Twenty odd people had expressions of fright as they raced forward, someone even shouted: “What’s going on here, who can explain all this? You guys, quick, talk!”

Su Yu and the others did not bother with their shouts but rather continued to walk deeper into the valley.

This group of people did not get any response from Su Yu’s group, they were filled with trepidation towards them but also needed to depend on them, finally deciding to follow ten odd metres away in order to get a better grasp of the situation. Along the way, the cries of little children could be heard as well.

The walk was peaceful and several minutes later, they finally managed to exit the valley. What appeared before them was a dense copse of ancient trees that stretched to the sky.

The bald headed bus driver together with the others realised that they had finally exited the valley and were all smile, however, upon noticing the endless forest before them, disappointment could be clearly seen in their eyes. Several people even tried to use their handphones to no avail, there was still no signal and even tested messaging but failed to get any results.

Qin Jiagui took out the map and swiftly found the right direction as he pointed: “It should be in this direction, let’s go.”

Liu Zheng who was by the side stretched his neck as he asked curiously: “This big brother, what’s this map about? Is this the map of the forest? If we follow the map can we leave this place?”

Qin Jiagui glanced at him but did not reply as he kept the map, holding onto Yuan Niping’s hand as he continued moving.

Liu Zheng was not disheartened but rather bumbled over to Zhou Birong’s side as he spoke: “Beautiful lady cop, let me help you with the luggage.”

Zhou Birong faintly smiled as she shook her head.

Liu Zheng fell further back to Jade’s side, staring at Lei Rui who was on her back with curiosity written all over his face.

Jade glared at him as she exclaimed: “What are you looking at?!”

Liu Zheng was shocked and his face was filled with indignation as he muttered: “Damn, when the protagonist of a novel enters into a strange new world, they should be able to dominate everything and be extremely boisterous, brothers from everywhere coming up to worship him and various beautiful ladies offering themselves. There are now several beautiful ladies and a bunch of brothers.....” As he spoke of beautiful women, he looked over at

Jade and Zhou Birong and when he spoke of brothers he turned to look at Su Yu, Qin Jiagui, Zhao Shichang and the others.

“The only problem is, it seems these brothers and beautiful ladies don’t give a damn about me.....” Li Zheng was extremely depressed.

Leaving the valley and entering the dense forest, they had merely walked a hundred metres when Qin Jiagui and the others suddenly felt something as they stopped.

“Why aren’t we walking anymore? Have you guys discovered something?” Liu Zheng’s face was excited but he suddenly shut his mouth as he kept quiet.

“Sha Sha” sounds could be heard from all directions, extremely faint at first but the sounds swiftly became louder and closer.

Following the advancement of the sounds, little green monsters with wooden clubs began to appear.

Lesser Goblins, their numbers were rather shocking and in the blink of an eye over a hundred Lesser Goblins had gathered with ten odd Greater Goblins behind them.

Whether it be Liu Zheng or the bald headed driver and the twenty odd people, they were all shivering in fright. They swiftly retreated as they huddled together, the little children began to cry and the faces of the adults were as white as a sheet of paper, they

simply did not dare to believe their eyes.

They were akin to Su Yu and the others when they had first encountered monsters, they simply could not believe their own eyes.

“Goblins? Heavens, the appearance of these monsters are identical to Goblins that are found within games.” Liu Zheng exclaimed in shock.

Qin Jiagui glared at him: “In this world, these monsters are known as Goblins, and not Goblin*.”

T/N*: Not sure about this part, both names in Chinese mean goblin.

Liu Zheng stared blankly.

Su Yu’s left hand went up as he spoke: “Stay here and take care of yourselves, I will handle the ten odd Greater Goblins at the back.” before pouncing forward, heading straight towards the group of Greater Goblins.

Jade, Ning Yan and Yuan Niping stood in the centre of the group while Qin Jiagui, Ma Ziyue, Zhang Zhongmou and the others guarded the exterior. Zhao Shichang’s right hand went forward as an extremely sharp bone blade appeared, a wave of this blade immediately killed two Lesser Goblins.

The ten odd Greater Goblins which were tier one beast soldiers did not require much effort from Su Yu, in a mere twinkling of the eye they were all knocked unconscious. The Greater Goblins were tier one beast soldiers and would be sufficient to allow Jade and a few others to promote to the tier one level, if they were lucky, this would also allow Qin Jiagui to promote to tier two.

When Su Yu had taken care of the Greater Goblins, Zhao Shichang, Zhang Zhongmou, Qin Jiagui and the others charged in.

Zhang Zhongmou was extremely excited as he retrieved his Red Lotus Sword as he shouted and killed his way into the Lesser Goblins.

“Kill, Kill, Kill Kill Kill!!!!!!” Zhang Zhongmou shouted as he chopped wildly with the Red Lotus sword, he did not know any sword arts nor did he know how to pierce, slash or thrust. He could only use the sword like a stick as he smashed haphazardly, however, this Red Lotus Sword was phenomenally sharp, together with his strength which was at tier one, the Lesser Goblins which were the lowest tier of beast soldiers were swiftly decimated.

Sweeping the sword, the two legs of a Lesser Goblin were chopped, Zhang Zhongmou lifted a leg as he kicked it towards Jade: “Big sister Jade, kill it quickly.”

Jade carefully placed Lei Rui down as she lifted a metal spade, this time, she did not hesitate as she smashed down towards the head of the Lesser Goblin.

In order to become stronger and protect Lei Rui, Jade had already steeled her heart.

Qin Jiagui, Zhao Shichang, Ma Ziyue and the others began to spread out, killing these low level Lesser Goblins simply did not yield many benefits for them and a large majority of the heavily injured Lesser Goblins were kicked towards the other group as they commanded: “If you wish to live, kill them.”

Xu Ruyun did not ponder for long as she lifted a stone off the ground and heavily smashed downwards as the skull of the Lesser Goblin was immediately crushed.

Su Yu had made the ten odd Greater Goblins unconscious as he shouted towards Jade, Yuan Niping and the others: “Come over here, kill them and you will definitely be able to promote to tier one.....”

His words had barely been spoken when the sky suddenly turned dark, an object suddenly broke through the clouds as it swiftly descended.

This object that had suddenly broken through the clouds was actually an enormous foot the size of a mountain, no one could react or even cry out, a tremendous explosive noise rang out as the foot stomped down in the area of the people.

Immediately, an area of a hundred Chinese feet worth of trees were flattened, forming a deep hole with the shape of a foot.

The enormous foot which had stomped down swiftly lifted as an explosive noise rang out from a distance, in no time, the explosive noises grew further away as the large foot disappeared into the distant horizon.

Su Yu's head was ringing and could only recover after a moment of shaking his head, his face was filled with terror, all around him were people who were slowly climbing to their feet, their faces also filled with fright. As for the bald headed driver and the twenty odd people, they were continually shrieking and a few people even seemed crazed, their faces had an odd expression and they seemed to have lost their minds.

The scene that had occurred earlier was simply too startling and terrifying, regardless of dark warriors or even tier three expert, in that instant there was simply no way to resist.

Su Yu patted his face as he forced himself to calm down from his shock. Lifting his head to examine the surroundings, all the trees within the vicinity of one hundred chinese feet had all fallen down, the entire area was in a mess and all the Greater Goblins and Lesser Goblins had been stomped to death, it was fortunate that no one had died.

This was akin to a human walking barefooted and inadvertently stomping on some ants, Su Yu and the others were lucky to avoid death.

“It's simply too coincidental, everyone is fine and dandy yet all the monsters have been stomped to death, coincidence or design? The appearance of that enormous foot was simply too sudden.....”

Su Yu wiped the sweat off his face, he could not help but recall the instant which the enormous foot made its appearance, he had just made the ten odd Greater Goblins unconscious and was prepared to allow Jade and the others to kill them to advance to tier one, as for Zhao Shichang and the others, they were merely injuring the Lesser Goblins to aid the ordinary people without strange energy to obtain it, however, the huge foot had suddenly appeared and actually killed all the monsters, could this really be a mere coincidence?

At this moment, Qin Jiagui and the others finally came out from their state of shock as they calmed down, looking at the corpses of the Goblins which had been stomped into meat paste, Qin Jiagui sighed: "It's a pity, otherwise Ni Ping and all of you would have been able to advance to tier one....." having said this, his heart suddenly trembled as he thought of a frightening possibility.

Chapter 125: Purposely Preventing Others From Evolving?

“The sudden appearance of the huge foot couldn’t possibly be to prevent them from promoting.....Can it be further deduced that it was meant to prevent us from helping them? No, no, something so ridiculous can’t possibly be design, it has to be coincidence.”

Qin Jia Gui quickly dismissed this frightening thought as he examined his surroundings. Yuan Niping, Jade, Liu Zheng and the others were extremely pale, they were clearly terrified and Zhao Shichang was currently explaining loudly to the others about the huge foot. This was the third time they had encountered the giant foot and they were comparatively more calm than the others.

“It seems like we have to care about more than monsters within this damned place, we still have to be wary of a huge foot above our heads..... It could possibly stomp down at any time, if we’re unlucky we could end up like the goblins, squashed into meat pulp. We can be considered extremely fortunate this time, nobody got hurt.” Qin Jiagui looked over at Su Yu as he bitterly smiled.

Su Yu lightly sighed as he tousled his hair, his mind was ill at ease, the appearance of the giant foot was too sudden and it had strangely stomped all the monsters to death, as for the others, they were ‘lucky’ to have gotten out uninjured, this was simply too much of a coincidence.

“If we wish to find out if it was merely a coincidence, we only need to try it another time to find out. If it were due to us attempting to help others..... Why didn’t anything happen when I

previously assisted them.....” Su Yu immediately recalled the time when he had helped Jade and the others, he had also made several Lesser Goblins unconscious, allowing Jade and the others to become tier zero dark iron warriors.

“Or could it be that the number of people and monsters this time were too many and the amount of help rendered had surpassed the allowable limit thus attracting the giant foot? Then again, it could also be merely a coincidence.....”

Su Yu tousled his hair as he sunk into contemplation, he came to a decision that if it were merely a coincidence that would be fine, however, if this were not the case, many things could be speculated from this event. Right now he was still clueless about the world they were in.

After everyone calmed down, Qin Jia Gui held a map as he continued moving forward, the trees within an area of a hundred chinese feet were all felled and this made hurrying a difficulty, Zhao Shi Chang was forced to use his bone blade to continually force open a path.

The forest was extremely dangerous, The twenty odd people did not need Su Yu and the others to guide them before picking up the wooden clubs left behind to defend themselves, as for Xu Ru Yun, she actually took two clubs and followed the group.

Along the way the cries of little children could be heard, together with the terrifying forest surrounding them, the emotions of the newly acquainted group of people were extremely vexed.

Amongst these twenty odd people, the abnormally calm Xu Ruyun and Liu Zheng were the only two who managed to kill a Lesser Goblin with the help of Zhao Shichang and the others. After obtaining the strange energy, shock flashed through their eyes as they realised that they had really arrived at a strange place, no longer in their previous familiar world.

Liu Zheng retrieved a pen and a piece of paper as he began to swiftly record while muttering: “Damn, this is simply too inconceivable, I have to record everything down and if we have the chance to return to our world, i would consolidate all the events into a novel. I will definitely become famous!”

As he spoke, his laptop bag was firmly plastered to his body. This bag was his precious treasure, large amounts of recording materials were contained within, he simply could not afford to lose it.

Liu Zheng’s greatest dream in life was to become a renowned novelist, even though he had confirmed that they were in a terrifying new world, his first thoughts were actually how to record all the events, he wanted to return to the original world to consolidate everything to create a phenomenal novel.

Because of this, he was unafraid and actually filled with vigor as his blood roiled, he felt excited, everything before him was simply the most wonderful thing that could ever happen to his life, it was like being in a fantasy type novel.

Xu Ruyun did not mention what he did in the past, however, this male was exceptionally calm, even the bald headed bus driver who had plenty of experiences was panicking, only Xu Ruyun continued to adapt to the world and all the circumstances around him, his expression was calm as he silently followed behind the group.

“Hey, everyone..... Everyone listen to me first..... where exactly are we headed? Why are there only trees everywhere.....” The bald headed bus driver wiped the sweat on his brow as he asked anxiously.

The tanned and skinny middle aged man held his canvas bag firmly, he was initially anxious to rush back to Z City because his wife was waiting in the hospital for an operation, he needed to pay the money and sign the papers but with the events that had just occurred, he was simply overwhelmed and his face was filled with fear, he was currently muttering some words in an unknown dialect as he continued to firmly grasp the canvas bag. This was the money required to save his wife and he simply could not afford to lose it.

Hearing the panicked words of the bus driver, Zhang Zhongmou turned back to reply: “Uncle, don’t be nervous. If our luck is good, we may be able to leave this damned place within six to seven days, isn’t that right Jiagui.”

Qin Jiagui acknowledged with a nod, looking at the group of people who seemed like their souls had left their bodies with expressions of terror and anxiety, he thought for a while before continuing: “Everyone don’t be too afraid, actually we’re the same as all of you, because of various reasons we fell into this forest,

although the forest contains various different monsters, if one kills the monsters they are able to become stronger. We've been in this forest for ten more days longer than you, if you wish to live on, you will have to work hard to kill the monsters, allowing yourselves to become stronger. If everyone does so, in roughly six to seven days, it is very likely that we will be able to leave this place and return to our familiar world. Of course, you will have to ensure that you are able to live through these six to seven days."

Liu Zheng continued closely: "This brother is right, I've already killed a monster and acquired an exceptionally weird energy. Hey, Xu Ruyun, why don't you say something, I seem to remember that you also killed that..... goblin."

"Yup." Xu Ruyun continued to be reticent, his expression extremely calm.

Seeing Xu Ruyun and Liu Zheng affirm the words of the two, hope surged within several of the newcomers, the hooliganistic youth stared at the backs of Qin Jiagui and the others as he muttered: "I see, so that's how they acquired their strength. This is fantastic, if I can acquire strength similar to theirs, this world which doesn't have any rules..... Wouldn't it be extremely fun? Haha..... We can do whatever we want....."

The hooliganistic youth took a deep breath as his senses were filled with a bloody stench.

When everyone finally got past this area which was densely packed with trees, they met another large group of monsters.

Su Yu frowned, such a scene was quite rare, although they often met monsters along the way, they seldom met with such a large amount of monsters. As for today, since joining up with the twenty odd newcomers, they had met over a hundred goblins and there were actually over a hundred gnomes now.

A large majority of the gnomes were carrying metal spades and wooden shields while roughly ten of them had upper bodies of gnomes and lower bodies of wolves.

There was no hesitation as the hundred odd monsters immediately rushed towards them.

Like previously, Su Yu pounced towards the ten odd Gnome Riders, they were tier two beast soldiers and within the group only Zhao Shichang, Ma Ziyue and himself could manage them.

These ten Gnome Riders were spread out and in a one on one situation, the Gnome Riders simply stood no chance against Su Yu.

Su Yu was not only a tier three dark iron warrior, he also had over ten holes within his body which could absorb strange energy, he also had a drop of Golden Blood within him, all this made Su Yu's combat prowess at least double that of an ordinary three tier dark iron warrior.

Su Yu did not kill the Gnome Riders and merely knocked them unconscious, as for Zhao Shichang, Ma Ziyue, Zhang Zhongmou and the others rushed forward to meet the group of Gnomes.

There were simply too many Gnomes, they were more vicious than the Lesser Goblins as they suddenly surrounded the group, several people swiftly became injured.

Qin Jiagui shivered as he heard a miserable cry, a woman was hugging her child and using her body as a shield, her back was smashed by the metal spade causing the head of the woman to fly, painting an extremely gruesome scene.

Qin Jiagui exclaimed in anger but the scene was simply too messy and he did not dare to leave Yuan Niping's side. The Gnomes did not pose a threat to him but they could easily kill Yuan Niping and the others.

Xu Ruyun wielded wooden clubs in his hands as he voluntarily went forward to meet a Gnome, he had previously managed to kill a single Lesser Goblin with the help from the others previously, the energy within his body was not any less than a Gnome, faced with a single Gnome, his actions were extremely fluid as he used a wooden club to block a spade before tossing it away, spinning as he arrived behind the Gnome, retrieving a sharp operating knife from his black clothes as he sliced it across the throat of the Gnome.

Immediately, the Gnome made "gurgh gurgh" noises as blood immediately began to spurt like a fountain as the Gnome struggled to turn and retaliate, by this time Xu Ruyun had already silently retreated several metres and the Gnome whose neck was gushing blood managed to take two steps before falling face first onto the ground.

A black crystal flew through the air before entering Xu Ruyun's chest, Xu Ruyun touched his chest as he felt the strange energy within him grow stronger, thereafter, he picked up the metal spade which belonged to the Gnome before pouncing to another solitary Gnome.

Qin Jia Gui was already at the precipice of breaking through, however, after killing several low grade Gnomes there were still no signs of him promoting. The tier of these Gnomes were simply too low and killing the Gnomes did not require him to use any strange energy, he soon grew bored of killing them and chose to heavily injure them to allow Yuan Niping and the others to finish them off.

Su Yu was like a galloping horse as he rushed into the group of Gnomes, the Gnomes were like eggs in his eyes that could easily be smashed with a simple wave of his hand, the Gnome Riders were swiftly dealt with and all ten of them were sprawled on the ground heavily injured.

“Quickly kill all the Gnomes then come over and finish off the Gnome Riders.” The ten Gnome Riders had lost their ability to retaliate, Su Yu activated the Rending Storm as he pounced into the group of Gnomes, instantly killing three of them while he shouted.

Qin Jiagui and the others had expressions of excitement, ten Gnome Riders would allow everyone to instantly become tier two dark iron warriors.

However, the group had not managed to rush forward to kill the Gnome Riders when a giant foot suddenly broke through the

clouds and stomped heavily downwards.

The previous scene re-enacted itself, when the huge foot finally disappeared, all the Gnomes Riders and Gnomes had been killed while no one in the group had been injured by the giant foot.

Su Yu, Qin Jiagui, Ma Ziyue and the others dazedly climbed back up as they exchanged glances, shock clearly written on their faces.

The first time could be written off as a coincidence but a second occurrence could not be written off.

“The giant foot is preventing everyone from promoting.” Ma Ziyue suddenly spoke up.

Ma Ziyue was able to notice this, Su Yu and Qin Jiagui were naturally able to do so as well. The scene immediately became deathly silent and the previous messy battle suddenly became peaceful and quiet.

“Why is it like that? This is simply too illogical..... That giant foot..... why is it preventing everyone from promoting?” Ma Ziyue shook her head, she could not make heads or tails of matters.

Qin Jiagui then voiced out: “We can now confirm that it wasn’t mere coincidence that led the giant foot to stomp down, there must be a certain reason behind it.”

Ma Ziyue responded: “What is its goal? To prevent us from

promoting?”

Su Yu glanced at the group as he slowly said: “That is one possibility, there is another possibility and that is them.” His eyes looking towards the bus driver, Xu Ruyun and the others twenty odd people.

“Since meeting them, our path has become stranger and stranger, we first began to meet large numbers of monsters before suddenly facing the giant foot. All this seems to indicate that we have done something that we weren’t supposed to do, the giant foot seems to be acting to stop this event from occurring and has thus appeared twice.”

Hearing Su Yu’s words, Qin Jiagui’s expression immediately became solemn and a slight trace of fear could be seen on it.

Ma Ziyue was stunned: “I really can’t understand, could it be..... Everything that has occurred is within the control of somebody or some power? This seems to be the only plausible explanation.”

Su Yu looked over at her before replying: “Ma Ziyue, do you believe that it was mere chance that caused us to fall here?” Ma Ziyue was dazed as she glanced at him, alarm clearly in their eyes.

Qin Jiagui nodded: “When these group of newcomers emerged from the ground, I already had a slight understanding that this was clearly not a natural occurrence, nor is it what was speculated in the science magazines within our world of dimensional tears. We had inadvertently fallen into a tear and arrived within this world,

this is clearly controlled by some power that we simply do not comprehend. This could only mean that everything that has occurred thus far, including the frightening world and forest, must be due to a certain reason.”

Su Yu lifted his head as he muttered: “Do all of you still remember the first time we encountered the giant hand and foot? Also, the golden eagle man that managed to destroy them?”

Qin Jiagui and Ma Ziyue looked over at him simultaneously.

Chapter 126: Violating Procedures?

Su Yu lifted his head, his gaze was fleeting as he continued: “Along the way we’ve met a Golden Goblin and a Golden Gnome King, we’ve acquired the Golden Treasure as well as the Golden Blood, based on the information from the Eye of Perception, it seems that there is a Golden Race within this world, the half man half eagle monster was also golden in colour, do you guys think that it could be part of the Golden Race?”

Qin Jiagui spoke: “Su Yu, what are you suggesting?”

Su Yu continued: “The Golden Race..... Dark iron warriors..... Dark Metal Race, could there be some connection between all this? Or would it be better to say that all the events we have experienced thus far have some sort of unknown connection, QIn Jiagui, hand the map over to me.”

Qin Jiagui retrieved the map before handing it over to Su Yu.

At this moment, Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shi Chang and the others gathered over, curious expressions on their faces. They had encountered two large packs of monsters and faced the stomping of the giant foot twice, anyone with a brain could tell that something was amiss.

Su Yu unfurled the map as he slowly continued: “Since acquiring the map, together with the assumptions of Jennifer, we have headed in the direction indicated on the map thinking that it is the exit of this forest, however..... This map does not clearly indicate

that this is the exit of the forest, all this is merely our conjecture.”

Everyone felt their hearts tremble as Qin Jiagui hurriedly asked: “Su Yu, are you saying that the place indicated on the map may not be the exit of the forest?”

Su Yu affirmed: “Although I don’t really wish for this to be a reality, thinking about it, everything has only been our conjecture thus far, based on the encounters this half day, don’t you guys feel that this forest..... Seems to have somebody or some indescribable power that seems to be influencing everything behind the scenes?”

Thinking back to the appearance of the giant foot as well as the two large packs of monsters, everyone could not help but nod their heads as a feeling of alarm filled their hearts.

Su Yu rolled up the map as he passed it back to Qin Jiagui before muttering: “The place indicated on the map could be the exit of the map..... But it could also be a place that we would never expect, however, this is currently our only hope.”

Ma Zi Ye suddenly spoke up: “Su Yu, I feel that the two incidents earlier could likely have some relation to them.” as she stretched her hand to point at Xu Ruyun, Liu Zheng and the others.

Zhao Shichang questioned: “What do you mean?”

Ma Ziye said in a heavy voice: “Everyone think about it for a

while, if we didn't meet them, what would this group of people encounter?"

Zhang Zhongmou quickly responded: "I know, if they met with such a big group of monsters, they would certainly be killed."

Ma Ziyue continued: "That's right, if Su Yu's conjecture is correct and we assume that there really is somebody or some force which is influencing the scene, then such a big group of people who were supposed to die from facing such a big group of monsters actually survived and a large majority of them actually gained strange energy to become dark iron warriors, from this perspective, aren't we ruining what was supposed to be? Changing whatever was planned in the system."

Ma Ziyue's words made Zhang Zhongmou, Zhao Shichang and the others all nod. Thinking about it, this really seemed to be the case, of course the crux for this conjecture was that there was some power or force that was influencing behind the scenes, it could also be said that there was something that was maintaining the balance and laws within the world, and anything within the world would need to follow this set of rules to proceed.

Qin Jiagui frowned as he spoke up: "Let's look at this from another angle, if they didn't meet with us, they might not have to face so many monsters. Do all of you still remember when we first arrived in this world, there were only ten odd Lesser Goblins which rushed into the school."

Su Yu continued: "Whether this is the case or not, we will soon find out. Based on your conjecture, if we continue to move

together, we will likely meet with a third large pack of monsters. I feel that there is some force or will that seems to want to force this group of people into dire straits.

Qin Jiagui muttered: “Su Yu, if your conjecture is correct, then what is the objective of the person influencing this forest from behind the scenes? Could it be for leisure? Sending us to this place to watch us fight with monsters for fun? No, if there was some power that could really create such a frightening world, to the extent of using Sky Holes to send us here, such methods..... Can really be construed as the work of god or the devil, such an existence, how could it possibly be bored to the point of wanting to watch us duke it out with monsters for fun?”

Su Yu looked at his left hand: “Not for boredom or leisure, Qin Jiagui, haven’t you thought of the possibility that the other party’s goal is actually for us to evolve?”

Qin Jiagui, Ma Ziyue and the others trembled as they looked over at him.

Su Yu gazed into the distance as a solemn expression covered his face: “I can’t be absolutely certain, however..... I have a feeling that killing the monsters and gaining strength, advancing and meeting even stronger monsters to gain even more strength, such a cycle seems to be aiding us in advancing. Allowing us to become stronger, as for those who fail to adapt, they will be removed, killed by the claws of a monster. Although this is unable to explain why the other party wishes for us to advance, if we suppose that this conjecture is true, then it would explain our earlier encounters.”

“Because we violated the rules of advancement, the twenty odd people should have engaged in a brutal slaughter allowing a few people to live and become stronger. Because of our appearance, they did not encounter any danger and could easily become dark iron warriors, as for me knocking the monsters unconscious to allow Jade and the others to advance, this also went against the rules of them struggling to advance, this resulted in the appearance of the giant leg which caused all the monsters to be stomped to death.”

Su Yu’s words were extremely stunning and it was a while before Jade suddenly shouted: “That doesn’t seem right, you actually knocked a couple of Lesser Goblins unconscious earlier to allow us to kill them, why didn’t anything happen then.”

Su Yu said heavily: “I believe that aid rendered from a comrade to another comrade is permissible, but we cannot go past a certain threshold. All this is merely my conjecture.” As he said this, his hands spread out in a helpless manner as a bitter smile appeared on his face.

The group became silent as they felt a sense of helplessness, no one knew the real reason behind the events that had transpired.

Suddenly, Liu Zheng appeared as he spoke up: “Could it be that you guys haven’t considered that this world is simply like a system, everything must be done within the constraints of the system. Currently it seems as though you are cheating in a game, going against the natural laws and thus receiving punishment.”

Zhang Zhongmou glared at him as he blurted out: “Damn, are you saying that we are cheating? In that case you are the first person who gained benefits from our cheating, I should kill you first, maybe that will cause the situation to revert back to normal.”

Liu Zheng was alarmed as he drily laughed: “I was merely joking, just joking. Aren’t I merely dissecting the information for everyone? I’ve read so many fantasy novels and it wasn’t for naught, I overheard all of you mention that you’ve done something similar without receiving any obstructions, this shows that there are still some loopholes which can be used, using methods outside the box isn’t an issue, the important thing is to not be discovered doing so.

Liu Zheng’s words caused Su Yu and the others to come out of their stupor, what this fellow said actually made sense.

Su Yu thought back to the past where he had made ten odd Gnomes unconscious to allow Jade and the others to advance, compared to the events today, they were similar yet the outcomes were completely different. The only conclusion that could be derived was that the scale of the events were far too large, or could it be that Liu Zheng, Xu Ru Yun and the others had just arrived in this world and thus were exceptionally observed by the power? Thus, the power had discovered their attempts to cheat and intervened?

“Thinking of all this now is useless, we are merely conjecturing. We can’t continue to remain here, let’s go. We will eventually make heads or tails of matters.” Qin Jiagui stood up.

Su Yu affirmed: “Let’s continue to walk in the direction indicated on the map, and check out the area indicated on the map, there is at least a 50% chance that it is the exit of the forest.”

The others did not have an opinion, in this world, a large majority of the people were ignorant like the bald bus driver and the others, they could only follow behind Su Yu and the others.

Ma Ziyue walked as she continued: “If Su Yu’s guess is correct and there is some power which is influencing everything behind the scenes, wanting to cause everyone to go through trials and tribulations to advance, we will likely meet with a third large pack of monsters. It will definitely be frightening because the other party will definitely not allow the rest of them to easily become dark iron warriors and advance.....”

Her words had just been spoken when a horde of monsters charged out of a patch of wild grass before them.

Zhang Zhongmou looked over at her as he sighed: “Instant noodles, your mouth is really a jinx.”

“Go to hell.” Ma Ziyue cursed as her expression turned ugly.

This time, a group of zombies appeared with black claws for hands, this was the tier one beast soldier ‘Walking Zombie’.

“Everyone be careful!” Su Yu shouted, they were so serious because the monsters this time were extremely frightening, far

stronger than their imaginations.

A group of roughly fifteen tier one Walking Zombies were surging forward, these fifteen Walking Zombies were not a threat for Su Yu but the frightening part was that there was a group of four tier two Metal Chain Zombies, with the appearance of four Metal Chain Zombies, this meant that there was also a Single Eyed Zombie King.

Chapter 127: Crisis! A Deadly Situation

Single Eyed Zombie King, that was a tier three beast soldier which had the strength to battle with Su Yu, this was the reason that Su Yu took things very seriously.

First a large group of Lesser Goblins then came the Gnomes, and finally this pack of zombies had appeared, was all this really only a coincidence? Or could it be a certain power that was breaking their balance and setting a punishment on them?

A strange feeling welled up in their hearts when Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang suddenly shouted.

Su Yu's expression changed as he turned, footsteps could be heard coming from the left. Thereafter, a group of fifteen Walking Zombies appeared followed by four Metal Chain Zombies and a Single Eyed Zombie King.

This time, even Su Yu took a sharp gasp of air as Qin Jiagui exclaimed: "Everyone be careful, retreat, quick, retreat!"

Two tier three Single Eyed Zombie Kings, eight tier two Metal Chain Zombies, together with thirty tier one Walking Zombies, such a power was simply staggering and would likely result in their deaths.

"Damn, could this be the punishment for attempting to cheat?" Zhang Zhongmou muttered, his face was filled with anxiety as his right hand pressed onto his left, the Red Lotus sword appearing

within it.

“Old Mou, remember the sword skill contained within, don’t waste it, use it at a critical moment. Su Yu reminded. Ma Ziyue was very astute and would not require his reminder, however, Zhang Zhongmou was too brash and Su Yu could not help but give a gentle reminder. His Earth Spikes Assault was currently on cooldown, Zhang Zhongmou and Ma Ziyue each had a sword and blade skill to use, using the Earth Spikes Assault as an estimate, the power from these two skills would definitely be fearsome, they could likely be the key in determining their victory in this battle.

What Su Yu was able to think of, Ma Ziyue was also able to do so. Her eyes were staring at the Single Eyed Zombie King which were behind the pack of zombies, her heart filled with excitement and trepidation.

The Star Blade within her hand was a precious treasure like Su Yu’s Earth Spikes Ring, when comparing strength, the Star Blade would likely not lose out to the Earth Spikes Ring. The power of the Earth Spikes Assault had been witnessed multiple times and if the Starlight contained within the blade had a similar might, together with her tier two strength she could possibly find a chance to deal with a Single Eyed Zombie King.

The Single Eyed Zombie King was a tier three beast soldier, after killing the Single Eyed Zombie King, it was likely that she would promote to a tier three dark iron warrior like Su Yu, by that time, she would really be able to stand by Su Yu’s side to do battle.

With this thought, Ma Ziyue’s heart began to beat faster, although

the scene before her was extremely frightening, it also carried plenty of opportunity.

The two groups of zombies which were in front and to the left of them did not immediately attack but instead approached slowly, the bald headed bus driver and other people had expressions of panic as they retreated, they could see the three metre tall Single Eyed Zombie King and cold sweat covered their bodies, they simply did not have the courage to battle.

“Jade and the rest of you stand in the centre, don’t move about recklessly, each of the monsters there is more powerful than any of you.” At this moment, Su Yu and the others had already placed their bags of food on the ground, swiftly forming a circle around Jade, Ning Yan, Yuan Niping and the others who were not tier one.

As for Xu Ruyun, Liu Zheng and the others, they were not viewed as real comrades and in this moment of danger they did not bother to protect them.

Jade nervously placed Lei Rui atop the bags on the ground as she firmly grasped a metal spade, her hands were wet with cold sweat. She had seen the fearsomeness of a zombie, Ding Shan was killed by a single blow from a Metal Chain Zombie, that scene flashed through her mind as though it had just happened, meeting with these zombies once again, how could she not feel anxious and afraid?

Because the two groups of monsters were moving to pincer them, Su Yu swiftly moved to the left of the circle while Ma Ziye, Zhao Shichang moved to the front. As for Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou,

Zhou Birong, Li Dong and Zhou Huakang, they formed a small circle behind the three as they were merely tier one dark iron warriors.

Li Dong had already summoned a group of poisonous wasps, the poisonous wasps made buzzing noises as they appeared before him.

“The circle formed by the five of us shouldn’t be broken, under no circumstances should we recklessly rush out.” Qin Jiagui exclaimed in reminder to Zhang Zhongmou, Zhou Birong and the others. At this moment, the five of them had formed a circle protecting Yuan Niping, Jade and a few others. As for Su Yu, Ma Ziye and Zhao Shichang, they were situated directly in front of them.

Su Yu had the confidence to block a Single Eyed Zombie King and four Metal Chain Zombies, however, he was anxious for Ma Ziye and Zhao Shichang, how could the two of them possibly deal with the other party of identical monsters?

Su Yu shouted commands to Zhang Zhongmou as he nodded, this battle rested on the laurels of Zhang Zhongmou and Ma Ziye, Su Yu was not the most important factor.

Su Yu and the others were in formation, as for Xu Ruyun, Liu Zheng and the others, they had swiftly retreated, it was weird that the two groups of zombies actually ignored them, merely continuing to move forward at a gradual pace.

Zhou Huakang’s face was contorted in anxiety as he suddenly

spoke in a low voice: “There are simply too many of these zombies, we may not be able to hold out. How about rushing into the group of people over there, we can use them as meat shields and cannon fodder, in this way the chances of us living will be much greater.”

Qin Jiagui angrily glared at him as he exclaimed: “If you wish to live stop talking nonsense, when these zombies start to run they are much faster than all of you, if our group were to split up, besides Su Yu, the rest of us can forget about living.”

Qin Jiagui suddenly exploded in anger, Zhou Huakang was stunned silent and no longer dared to speak up. Qin Jiagui was so incensed because based on the method that Zhou Huakang had suggested, not only would large amounts of people die, people like Yuan Niping who were still at tier zero would have very slim chances of living.

Qin Jiagui’s exclamation had just been said when the two Single Eyed Zombie Kings suddenly shouted towards the skies before kicking with their two feet.

“Kaboom!” Two immense figures flew over ten metres into the sky, seeming like two large meet mountains as they pressed down towards the group.

At the same time, the tens of Walking Zombies and eight Metal Chain Zombies formed two groups as they rushed forward at them.

The battle had swiftly begun.

As for the bald headed bus driver and the group of people who were fervently retreating, cries of terror suddenly rang out.

Behind them, new monsters had emerged. Two groups consisting a total of thirty Lesser Goblins had suddenly appeared, blocking their path and in a single exchange, someone had already died miserably.

Su Yu and the others heard the bloodcurdling shriek but based on their current situation, they could only watch but were helpless to assist.

Su Yu howled as his left arm swept forward, ‘Chi! Chi! Chi!’ sounds were emitted as his entire arm became covered in black scales, this continued up his shoulder and onto his chest, thereafter, he swiftly rushed towards one of the descending Single Eyed Zombie Kings.

Although the Single Eyed Zombie King was exceptionally strong, Su Yu was even stronger and he had already directly collided with it.

The Rending Storm activated as a white pillar of mist was emitted from within the upraised black scales, the Single Eyed Zombie King roared as his hands waved, metal chains covered the sky as they smashed downwards.

“Klang” “Klang”

The metal chains were rent apart one after another by the Rending Storm, the Single Eyed Zombie King fell heavily to the ground as an oppressive explosive noise rang out. At the same time, Su Yu activated the Fang Bullet Burst, four fangs shot forth towards the Metal Chain Zombies, he needed to obstruct the Single Eyed Zombie King and Metal Chain Zombies, he could not allow them to reach Qin Jiagui and the others or they would be wiped in an instant.

On the other side, the other Single Eyed Zombie King had landed as Ma Ziyue and Zhao Shichang courageously rushed forward.

They were both merely tier two dark iron warriors, Ma Ziyue activated the Web of Metal as her right hand pulled the Star Blade from the bracelet of her left hand, a blade light flashed as she chopped it towards the left leg of the Single Eyed Zombie King.

With the sharpness and strength of the Star Blade, it was plausible that it could cut through the defense of the metal chains and sever the left leg of the zombie.

Zhao Shichang acted in the same manner as Ma Ziyue, his right arm was extended as his bone blade swung forward, piercing towards the Single Eyed Zombie King.

Following closely behind the Single Eyed Zombie King, four Metal Chain Zombies also rushed forward, it was impossible for them to kill the Single Eyed Zombie King in a single exchange and if they were surrounded, they would definitely die.

The situation was extremely grim and Su Yu could see everything clearly, his heart was extremely anxious as he suddenly howled explosively, his left arm shot forth large amounts of white mist as the Single Eyed Zombie King in front of him suddenly let out an ear piercing shriek, its chest had exploded as metal chains broke off, metal pieces flew through the air as its immense body began to sway before flying away, the strength behind this blow was simply too terrifying, far exceeding his expectations.

As the group of zombies were slowly inching closer, Su Yu had already used the holes within his body to absorb large amounts of strange energy in the air, causing his body to be filled with a frightening amount of energy. He had then compressed it all into his left hand before finally sending out the fearsome blow as the Single Eyed Zombie King landed on the ground, sending it flying far away.

Back then, at the cave dwelling of York and Jennifer, Su Yu had attempted this move and the pile of boulders had been totally disintegrated, the might of this blow was definitely extraordinary.

However, the Single Eyed Zombie King was still a tier three beast soldier, although this blow was certainly fearsome, the Single Eyed Zombie King did not die. The blow earlier was tremendous and the concussive force had sent it sprawling to the ground, rendering it dizzy for a period of time, causing it to be unable to recover in a short period of time.

Su Yu needed this outcome, with this short period of time, he would then take care of the four Metal Chain Zombies.

Taking a deep breath, Su Yu turned as the Rending Storm was sent forth, white mist filled the air as he pounced towards the nearest Metal Chain Zombie.

At the same time, the two groups of Walking Zombies had rushed forward and were in battle with Qin Jiagui and the others.

Li Dong willed it as the hundred odd poisonous wasps went forward with buzzing noises, these wasps were already split into groups and each group went for the head of a Walking Zombie, wildly stinging as they buzzed around it.

Chapter 128: Promoting And Burning The Zombies

Although the poison from the wasps could not kill, they managed to halt the Walking Zombies in their tracks, causing them to wildly flail their claws in an attempt to fend off the wasps.

Zhou Birong's right hand had transformed into a three hooked claw as she sent it colliding with the claw of a Walking Zombie, both sides groaned as they retreated simultaneously.

Qin Jiagui was at the precipice of the tier one stage, his strength was much greater than a Walking Zombie. At this moment, he howled as he sent the Demolishing Iron Fist flying forward.

The right hook of the Walking Zombie blocked as the hook of its left hand went sweeping forward towards Qin Jiagui's stomach region, however, the hook of its right hand collided with the Demolishing Iron Fist and was immediately sent flying away with a loud explosive noise, causing the Walking Zombie to groan as it retreated backwards. Its left hook had nearly clawed Qin Jiagui but the Demolishing Iron Fist had actually sent it retreating backwards, its entire right arm was numb from the impact.

Qin Jiagui roared as he kicked the ground, the power of his waist was also used as he shot forward like an arrow.

“Bang!”

Qin Jiagui actually left the circle as he collided with the Walking Zombie who had retreated.

“Qin Jiagui, what are you doing?” Li Dong saw this and immediately exclaimed.

He was the person who had instructed them not to break the formation yet he was the first to do so, damn, what was Qin Jiagui thinking? Li Dong and Zhou Huakang were shocked and angry as they looked at the large pack of Walking Zombies which were rushing at them from all directions. Their hearts were beating fast and their expressions were extremely ugly.

Qin Jia Gui had already gathered his strength as he smashed it into the chest of the Walking Zombie, a frightening momentum caused him and the Walking Zombie to tumble away, the Walking Zombie lifted its hook as it clawed into his waist, Qin Jiagui howled in pain as he lifted his right hand, smashing down.

The Demolishing Iron Fist was shot out again, this blow contained all the force within Qin Jiagui's body.

“Kaboom!”

His right hand smashed onto the skull of the Walking Zombie which was pressed below him.

The skull of the Walking Zombie was only slightly tougher than an ordinary human, it simply could not withstand the might of the

Demolishing Iron Fist and was instantly blown apart, brain matter and blood spewing everywhere.

“Aaaahhhh!” Qin Jiagui lifted his head as he roared to the sky, Li Dong who was behind saw this and was speechless. He could see Qin Jiagui’s right arm continue to swell as his clothing ripped apart to expose a completely metallic arm, his shoulder was also expanding and a metal circular drum appeared on his arm.

Tier two dark iron warrior, after killing the Walking Zombie, Qin Jiagui had finally broken through, promoting to the tier two stage. His entire right arm had completely transformed and the strange energy began to gather within his arm, turning to qi as the wounds on his body healed at an astonishing rate visible to the naked eye.

As Zhao Shichang and Ma Ziyue consecutively promoted to tier two, Qin Jiagui’s heart had been ablazed. This time, they were faced with a dangerous situation with thirty tier one Walking Zombies, with the few of them they simply would not be able to defend. Although he had bade Zhou Birong, Li Dong and the others not to move, he had used everything within him to rush forward because he knew that once he killed a Walking Zombie, he would definitely be able to promote to tier two.

For this goal, he had acted crazily without care for his body. Ma Ziyue’s advancement process had let him clearly understand that wishing to easily promote was simply impossible, if one wanted to gain strength, they needed to put their lives on the line. This possibly conformed to the rules of this world, allowing them to struggle between the edges of life and death in order to advance.

This was a rebirth after meeting with the jaws of death.

Qin Jiagui could feel the tremendous changes which were occurring within his right arm, he immediately gained an understanding of his new abilities as he roared to the sky, all the indignation within his heart was finally explosively released.

“Monsters!” Qin Jia Gui did not climb back up but rather howled, his right arm was raised as a circular cylinder protruded from the circular drum on his right hand, following his howl, the circular cylinder shot a metal object in the form of an artillery shell that was roughly half an inch long and roughly as thick as a child’s hand.

This metal object left a trail of faint white mist as it flew forward, instantly flying into the group of Walking Zombies.

“Kaboom!”

A tremendous explosive noise rang out as a fiery light flashed, the might of it was simply astounding, causing even Su Yu, the Single Eyed Zombie King and everything else to be completely distracted as they turned their heads to look. No one understood what had happened or why there was such a loud explosive noise.

Yuan Niping who was protected in the centre could not help but firmly clasp her hands together, her face filled with excitement. Qin Jiagui had courageously rushed forward to kill a Walking Zombie before successfully advancing, a metallic cylindrical object had appeared on his hand which fired something that looked like

an artillery shell, upon contact with the ground, it had caused a loud explosion which immediately blew three Walking Zombies apart, a small crater was left on the ground that was burnt black in colour.

Qin Jiagui saw the prowess of his newfound ability and could not help but feel excited, his abilities were really phenomenal and could be considered the most powerful within their tier, the metallic cylinder that appeared on his left hand was the ability he had gained after advancing to a tier two dark iron warrior: Steel Missile.

This Steel Missile could be shot from within the metallic cylinder on his left shoulder, upon contact with an object it would immediately explode, the longest distance it could reach was twenty five metres and its power was immense, the only drawback was that it had a minute long cooldown.

Advancing to the second tier, not only had he gained the powerful Steel Missile, even the power of his Demolishing Iron Fist had greatly risen, after firing the Steel Missile which had killed three Walking Zombies, three black crystals had immediately flown into his body causing his strange energy to become even more consolidated. He could not help but howl as he leapt forward, punching with the Demolishing Iron Fist.

“Bang!” A Walking Zombie was punctured in the chest.

The Walking Zombie had been knocked flying by the tier two Demolishing Iron Fist, a clear hole could be seen on its chest as it immediately fell to the ground dead. This was already the fifth

Walking Zombie that had been dealt with by him.

As the saying went, good preparation is the key to success, Qin Jiagui had been stuck at the precipice of tier one for a long time before finally breaking through, after killing five consecutive Walking Zombies, his strength was immense and had immediately overtaken Zhao Shichang and Ma Ziye. It seemed as though he was using this chance to tell everyone that he was not any weaker than the others, at the same tier, he was definitely the strongest.

As Qin Jiagui successfully advanced to a tier two dark iron warrior and killed five Walking Zombies, Su Yu was like a galloping horse as he pounced, the frightening Rending Storm had already dealt with three tier two Metal Chain Zombies and he was moving towards the fourth, as for the Single Eyed Zombie King that was blown away, it let out a frightening roar as it finally stood up.

By the side, Ma Ziye and Zhao Shichang were working together, one held a Star Blade while the other wielded his Bone Blade as they chopped towards the legs of the other Single Eyed Zombie King.

If they were able to chop the legs off, the other party would become a tiger without its fangs and claws, however, the Single Eyed Zombie King was only one of the two tier three beast soldiers which they had faced, it could be said that besides the giant hands and feet and the golden eagle monster, this was the strongest monster they had faced. Even the tier three Golden Gnome King was slightly weaker than it.

How could such a powerful monster like the Single Eyed Zombie King be so easily dealt with? Its hands waved as sounds of metal clashing filled the air, suddenly, over ten thick metal chains began to madly thrash towards Ma Ziye and Zhao Shichang, each metal chain was over three metres long, before the two could wield their weapons to chop at it, the metal chains would have already ground the two into meat pulp.

Ma Ziye had a martial arts background and her movements were extremely agile, her body immediately reacted to the situation as she tumbled to the ground, dodging the metal chain while sending the Star Blade forth with a ground sweeping blade, a type of ground trailing blade style, gliding close to the ground as she chopped the legs of a pouncing Walking Zombie off.

The Walking Zombie miserably cried as it fell to the ground, continually flailing yet simply unable to get up.

Zhao Shichang was far removed from the agility of Ma Ziye, he could only wildly swing his bone blade as the metal chains collided with it emitting piercing metallic ringing noises, Zhao Shichang's strength was inferior to the Single Eyed Zombie King and groaned as he wobbled while being pushed back.

Closely behind the Single Eyed Zombie King were four Metal Chain Zombies and ten Walking Zombies which were also rushing forward.

Zhang Zhongmou firmly remembered Su Yu's instructions, his palms were drenched in cold sweat as he firmly grasped the Red Lotus Sword, slowly adjusting himself but not acting, he was

waiting for the most critical moment to act.

If it were not for Su Yu's reminder, Zhang Zhongmou would have already wielded the Red Lotus Sword to rush forward, however, he trusted in Su Yu, since his instructions were clear, there had to be a reason for it and he would do as told. He knew that Su Yu would not harm him and his instructions were naturally with the best interests in mind.

Ma Ziyue tumbled away while Zhao Shichang was knocked aside by the Single Eyed Zombie King, suddenly, the four Metal Chain Zombies behind the Single Eyed Zombie King had arrived before the entire group, the situation seemed extremely grim.

"Alright! The time is now!" Zhang Zhongmou had been waiting for a monster to appear directly before him, he guessed that this would allow his ability to have the most devastating effect as he finally stabbed the Red Lotus Sword within his hands heavily into the ground.

Sword Ability: Blazing Red Lotus

Su Yu had previously experienced the might of the Blazing Red Lotus, he had a rough estimate on the power and result of the move, as such, he had instructed Zhang Zhongmou to only use the ability when the enemy was within five metres of him, at that distance, the power of the Blazing Red Lotus would be the most devastating.

Zhang Zhongmou remembered Su Yu's words and his entire body was tense, cold sweat drenched his body as he waited for the Single

Eyed Zombie King and the four Metal Chain Zombies to come within five metres of him before activating the sword ability.

Zhang Zhongmou was merely at tier one, as per Su Yu's instructions, his aim would be to utilise the ability on the Metal Chain Zombies, activating the sword ability would give him a high probability of killing the Metal Chain Zombie, allowing him to advance to a tier two dark iron warrior. As for the Single Eyed Zombie King, it was simply too powerful, with Zhang Zhongmou's current level, even using the Blazing Red Lotus would likely be insufficient and carry too much risk.

At this moment, Zhang Zhongmou was really lucky, the Single Eyed Zombie King was actually moving in unison with the Metal Chain Zombie as they rushed forward, Zhang Zhongmou immediately activated the sword art.

As the Red Lotus Sword stabbed into the ground before him, a fiery red light floated above the sword as the markings on the sword lit up, it seemed as though red lightning was coursing through the sword as flashes of red light flowed from the body of the sword into the ground. The Single Eyed Zombie King and Metal Chain Zombies suddenly let out terrifying howls, from the centre of where they were in an area of around five to six metres, a blazing fiery red conflagration suddenly shrouded the region.

The frightening fiery red blaze lit up the sky as an area of five to six metres formed an enormous blazing lotus flower, swallowing the Single Eyed Zombie King and two Metal Chain Zombies within.

“Roar!” The Single Eyed Zombie King roared as the two Metal

Chain Zombies miserably cried.

Ma Ziyue who had tumbled to the ground was climbing back up when the floor suddenly exploded with the fire, the Single Eyed Zombie King struggled as it suddenly strode forward, its body ablaze as it rushed towards Zhang Zhongmou.

Zhang Zhongmou had merely stabbed the sword into the ground before lifting his head, the blazing Single Eyed Zombie King was already moving towards him as it roared, causing him to be in a daze.

In this moment, regret filled his heart, he understood that a person should not be too greedy, he should have remembered Su Yu's warning that under no circumstances should he use the sword ability on the Single Eyed Zombie King.

Although Su Yu was unable to know the actual strength of the Blazing Red Lotus, he could guess that it would not be much stronger than the Earth Spikes Assault, together with the fact that Zhang Zhongmou was merely at tier one, even if he used the sword ability on the Single Eyed Zombie King, he would definitely be unable to kill it within a short amount of time, within this timeframe, the Single Eyed Zombie King would definitely be able to kill ten Zhang Zhongmous.

Zhang Zhongmou lifted his head as he felt a blazing heat draw closer, despair filled his heart as he yelled, wanting to retreat but there was simply no time.

“Bang!”

In an instant, he was sent flying by the burning Single Eyed Zombie King, at the same time, the clear cry of a female could be heard like a flash of lightning in the night sky.

Ma Ziyue had just climbed up as she noticed Zhang Zhongmou’s precarious situation, her heart trembled as she immediately kicked with her two feet, yelling as she pounced high into the air like a bolt of lightning, her hands firmly grasping the Star Blade as she stabbed into the body of the Single Eyed Zombie King.

The Single Eyed Zombie King let out a miserable shriek while Ma Ziyue kicked, using the rebound to distance herself away from the monster. The Single Eyed Zombie King was a tier three monster and it was difficult to predict how frightening its retaliation would be.

As the Star Blade penetrated the body of the Single Eyed Zombie King, the blade ability Starlight also activated.

Su Yu’s Earth Spikes Assault and Zhang Zhongmou’s Blazing Red Lotus were long range attacks while the Starlight was a close range attack that needed to hit the enemy before activating.

Chapter 129: Ma Ziyue's Third Tier Transformation

As the Starlight activated, the Single Eyed Zombie King could no longer be bothered with Zhang Zhongmou as it roared to the sky, a blinding starry light could be seen flashing from the Star Blade, if someone were to see the insides of the Single Eyed Zombie King, they would be shocked to find that the stars shrouding the Star Blade actually seemed alive as they gave off an eye-piercing light, slicing through the Single Eyed Zombie King's bones, flesh and skin.

“Roar!!!” The Single Eyed Zombie King howled as endless amounts of lights seemed to shoot out from his body, its entire body seemed to suddenly break apart like fragments of ice, disintegrating to the ground.

Frightening, the blade technique ‘Starlight’ was simply too frightening such that even Ma Ziyue who had leapt away was staring wide eyed and speechless in amazement.

Although she had already comprehended the Starlight, she did not want to misuse, it could only be used once a day and the chance could not be easily wasted.

This was the first time which she had witnessed the might of the Starlight, even the powerful Single Eyed Zombie King had been rent into fragments, a crystal swiftly flew through the air as it entered the right leg of Ma Ziyue, swiftly after, she could feel phenomenal changes occurring within her right leg.

The powerful Single Eyed Zombie King was a tier three beast soldier, after absorbing the black crystal, Ma Ziyue could immediately feel the strange energy within her right leg swell to explosively new heights, she did not need to consciously do anything as it rushed towards the 'door' of her right leg, immediately pushing through.

The surging and swelling strange energy that was in the form of qi was like a raging river as it swiftly moved through her entire body, the floating pieces of metal rope swiftly extended up her right leg, moving to her torso as it was completely entwined by the metal rope.

The surging strange energy rushed in all directions before finally being stopped by four new 'doors' that had emerged at the neck, two shoulders and left leg. The strange energy then gradually calmed down as these four 'doors' were like boulders that stopped the entry of the strange energy in the form of qi from entering the other parts of the body.

Tier three dark iron warrior, the next after Su Yu. Ma Ziyue had relied on the prowess of the Star Blade together with guts and luck to finally kill the Single Eyed Zombie King, allowing her to advance and become the second tier three dark iron warrior of the group. Thereafter, a stream of information filled her mind as it prompted her to make the choice with regards to her advancement ability.

After advancing to a tier three dark iron warrior, one would have the chance to choose a new ability. Ma Ziyue's original abilities were

the Web of Metal and the Steel Spear, if she were to choose to comprehend a new ability, she would be able to obtain the ability: Steel Combat Suit.

The Steel Combat Suit was a defensive ability which could envelop the body in steel chains, creating an extremely sturdy protective combat armour. At the same time, she had two other choices which were to upgrade her existing abilities to higher tiers.

The Web of Metal could be advanced into the more effective and powerful Heaven's Net, as for the Steel Spear, it could be advanced into the Envenomed Steel Spear which gave one's attacks numbing properties.

All this happened in the blink of an eye and Ma Ziyue did not have the time to think through her options as the three Metal Chain Zombies rushed toward her, forcing her to stomp as she activated the Web of Metal before stooping down to roll with the Star Blade already firmly grasped in her hand. Her right arm chopped down as the Star Blade arced through the air, chopping a Walking Zombie cleanly in two.

Zhang Zhongmou had activated the Blazing Red Lotus, burning the Single Eyed Zombie King and two Metal Chain Zombies along with it, the Single Eyed Zombie King was simply too powerful as it sent Zhang Zhongmou flying while being burnt by the fire.

It was fortunate that Ma Ziyue had then attacked to stab the Single Eyed Zombie King causing his force to be dissipated, otherwise, the outcome would have been disastrous.

Even so, Zhang Zhongmou was sprawled on the ground groaning as he spat a mouthful of blood.

A Walking Zombie took the chance to pounce but Zhou Birong was already wielding her hooked claws to block as she shouted: "Quick, retreat!" There were several Walking Zombies piling forward and she would not be able to hold on for long.

Zhao Shichang had noticed the advancement of Qin Jiagui to tier two before he shot a missile from his shoulder which immediately killed three Walking Zombies, he was extremely envious, even though he was also a tier two dark iron warrior, his ability only allowed him to freely extend and contract a bone blade, there were no special abilities or powers, making Zhao Shichang feel rather dismayed.

Although he was also tier two, he was several times weaker than the other party.

Besides the Single Eyed Zombie King, the other two Metal Chain Zombies which had been shrouded by the Blazing Red Lotus were not as strong, their bodies were scorched as they continued to miserably shriek as they wildly flailed, struggling for barely ten seconds before falling to the ground, their bodies shrinking as a burnt smell filled the air.

The power of the Blazing Red Lotus could not be underestimated, although it was unable to kill the Single Eyed Zombie King, it was more than sufficient to kill two tier two Metal Chain Zombies

which struggled for barely ten seconds before being burnt to death.

Zhang Zhongmou who had spat blood, struggled to get up as two crystals suddenly flew into his head, thereafter, he felt a surge of powerful strange energy within his head.

“Aaaaahhh!” Zhang Zhongmou could not help but yell, more and more of his face was turning into stone as the strange energy continued to surge, gradually congealing as it formed qi.

He had finally broken through, after burning two Metal Chain Zombies to death, he had promoted to become a tier two dark iron warrior.

“Haha!!!” Zhang Zhongmou could not help but wildly laughed, all the injuries on his body were recuperating at a high speed, his head had completely turned to stone, between his eyebrows there was a circular object which suddenly opened, it was a stone eyeball.

“Eye of Petrification”, this was the new ability of Zhang Zhongmou.

Zhang Zhongmou was incomparably excited as he turned to look at a Walking Zombie which was moving towards Zhou Birong in a pincer attack, the Eye of Petrification between his brows shot out a pillar of light which immediately collided into the chest of the Walking Zombie.

In no time, “Gegege” noises could be heard from the Walking

Zombies body and metal chains, from the point where the light touched, everything began to turn to stone. In barely two seconds, the entire body of the Walking Zombie had turned to stone, like a statue as it stood rigidly there.

Zhang Zhongmou ran forward with the Red Lotus Sword as he lightly waved it, the stone statue immediately disintegrated into multiple small stone pieces.

The Eye of Petrification could send a Light of Petrification out from the third stone eye between his brows, those that were hit by the light would turn to stone, the effectiveness would last for roughly two seconds, if the opponent was weak, the petrified area would be larger while if the opponent was strong, the petrified area would be smaller.

Also, the Eye of Petrification had a cooldown, it could not be endlessly used to shoot out the Light of Petrification.

Ma Ziyue and Zhang Zhongmou had utilised the frightening abilities within their precious treasures to kill a Single Eyed Zombie King as well as two Metal Chain Zombies, allowing them to advance successfully. On the other side, Su Yu had successfully killed the fourth Metal Chain Zombie as he turned to deal with the solitary Single Eyed Zombie King that was climbing back up.

If the current Su Yu was to battle with a Single Eyed Zombie King one on one, there was simply no doubt what would happen. Su Yu had previously dealt with a Single Eyed Zombie King when he had first promoted to a tier three expert, how could the same monster be a problem for the current Su Yu?

The Rending Storm activated as his black scales raised, Su Yu did not make any superfluous movements as he directly rushed forward.

The immense Single Eyed Zombie King did not have many techniques or movements, it merely lifted its two hands as it wielded large amounts of thick metal chains to smash towards Su Yu.

Su Yu's left arm lifted as explosive "Zi Zi Bang" sounds rang out, metal chain after metal chain were struck by the Rending Storm, it seemed as though they were being put through a grinder, instantly being rent apart. Su Yu's legs kicked as he charged, his left arm breaking through the metal chains which were flying towards him as he heavily struck the lower abdomen of the Single Eyed Zombie King.

The Single Eyed Zombie King was tall and Su Yu did not jump, hence his arm could only barely reach the lower abdomen area.

"Ha!" Su Yu roared as he kicked, the Rending Storm minced its way into the lower abdomen of the Single Eyed Zombie King, the frightening strength pushed at the immense body of the Single Eyed Zombie King causing it to continually move backwards.

The immense Single Eyed Zombie King was a powerful tier three beast soldier, however, before Su Yu, it seemed merely like a paper mache without any ability to resist as it was forced back by Su Yu.

All the energy contained within the Rending Storm was unleashed as the Single Eyed Zombie King's immense body was severed in two, its lower body falling backwards while its upper body fell forwards with its face towards the ground.

Su Yu halted as the rotation of his left arm stopped, meshed meat and blood could be seen covering his upraised black scales, the black scales gradually came back together as though they had a will of their own.

Fresh blood drenched his black scale covered left arm as it slowly dripped to the ground.

At this moment, two tier three Single Eyed Zombie Kings had died, the Walking Zombies had almost been cleared by Qin Jiagui before he finally lifted a severely injured Walking Zombie and placed it before Yuan Niping: "Ni Ping, kill it."

Yuan Niping lightly frowned but did not say anything as she lifted a metal spade, gritting her teeth as she smashed towards the Walking Zombie.

On the other side, Zhang Zhongmou had activated the Blazing Red Lotus, burning two Metal Chain Zombies to death. There were still two Metal Chain Zombies which had escaped unscathed as they pounced from the left and right, Ma Ziyue stomped the ground, she had finally made a decision to give up on increasing her offensive and defensive capabilities but rather chose promote the Web of Metal to the even more powerful Heaven's Net.

Chapter 130: Moldable Talent

As she made this decision, the strange energy within her body surged as comprehension filled her mind allowing her to understand how to use the strange energy to allow the Web of Metal to become Heaven's Net.

Heaven's Net, the upgraded form of Web of Metal, the area of effect was fifteen metres, together with the strengthening of her strange energy, the area of effect would also continually increase. Also, the greatest difference with the Heaven's Net was that it did not only constrict the legs of the enemy, rather, it was able to continue moving up the body before totally binding the other party's body, if the other party was really weak, it could even cause the other party to die from suffocation. Once her strange energy reached a sufficiently high level, she could even use it to instantly crush an opponent's body.

At this moment, Ma Ziyue had already noticed the Metal Chain Zombies and decided to test the Heaven's Net, streaks of metal rope began to extend from her legs as they wildly formed a web, within the blink of an eye, two Metal Chain Zombies and three Walking Zombies were ensnared by the Heaven's Net, the streaks of metal rope began to climb up their bodies before swiftly constricting their entire bodies.

Ma Ziyue's first try of the skill was very obvious, although she was not familiar with the skill yet, it had ensnared two Metal Chain Zombies and three Walking Zombies within seconds.

Wielding the Star Blade, Ma Ziyue rushed forward, sweeping it

forth as a Metal Chain Zombie groaned, thick blood spurted from the neck as its head tumbled away, sliced off by the incomparably sharp Star Blade.

The Heaven's Net swiftly lost its efficacy as the other Metal Chain Zombie regained its freedom, however, it was hit by Zhang Zhongmou's Petrifying Light causing both its legs to turn to stone.

The Metal Chain Zombie was at the same tier as him, the light was unable to completely petrify it but had managed to petrify its legs, causing the Metal Chain Zombie to be rooted to the ground.

The Red Lotus Sword thrust forward, although the legs of the Metal Chain Zombie were petrified, its hands could still move as it hurriedly wielded its metal chains in an attempt to block the Red Lotus Sword.

Zhang Zhongmou exclaimed as his arms exerted, the Red Lotus Sword moved forward, slicing through the metal chains as another light flashed from the side, the Star Blade went forward as the two arms of the Metal Chain Zombie which were raised in the air got chopped off.

The Metal Chain Zombie miserably cried, Ma Ziyue had arrived but did not immediately kill the Metal Chain Zombie as she advised Zhang Zhongmou: "Next time, remember to petrify its arms first." before rushing over to another Walking Zombie.

Zhang Zhongmou laughed: "Instant Noodles is really so cool!" The Red Lotus Sword swept forward, killing the Metal Chain

Zombie allowing his strange energy to grow even stronger.

Su Yu carried a severely injured Walking Zombie and an unconscious Metal Chain Zombie as he tossed it before Jade.

When fighting the four Metal Chain Zombies, he had killed three while leaving one behind. This was done for Jade, he wanted to allow Jade to promote directly to a tier two dark iron warrior.

He did not dare to leave all four of the Metal Chain Zombies for fear of the giant foot, for now he wants to help Jade to advance.

Jade wanted to become stronger, she wanted to protect Lei Rui who could no longer protect herself, looking at the zombies on the ground, she did not hesitate as she immediately lifted a metal spade to kill the Walking Zombie.

Indeed, after killing the Walking Zombie, Jade suddenly shouted as she successfully promoted to become a tier one dark iron warrior, her strange energy was also located in her left hand like Su Yu, when she clenched her fist, strange streaks of white markings appeared on her skin, this change was clearly different from everyone else.

Su Yu saw this as he questioned: “What’s the matter? Quickly kill the Metal Chain Zombie before testing.” The Metal Chain Zombie was a tier two beast soldier, after killing it Jade would likely advance to a tier two dark iron warrior.

Jade lifted the metal spade, swiftly killing the Metal Chain Zombie which was unconscious, a black crystal swiftly flew into her left hand.

“How’s it now?” Su Yu hurriedly asked as he activated the Eye of Perception.

Jade firmly clasped her left hand as she replied: “There’s a very powerful strange energy..... but.....”

Su Yu’s Eye of Perception could clearly see that Jade was still a tier one dark iron warrior, killing the tier two Metal Chain Zombie had failed to allow her to promote.

“Why is it like this?” Su Yu was stunned as he lifted his head, at this moment, the combat all around had already gradually died down.

“Could it be that if one wanted to advance to tier two, they needed to personally engage in combat?” Su Yu frowned, this was troublesome, not every girl was like Ma Ziyue with combat prowess and being battle savvy.

“What abilities have you comprehended?” Although Jade had failed to advance to tier two, she had still advanced to tier one and should have gained some special ability, abilities could be strong or weak and were very important.

Jade clenched her left fist as the markings on the back of her

hand flashed: “Runewords, by drawing the runic words one can activate an attack.” as she said this, her left hand was in the air as she began to draw.

It was clear that she was not very familiar, drawing while she pondered. This process took over ten seconds before she suddenly shouted: “Strike!”, the markings on the back of her hand began to glow as a white shockwave suddenly shot out.

“Bang!”

A piercing white light shot the ground as the ground seemed to have been struck by thousands of hooks, a crater was formed showing how terrifying the shockwave was.

Su Yu could not help but tousle his hair: “For a tier one ability, your runewords is really quite powerful..... however, you require over ten seconds to activate it, in a real threatening situation, you won’t have the chance to utilise it.”

Jade replied: “I’m just not used to it, it will definitely be more effective once i’m used to it.” as she said this, she also began to practice.

Su Yu affirmed with a grunt, however, his mind was thinking of the complexity of the drawing. Based on that complexity, even if she was extremely familiar, she would still require four to five seconds to draw the symbol, in a one on one combat against a monster, that was extremely dangerous.

Beside Jade, Yuan Niping had also advanced to a tier one dark

iron warrior with Qin Jiagui's help. Although this battle had been extremely perilous, the gains were also bountiful. Ma Ziyue had promoted to a tier three expert, Qin Jiagui and Zhang Zhongmou had advanced to tier two while Jade and Yuan Niping had both advanced to tier one, the power of the group as a whole had risen by miles.

At this moment, two groups of zombies had been taken care of, the battle at the back had also ended, thirty Lesser Goblins together with the Greater Goblin had been killed, however, Xu Ruyun and Liu Zheng's group had many injuries and casualties. The floor was littered with dismembered corpses, twenty odd people had experienced their first baptism of monsters and the ones that managed to live were less than ten people.

When Su Yu looked over to them, the people remaining were Xu Ruyun, Liu Zheng, the bald headed bus driver, the tanned middle-aged uncle, the hooliganistic youth and his partner, a female whose head was chock full of yellow hair and ears were filled with piercings. There was also a young lad that was about 175cm tall with a tough and stocky build, these were the seven people who survived.

As for the others, they had all died miserably, this was a cruel reality. The weaker women and children had all died and of the seven that lived, only one was a female.

At this moment, besides Xu Ruyun, the other six had dazed looks on their faces as they stared at the ground which was littered with corpses before looking at the blood that covered their bodies, too stunned to recover in a short period of time.

Su Yu sighed as he looked towards Xu Ruyun who seemed unnaturally calm and composed, he wore a black windbreaker and spectacles that were made of thick wooden frames. A seemingly clean and cultured gentleman had actually promoted to a tier one dark iron warrior.

Su Yu recalled that there was a Greater Goblin amongst the group of monsters earlier, it was clear that Xu Ruyun had killed it, otherwise, he would not have so easily reached the tier one stage.

Su Yu's vision fell on the Greater Goblin beside him, the wrists, neck and several other vital parts had been sliced, large amounts of green juice had flown out from these wounds, even a monster would gradually grow weaker before finally dying. The wound that killed the Greater Goblin should have been the wound on its throat, looking at the wounds on the Greater Goblins body, Xu Ruyun should have a sharp small blade on him.

Su Yu carefully looked and noticed that a majority of the corpses had their throats slit, they should have been killed by Xu Ruyun.

“This fellow is a talent who can be molded.....” Suddenly, Qin Jiagui softly whispered beside him.

Su Yu affirmed as he nodded his head, this Xu Ruyun was certainly quite outstanding.

This Xu Ruyun was extraordinarily calm and based on his performance, he was definitely not an ordinary person in the real

world. It was a mystery why he was on this tourist bus which had fallen into a Sky Hole resulting in it entering this unknown world.

Zhang Zhongmou had walked to Su Yu's side as he suddenly punched his back with excitement written on his face: "I'm also a tier two dark iron warrior! This precious treasure is simply too wonderful, now that my strange energy has become stronger, if we meet a Single Eyed Zombie King in future, haha! I will use the Blazing Red Lotus to burn that fellow, then..... I will also become tier three! Haha, this is the first time that I've found this world interesting, with this sword, advancing has become so simple."

Su Yu glanced over at Zhang Zhongmou and could not help but say: "Be careful of being overconfident, don't forget what happened to the previous owner of the Red Lotus Sword, the Single Eyed Zombie King is different from a Metal Chain Zombie, I'm afraid the Blazing Red Lotus may be insufficient to burn it to death. You're taking things too simply, in this forest, you have to be careful at all times. Remember my words."

Chapter 131: A Loose Tongue Causes Problems

Su Yu saw the excitement within Zhang Zhongmou but felt more worried instead, within this forest, any form of carelessness could cause one to lose their life.

Qin Jiagui looked over at Ma Ziyue who was walking over as he spoke: “Congratulations on promoting to tier three.”

Ma Ziyue had a faint smile on her face as she nodded to him before looking over to Su Yu: “Thanks.”

Su Yu shook his head: “What are you thanking me for? This was earned by your own abilities, your current strength isn’t any weaker than me, with more strength comes more responsibility.”

Zhang Zhongmou laughed: “Who knew that Su Yu also knew how to tease.”

Ma Ziyue glared at Su Yu: “You’re making fun of me.”

Su Yu laughed: “I really mean it, the power of the Starlight is really phenomenal, together with your promoted Web of Metal, I really don’t have the confidence to beat you.”

Ma Ziyue laughed: “It’s now called Heaven’s Net.”

Thinking of the Heaven's Net combined with Ma Ziyue's blade arts as well as the prowess of the Star Blade, Su Yu saying that he did not have confidence to beat Ma Ziyue was not merely being humble.

Zhang Zhongmou lit a cigarette as he passed one to both Su Yu and Qin Jiagui before tossing one to Zhao Shichang. Then, he looked towards Qin Jiagui: "Senior brother Qin, you're really impressive, merely tier two yet so powerful, I think that your potential is the greatest amongst us."

Although Qin Jiagui did not look fondly on Zhang Zhongmou, however, these words were extremely comforting and made their way to his heart. He still needed to act humble as he shook his head: "There's still Su Yu and Ma Ziyue, how can my little strength be considered much."

Zhao Shichang said enviously: "You're only tier two yet you have such powerful abilities, I'm feeling very disappointed, why do I only have a Bone Blade? I actually don't have any other offensive methods."

Ma Ziyue then spoke: "Good preparation is the key to success, who knows, when you become tier three you may gain a frightening power that exceeds your imagination, don't lose confidence."

Zhao Shichang replied: "Lose my confidence? How could that be, haha. Each of our abilities have their own strengths and weaknesses." He was still filled with confidence towards the changes of his strange energy.

While speaking he continued to slowly move to the other side, looking at the ground which was littered with corpses, the group became silent. This road was simply filled with too much death and bodies, the group had grown numb.

Zhang Zhongmou lifted a fist as he lightly punched Liu Zheng while laughing: “Fellows, you’ve passed the test, now everyone can be partners.”

Liu Zheng was swayed by his light punch, causing him to almost fall. His face was unhappy as he massaged the area which was hit: “Brother, can you please be lighter with your punches.”

Xu Ruyun calmly glanced over before pursing his lips, he continued to remain silent.

“I am Zhang Zhongmou, this is Su Yu, that’s Qin Jiagui, this is Instant Noodles..... eh, no, I mean that’s Ma Ziyue, this is Jade, that’s Zhao Shichang.....” Zhang Zhongmou swiftly introduced everyone, only Lei Rui who was unconscious and Ning Yan who was by the side were not introduced.

“Being able to live speaks of your capabilities, you are talents that can be molded. Everyone introduce yourself, in future we will be companions. Of course, if you are unwilling to follow us, you are free to proceed on your own.” Zhang Zhongmou had the air of a senior, they had already been in this forest for over ten days, this bunch of people who had just arrived seemed like a bunch of fresh chicks.

Zhang Zhongmou felt like an instructor before these people, looking at the seven of them, this feeling was simply invigorating.

Ma Ziyue stood beside Su Yu as she harrumphed: “Big cigarette addict, stop faking it, you’re making them think you’re the leader of our group.”

Su Yu did not expect her to crudely say ‘fake it’ as he could not help but stare blankly before bursting into laughter.

Hearing a young lady say ‘fake it*’ was certainly quite interesting.

[T/N* Author uses a chinese colloquial term which means to pretend to be someone of status but in a derogatory manner.]

Beside Xu Ruyun and Liu Zheng, the others began to introduce themselves, in such a strange place, their hearts were filled with anxiety and although Zhang Zhongmou came off as demanding, no one was turned off and actually felt that this was perfectly normal.

After introducing themselves, the group finally found out that the bus driver was called Shi Guozhong, the middle aged uncle who constantly held onto his suitcase was called Huo Shan.

The youth who looked like a hooligan introduced himself: “People in the trade call me brother Xiang, everyone can just call me brother Xiang.....”

His words had barely been said when he suddenly noticed Zhang

Zhongmou and Zhao Shichang looking over at him with ugly expressions.

“Brother Xiang? Hahaha.....” Zhou Huakang suddenly strode forward as he stared at him: “I wonder where brother Xiang mixes in? You actually want us to call you brother Xiang.....”

This hooliganistic youth was a hoodlum, his character was very coarse and although he was able to see that Zhou Huakang had ill intentions, he continued to stand his ground: “This is how the brothers of the past referred to me.....”

“Pa!”

Zhou Huakang suddenly threw a slap as the hooliganistic youth tumbled backwards, nearly falling to the ground.

“Xiang your mother, having come here you still have the cheek to act cool? God damn, still claim to be loved by the brothers of the trade? This fellow doesn’t look good on hooligans like you, if you wish to die earlier go ahead, don’t be so shameless.”

Zhou Huakang suddenly seemed infuriated as he began to curse.

Zhang Zhongmou whispered softly to Su Yu: “It seems that Zhou Huakang must have been bullied by hooligans in the past, otherwise, it seems unlikely that he would act like this.”

Su Yu laughed, Zhang Zhongmou’s deduction did seem to have

some truth to it.

“I’ll f*** your mother!” This hooligan was not a virtuous person, in his anger his eyes immediately turned red as his fists punched towards Zhou Huakang, when it came to fighting, the hooligan did have some experience.

Li Dong immediately stepped forward, his relationship with Zhou Huakang was decent and would certainly not let Zhou Huakang be disadvantaged.

It was clear that he was overly cautious, how could the hooligan possibly be a threat to Zhou Huakang who was already tier one, even if he knew how to fight, he had merely killed a single Lesser Goblin, the speed of his fists and legs were merely a joke in front of Zhou Huakang who simply lifted a leg and heavily kicked the chest of the hooligan.

The hooligan groaned as he miserably fell away.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

Zhou Huakang followed the hooligan as he continued to kick him.

“F***, aren’t you all capable? Aren’t you ‘brother Xiang’? Stand up, leaving a scum like you would be a detriment to all of us, it’s better if you die early!” Zhou Huakang continued to curse.

Li Dong was extremely direct: “Just kill him to prevent any future problems.” Zhou Huakang had already given the hooligan a vicious beating, if he gave him the chance in future, he would definitely seek revenge.

Xu Ruyun, Liu Zheng, Huo Shan and the others had arrived here together with this hooligan, although no one really liked him, when they saw how Li Dong and Zhou Huakang prepared to kill the youth, a feeling of unhappiness welled up within them, when the rabbit dies, the fox grieves.*

[T/N* Sympathy for a person who is in similar straits in distress]

The truth was, the hooligan had merely said some words, how could this warrant him being killed?

Qin Jiagui could feel the atmosphere and became grim.

“No, don’t kill him.....” At this moment, the blonde haired female who was with the hooligan hurriedly ran forward.

Qin Jiagui immediately walked forward as he said in a heavy voice: “Zhou Huakang, that’s enough. He hasn’t done anything bad, stop right now.”

Zhou Huakang kicked the hooligan one more time before speaking: “You better remember, don’t create trouble in future otherwise I will kill you. Damn, your f***ing parents nurtured you but rather than living well to repay them, you actually join the

gangs? Do you really think you can make a name for yourself? Who cares how they addressed you in the past, you better be well behaved or this fellow will deal with you.”

The hooligan was infuriated but he used his hands to cover his face, hiding it in fear of Zhou Huakang noticing.

The blond haired female ran to his side, her face filled with worry.

Li Dong looked unhappily at Qin Jiagui, he could tell that the hooligan was a threat and keeping him would be problematic.

Qin Jiagui was naturally able to read the mood of Li Dong but could not help but shake his head, this fellow was simply too brash, killing the hooligan in such a scene would definitely cause the hearts of Xu Ruyun, Liu Zheng and the other newcomers to grow cold. They had plenty of time in the future to deal with this problem, the hooligan had merely killed a single Lesser Goblin, his chance of dying was rather high, since that was the case, there was simply no need to kill him with their own hands, that would create disgust in the heart of others.

Of course, his thoughts were not spoken out loud.

Although they could choose to ignore the newcomers or even viciously kill them all, Qin Jiagui still hoped for a few of the new people to join the group, they had enough food to support more people and having more people meant the chances of living were even higher. Because of this, he had acted to prevent Zhou

Huakang from killing the hooligan.

Zhang Zhongmou smiled as he spoke up at this moment: “We’ve interacted for half a day but still haven’t gotten your names, could it be that we really have to address him as brother Xiang in future?”

Earlier, it had been this addressing of ‘brother Xiang’ that had caused so much distress, the blond haired female hastily replied: “He is called Wang Xiang, my name is Mao Mingzhu.” Her character was also rather barbaric but she had been frightened earlier, Zhou Huakang was simply too ferocious, even the ‘brother Xiang’ whom she admired had been beaten miserably, she simply did not have the guts to fight back.

Finally, a simple and honest fat fellow spoke up: “I’m called Xie Zhiming, I work as a programmer, my family consists of my dad, mom, grandpa and grandma. My grandpa and grandma were born on the same day and are already eighty this year. I was rushing home to celebrate their eightieth birthday but..... Who knew that we would end up in such straits.” A sad expression could be seen on the fatty Xie Zhiming’s face.

Qin Jiagui looked over at him: “Take it easy, we will definitely all go back, you will definitely be able to take part in their birthday.”

Xie Zhiming’s simple and honest face had a bitter smile on it as he muttered: “Hopefully.”

Unknowingly, it was already noon and the group found a clean

area to have lunch, there was sufficient food and the newcomers were also given some food to eat. As for Wang Xiang, he continued to stare at Zhou Huakang and Li Dong throughout his meal, viciousness flashing through them before swiftly disappearing for fear of them noticing.

He had been beaten swollen by Zhou Huakang, although there were no life threatening injuries, Wang Xiang was deeply insulted by the actions of Zhou Huakang, the pain he felt was simply nothing in comparison to the humiliation.

As he ate, Zhang Zhongmou looked at the ground not far away that was still littered with corpses as he suddenly said curiously: “I wonder what the monsters usually eat.”

Su Yu replied: “Gnomes eat plants and roots, as for the Goblins and Zombies that is a mystery.”

He had barely spoken when Xu Ruyun suddenly walked forward, choosing the corpse of a Lesser Goblin as he suddenly unfurled his black coat, the group were shocked to see several different kinds of small blades hung within.

Retrieving out a small blade, he began to dissect the corpse of the Lesser Goblin, he was very experienced as he swiftly created an incision at the stomach region before pushing his hand in to investigate, as though he were inspecting something.

Zhang Zhongmou, Qin Jiagui and the others were dazed as they exchanged glances, Zhang Zhongmou could not help but exclaim:

“What is this fellow up to?!”

Not long after, Xu Ruyun lightly flicked the green juice off his hands before walking back.

“Xu Ruyun, what were you doing earlier?” Ma Ziyue asked curiously.

“Dissection.” Xu Ruyun said simply: “No stomach.” as he pointed at the corpse of the Lesser Goblin.

“No stomach?” The group were stunned, Zhang Zhongmou could not help but speak out: “No stomach? They don’t need to eat anything?”

Xu Ruyun had a contemplative expression on his face before replying: “They seem to have the same ability as plants to photosynthesize, there should be chlorophyll within their bodies..... However..... Science cannot explain how this is happening.”

Zhao Shichang also could not help but exclaim: “Are you saying that the Lesser Goblin are like plants and actually nourish themselves with sunlight? My god..... How could this be possible? This is actually the dream of us humans, however, I remember some science magazine stating that this is simply impossible, only plants are able to do so.”

Xu Ruyun spread his hands: “There is no explanation.”

Zhang Zhongmou suddenly spoke up in revelation: “Your grandmother, I finally understand why the bodies of those Goblins are green, it’s to allow them to photosynthesize, aren’t they then classified as plants? Since they are plants, their bodies are completely green. Haha.”

The group were stunned as they heard this, there seemed to be a slight possibility of truth in Zhang Zhongmou’s words.

Jade then interrupted: “Xu Ruyun, what do you do for a living?”

“Surgeon.” Xu Ruyun indifferently replied.

Su Yu replied: “No wonder, that’s why you are so familiar with the surgical knife.” He was able to recall the wounds on the Greater Goblin, they had all been at critical areas of the body.

Qin Jiagui smiled: “So you’re actually a surgeon, but you carry so many surgical knives on your person, that is still rather weird.”

Xu Ruyun calmly smiled without explaining, his person seemed to be filled with mystery causing Jade and the others to measure him a few more times.

This male was simply like a firefly in the night, regardless of what environment he was placed in, he would still be in the limelight. This was so even though he did not speak much and seemed very reserved.

“Since you’re a doctor, can you help me to check her condition?” Jade hurriedly pointed at Lei Rui.

Xu Ruyun nodded before carefully inspecting Lei Rui, a deep expression appeared on his face before he shook his head: “There is no way to tell what is going on.” A dismayed expression appeared on his face, it seemed that since he became a doctor, he had not experienced such scenes where science was unable to explain the matters before him.

Zhao Shichang interrupted: “Jade, stop thinking about it, something which even chinese medical practitioners can’t diagnose, how could western medicine possibly be of use.”

Although Zhao Shichang did not really like learning about chinese medicine, he came from a household of chinese medicine practitioners, faced with matters which western medicine could not explain, he could not help but voice out his opinions.

Xu Ruyun glanced over at Zhao Shichang before continuing: “When it comes to fooling people, western medicine is indeed inferior to chinese medicine.”

“What did you say?” Zhao Shichang jumped up.

Chapter 132: Strange Ability

Qin Jiagui hurriedly intervened: “Okay okay, whether it be western or chinese medicine, there must be a reason for their existence, aren’t they talking about the fusion of western and chinese medicine now? I feel that both have their strong points

Zhao Shichang glared at him: “This is a problem of perspective.”

Xu Ruyun responded: “A problem of principles.”

Qin Jiagui had a bitter smile while Su Yu laughed as he gently brushed a leaf off his shirt, these two people were certainly interesting.

After resting for a while, the group continued forward, the seven newcomers were given two big packs each to carry, knowing that there was food within, they did not dare to be careless.

There were a total of nineteen people, three experts at tier three, three at tier two, six at tier one and finally eight at tier zero. It could be said that the group was reasonably powerful, Qin Jiagui, Zhao Shichang and the others were filled with confidence, this was the first time they felt in control of their situation. Along the way, they began to fill the newcomers in on what they needed to pay attention to, also discussing how they should act when they encountered monsters.

Su Yu was currently most vexed about helping others to reach tier two, if he assisted them, the result was minimal and they

needed to personally kill to advance faster.

“Lass, remember, in the future when we meet a tier two monster, I will block it while you take the chance to use your Runewords to attack it, I think that will work.” Su Yu instructed, he had decided not to knock the monster unconscious but rather work together with Jade to kill it, this would probably have a better result.

Jade affirmed with a nod.

It was strange that the entire afternoon passed without any danger, they only met with a small group of Lesser Goblins which immediately fled upon seeing Su Yu's large group without attacking.

The group would naturally not chase as they watched the group of little green monsters flee.

Qin Jiagui occasionally pulled the map out to determine their position before continuing forward, the forest was beginning to thicken and it became harder to move forward, Zhao Shichang continued to wield his bone blade to open a path while Zhang Zhongmou used the Red Lotus Sword to help.

Large swaths of forest were chopped down as branches and bramble were cleared, Zhao Shichang and Zhang Zhongmou opened the path and their speed increased.

This was a relatively peaceful afternoon and even the sounds of

monsters roaring in the distance were absent, it seemed that they were in a portion of the forest where there were no monsters.

This primitive forest was very different from the one that everyone was familiar with, there were few insects or poisonous creatures, the weakest monsters in the food chain were likely the Lesser Goblins and Gnomes.

However, although they were the lowest tier of monsters, they were still much stronger than ordinary humans.

When ordinary humans entered here, if they were not relying on luck, numbers or weapons, it was simply impossible to kill a Lesser Goblin.

As night fell, the group were already tired and prepared to rest. Zhao Shichang, Zhang Zhongmou and Ma Ziyue who had taken out her Star Blade began to clear the area of wild grass and shrubs, creating an open area of roughly twenty metres. Everyone then worked together to clear the debris to allow them to sleep more comfortably.

The bags which contained food were placed in the centre, Jade carefully placed Lei Rui amongst the bags as she sat there to protect her.

The others attempted to rest as close to the centre as possible, because they were numerous, they took shifts of three throughout the night.

The small groups were formed based on their relationships, Qin Jiagui was together with Yuan Niping, Su Yu was together with Zhang Zhongmou and the others, Li Dong and Zhou Huakang were together, and the others were a random mix.

Liu Zheng held a pen and paper as he sat beside Zhang Zhongmou excitedly speaking: “Hey, can I check with you what are your abilities and who’s the strongest?”

He could tell that Zhang Zhongmou loved to talk, he was a chatterbox and questioning him would be the easiest.

Qin Jiagui glanced over at Xu Ruyun: “You actually managed to kill a Greater Goblin to advance to tier one? What ability did you gain?”

Xu Ruyun frowned slightly while Qin Jiagui smiled: “Don’t be mistaken, all our abilities are openly shared, only when we are familiar with each other can we better complement our skills. As for my ability, I am able to cause my skin to turn to metal.” As he said this, his right arm immediately transformed, turning to metal while a metal circular drum suddenly appeared on his right shoulder.

“This can fire a Steel Missile, it is a new ability which I gained after promoting to tier two, my fist can cause the things hit by it to explode, these are my current abilities.”

Qin Jiagui’s words dispelled some of the concerns which Xu Ruyun had as he slowly spoke: “My ability seems to be in my chest

area.....” As he said this, he moved aside his black coat to expose his chest.

Su Yu also looked over, Xu Ruyun’s performance had been astonishing and everyone was curious what ability he had attained.

As Xu Ruyun exposed his chest, Su Yu noticed that there was a slight trembling at the area of his chest, small blades appeared suddenly one after the other from beneath his skin.

“This..... this is.....” Qin Jiagui was stunned.

Xu Ruyun reached down as he pulled one of the blades out, the group could see that this was a surgical knife, flicking his wrist, the small blade flew threw the air before embedding itself within the trunk of a tree.

“Pull out surgical knives from within your chest, this is your ability?” Qin Jiagui had an expression of incredulity.

Xu Ruyun nodded before continuing: “It could be due to the many surgical knives on my person, after advancing, my body actually had a sucking power which absorbed these blades into my body. This was the cause of my strange ability, I am able to continuously pull surgical knives from within my chest.” he had a bitter smile on his face, this ability was certainly too unusual.

Everyone exchanged glances, they were unable to clearly say whether his ability was strong or weak, he was currently at tier

one and it would be difficult to make a judgement call, only when he reached tier two would they be able to tell if this ability was good.

Zhang Zhongmou heard Liu Zheng's question of who was strongest as he laughed: "Who's the strongest? That's naturally this daddy right here."

"Really?" Liu Zheng had a fawning expression on his face, when the monsters attacked, he was too engrossed with preserving his life and could not pay attention to how the others were fighting. As such, he did not know who was the strongest as a look of curiosity and worship appeared on his face before silently pointing towards Su Yu: "Why is it that he is always the first to rush forward when we meet with strong monsters? It seems that all the stronger monsters are dealt with by him, I actually thought that he was the strongest but it's actually brother Zhang."

Zhang Zhongmou glanced over at Su Yu as he drily laughed: "Him? You asked who was the strongest human, that's definitely me, but he's already too strong to be even considered a human."

Liu Zheng was exasperated, he realised that Zhang Zhongmou was teasing him.

Li Dong and Zhou Huakang sat together as they silently conversed: "You beat up that Wang Xiang today, he will surely remember this, you better look out for yourself."

Zhou Huakang nodded as a cold smile flitted across his face: "I

can't stand such hooligans, he actually dares to retaliate? That would give me a good reason to kill him off."

Li Dong softly continued: "As time goes on, the circumstances might become unfavourable, if we meet with monsters again tomorrow, we should allow the monsters to assist us in killing him, leaving such a person within the group would be like leaving a ticking time bomb, although you are currently stronger than him, an exposed gun is easy to dodge while a hidden arrow is difficult to defend against, also, who knows whether that fellow will get lucky, managing to kill a tier one monster and promoting to become tier one dark iron warriors like us?"

Li Dong's foresight was much greater than Zhou Huakang, while speaking he was glancing over at Xu Ruyun, he was a talent who had come to this world, managing to promote to tier one in a short period of time, this made Li Dong who had struggled so hard to advance to feel envious.

Zhou Huakang affirmed with a grunt, as Li Dong said, it was better to find the earliest opportunity to get rid of that Wang Xiang.

Qin Jiagui and Yuan Niping chatted for a short while before walking over to Su Yu's side and seated himself beside him. Su Yu was currently opening a box of chocolates, noticing Qin Jiagui, he also offered some to him.

Qin Jiagui accepted the offer as he bit down, he actually did not really like the flavour of chocolates.

Looking at the group who were seated all around, Qin Jiagui whispered: “Su Yu, the group is suddenly much bigger, we aren’t familiar with their characters and morals, we need to be especially careful and observant.”

Although Su Yu wasn’t the leader of the group and he didn’t want to think about being it, when matters became serious, Qin Jiagui’s first thought would be to approach him and discuss. Even Qin Jiagui who wanted to be leader could not help but admit that within the group, Su Yu was the real backbone.

Su Yu placed a piece of chocolate into his mouth, chewed and swallowed before replying: “That bus driver, the black faced uncle, Liu Zheng who constantly daydreams as well as the programmer shouldn’t be much of a problem, we must pay more attention to that person called Wang Xiang, he may cause some problems..... Also, we need to pay attention to Xu Ruyun.” Suddenly, he turned to face Qin Jiagui as he laughed: “Why aren’t you eating? Don’t like chocolates?”

Qin Jiagui laughed before finally placing the remainder of the chocolate into his mouth, chewing silently.

Su Yu continued: “Chocolates are high in calories, eating a bit of it is sufficient especially in such a vicious environment.”

Chapter 133: Combat Genius

Qin Jiagui softly spoke: “That Wang Xiang is clearly a ruffian, there was an altercation between Zhou Huakang and him earlier in the day, he must be filled with thought of revenge, he may even hate the rest of us. As for Xu Ruyun, he is overly calm and doesn’t seem like an ordinary person, he’s only just arrived within this frightening forest but has not shown the slightest bit of fear, he seems to adapt extremely quickly and has actually become a tier one dark iron warrior, such a person..... Befriending him is certainly a good thing but on the same note, if we fall out, he would be a terrifying enemy.....”

Su Yu closed the lid on the box of chocolates as he placed it within the bag by his side before continuing: “Relax, I will pay attention.” He knew the reason why Qin Jiagui had come over to speak to him, he wanted Su Yu to pay more attention to Wang Xiang, Xu Ruyun and the few others.

Qin Jiagui breathed a sigh of relief, it was good that Su Yu had the same intentions, he was afraid that if their group met with any danger, these unstable elements might create some trouble. Within their group, only Su Yu would have the ability to split his attention to take notice of Xu Ruyun and the others.

Qin Jia Gui went on: “There are still a few more days, we’ve covered quite a bit of ground today. Based on our current speed, it seems that we may reach the position indicated on the map within five days.”

Su Yu looked at him as he suddenly asked: “Qin Jiagui, what is

the likelihood that the position indicated on the map is actually the exit?”

Qin Jiagui fell into a deep contemplation before finally speaking in a low voice: “I’m not sure, actually..... I don’t have much confidence myself, however, we can’t speak of this matter. This is currently the only hope that everyone is clinging on to, if there isn’t hope, I fear that our group will disperse.” Having such this, fatigue and helplessness filled his features.

Su Yu looked at Qin Jiagui with sympathy, in this moment he finally realised that Qin Jiagui had long suspected that the position indicated on the map could possibly not be the exit, he had firmly insisted on this to strengthen the confidence of everyone, blindly believing that that was the exit. This blind faith was the only thing holding the group together, otherwise, it was likely that they would suffer from mental breakdowns.

“Actually, maybe it isn’t as terrible as we currently think it is.” Su Yu suddenly stretched his hand to pat Qin Jiagui, although they were comrades, they had a sense of rivalry between them and their relations were not especially close, it could only be said that they were forced to be comrades by the circumstances surrounding them.

As Su Yu patted Qin Jiagui, he could feel his broad and firm shoulders, suddenly, a feeling that Qin Jiagui was actually a reliable companion well up within him. At the very least, he was certainly acting in the best interests of the group, amongst the males within the group besides Zhang Zhongmou, Qin Jiagui was the second most trusted companion of Su Yu. As for Zhao

Shichang, Li Dong and Zhou Huakang, Zhao Shichang was slightly better but it was impossible to trust him 100%, as for Li Dong and Zhou Huakang, he simply could not bring himself to trust them, it could only be said that it was better to have two more members than two less members in the group.

As the newly joined personnel, he did not expect much for them, they could not be considered true comrades yet.

Qin Jiagui was stunned for a moment as he felt Su Yu pat his shoulder, in his impression, Su Yu was a easy-going person who seldom did anything to anyone, besides being very good friends with Zhang Zhongmou, whether it be himself, Zhao Shichang or Li Dong, Su Yu did not seek them out to speak with them. This was the reason why Zhao Shichang, Li Dong and the others felt as though Su Yu was a person who was difficult to get close to, together with his strength, they actually had a feeling that he was unreachable.

Even Qin Jiagui had been given such an impression, this was why he had been so hesitant about approaching Su Yu to discuss matters.

Within this forest, power was everything, whoever had the strength would be able to gain the respect of others. If everyone were merely ordinary humans, with Su Yu's character, he would definitely become someone transparent within the group. However, because he had strength, the feeling he gave the others was someone who was unreachable.

As a result, Li Dong and Zhou Huakang seldom sought out Su Yu

to talk, they actually wanted to get closer to Su Yu and become buddies with him like Zhang Zhongmou, however..... They were afraid to be in his presence, not daring to speak as they felt that Su Yu was difficult to interact with.

Su Yu had merely casually patted Qin Jiagui but this spoke of his recognition, he did not know that his simple gesture had caused a feeling of being overwhelmed by recognition from a superior to well within Qin Jiagui. Qin Jiagui actually scolded himself for having such a feeling but his heart could not help but have a strange sensation.

He suddenly understood, being recognised by someone much stronger than himself was actually something so fulfilling, it actually made him feel overwhelmed.

Although they were of similar status within the school in the past, Qin Jiagui had been much more outstanding than Su Yu, however, after entering this forest, because of Su Yu's luck in killing his first Lesser Goblin, the gap in strength between the two was merely widening.

Su Yu was slowly widening the gap, originally Qin Jiagui could still see his back and had tried his hardest to catch up, when he finally looked up, he realised that he had been left far behind, unable to catch even the slightest glimpse of him.

After promoting to tier three, Su Yu had the power of the Rending Storm, he had even improved the technique allowing him to cause an explosive effect a distance away, together with the Golden Blood made him a formidable force. He had also given away two precious treasures which allowed both Ma Ziyue and

Zhang Zhongmou to promote to tier three and tier two respectively, such abilities and methods were miles ahead of what Qin Jiagui had.

Ma Ziyue had also promoted to tier three today, back when Su Yu had joked about lacking the confidence of fighting Ma Ziyue, Qin Jiagui had heard it and he had cursed in his heart, he felt that Su Yu was merely acting humble, Su Yu had acquired the Golden Blood and had thereafter exploded forth with a might that had swept all the frightening monsters like the Golden Gnome King and Savage Bull Demon away, even two Ma Ziyues probably could not create such results.

Thinking back to York and Chu Xiang who were both tier three experts but had been killed by Su Yu, Qin Jiagui suddenly felt a weird sensation well up within him, could Su Yu actually be a combat genius? Or could he just be extremely lucky?

Su Yu's growth had been personally witnessed by him, how strong was the current Su Yu? This was something that was impossible to estimate.

Su Yu patted Qin Jiagui's shoulder before continuing: "I've always believed that since we are able to enter this area, there will definitely be a way out. It's only that we haven't found it, there is always a way, we definitely have hope.

Qin Jiagui nodded, this unplanned discussion between the two of them had actually drawn them closer together.

The first half of the night was guarded by Zhao Shichang, Mao Mingzhu and Wang Xiang, Zhao Shichang occasionally walked around as he inspected before indicating to Wang Xiang and Mao Mingzhu to look out for certain areas. This night was relatively peaceful and the sounds of monsters roaring in the distance was seldom heard.

The night was extremely quiet with only the sound of Zhang Zhongmou snoring. Zhao Shichang yawned, he noticed that Mao Mingzhu and Wang Xiang seemed like they were falling asleep and could not help but walk over: “Focus, it will be over in a while.”

Mao Mingzhu replied: “I think it’s quite peaceful..... there doesn’t seem to be any danger..... How about.....”

She had not finished her sentence when Zhao Shichang glared at her as he interrupted: “If you wish to die, it’s fine. However, don’t drag us in. Within this forest, danger lurks everywhere and we may face peril at any moment. If you continue to have such thoughts, I think..... it won’t be long before you die.”

Having said this, Zhao Shichang walked off to the side, no longer caring about them.

Mao Mingzhu’s face was red, after being lectured, her lethargy was gone and she could only focus on looking all around her.

Time continued to pass minute after minute, looking at his watch, it was finally time for Su Yu, Zhou Huakang and Huo Shan to take over.

When he walked to Huo Shan's side, this middle aged man was currently hugging his case, his body was huddled as he continued to softly mumble.

Zhao Shichang first thought that Huo Shan had not fallen asleep but upon closer inspection, he was actually sleep talking.

“Xiang Mei..... don't worry..... I'll reach the hospital soon..... I've brought the money for the operation, you'll be fine..... You can't die..... “

Suddenly, Huo Shan began crying within his dream.

Zhao Shichang was stunned, seeing a grown-up male cry like a little kid caused an unhappy feeling to well up within him, looking at the time, he hardened his heart to wake Huo Shan up.

Huo Shan woke up dazed, instinctively clutching onto his case as he nervously sat up, he could feel the stains on his face as he hurriedly used his clothes to wipe it up.

“Wake up uncle, it's your turn for sentry duty.” Zhao Shichang sat down as he spoke.

“Oh, oh.....” Huo Shan had woken up and recalled the earlier arrangement, three people in a group and they would take turns to do sentry duty, he was together with Su Yu and Zhou Huakang in group two, this half of the night was their turn.

The reason why Su Yu was paired together with Zhou Huakang was in light of the altercation between him and Wang Xiang earlier in the day, with Su Yu in the group, it was unlikely that Zhou Huakang would have the courage to cause any trouble.

On such a night, everyone wished to have a peaceful sleep without any trouble arising.

After waking up, Su Yu nodded to Zhao Shichang indicating that he could sleep and leave the rest to him.

Zhao Shichang laid down comfortably, amongst the people guarding the group, Su Yu was definitely the one who made them feel the safest.

Chapter 134: 666 Monster?

Su Yu did not walk to and fro like Zhao Shichang, rather, he merely sat by the side. His current vision and hearing allowed him to clearly sense everything around him.

Zhou Huakang stood by the other side, occasionally walking before sitting down, he glanced a couple of times at Wang Xiang, it was clear that he was vexed and had wanted to walk over to stomp him to death but had controlled himself.

As for Wang Xiang, knowing that Zhou Huakang was guarding the night, how could he dare to sleep? His entire body was tense and his heart was filled with hatred and fear.

As for Huo Shan, he firmly clutched his case as though he were hugging his lifeline, not relaxing for a single moment.

This night was very peaceful, they did not suffer any disturbances as it swiftly became day, finally, Su Yu heard some movements.

It was not only Su Yu who heard this, even Zhou Huakang and Huo Shan heard the roar of a monster.

This roar suddenly transmitted from far away, this was followed by a second howling noise but it did not seem to be from the monster, also, this sound was gradually getting closer to the resting area of the group.

Su Yu did not need to speak as Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou and Ma Ziyi swiftly woke up.

“What’s going on?” Zhang Zhongmou stood up as he immediately rushed to Su Yu’s side.

Su Yu shook his head, his left fist gently clenching as black scales slowly emerged onto the back of his hand.

“Bang!”

A loud noise could be heard roughly twenty metres away from where the group were, there was then the noise of a tree falling. “Crack, crack” frightening sounds could be heard as the faces of the group changed, they were now fully awake as Qin Jiagui softly exclaimed: “Quickly retreat!” Everyone swiftly moved back as they saw one big tree after another falling to the ground.

“Roar!!!!!!” A frightening howl rang out as though it were the roar of an ancient monster from ages past, this sound came from ten metres in front of the group.

Ning Yan who was amongst the group suddenly had a weird light flash through her eyes, she unconsciously pushed aside Zhou Birong who was in front of her as she walked forward, as though something were attracting her.

“Careful, don’t go.” Zhou Birong’s right hand sprouted steel

feathered claws while she used her left hand to hold back Ning Yan.

Ma Ziyue, Zhao Shichang, Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou and the others stood ready in their formation as a precaution, the surroundings were still rather dim and if they met with some unexpected situation, running away haphazardly would be a foolish maneuver. Besides the newcomers, the others responded relatively calmly.

Su Yu's left hand had transformed and was covered with black scales, as the trees continued to fall, a humanoid monster that was totally black appeared before them.

This monster was roughly as tall as a human, its entire body was jet black, what was most strange about this monster was that a large portion of its body was already rotted, the rotted flesh was slowly sliding down its body, its face did not have any obvious organs of the five senses, merely having two black holes for eyes. Those black holes contained a strange purple light, two rows of snow white teeth could be seen within its mouth, however, its lips had long since rotted away and appeared extremely grotesque.

Su Yu's Eye of Perception immediately activated, a warning like information that was filled with a series of question marks and unknown danger was being pointed out.

Su Yu's heart sank as he took a step back, this was the first time he had failed to obtain information on a monster using the Eye of Perception.

Behind Su Yu, the group could see the grotesque form of the monster as several people gasped.

Zhang Zhongmou and Ma Ziyue went forward, wanting to assist Su Yu in dealing with the monster.

Contrary to expectation, the monster which appeared did not attack Su Yu but rather seemed frightened after seeing the large group of people, turning its head as it swiftly ran off in another direction.

“Give up! You won’t be able to escape!” A sinister voice filled with cold killing intent suddenly resounded, this sound had abruptly resounded and even Su Yu did not notice when the other party had arrived, a large ancient tree was before them and stomping noises could be heard as Su Yu caught sight of a figure.

This figure was actually climbing up the tree trunk as though it were flat ground, reaching the top of it in an instant.

This scene made Su Yu and Ma Ziyue who was rushing forward speechless, being able to walk up a tree trunk as though it were flat ground, this was simply a scene out of a martial arts flick, someone with peerless Qing Gong*.

*Qing Gong refers to light body skill.

They were still dazed while the figure which had climbed to the top of the tree immediately leapt, flying over twenty metres

towards the monster as his entire body began to rotate like Su Yu's Rending Storm, heavily smashing into the rotting jet black monster.

The humanoid monster groaned, large amounts of rotten flesh were ground from its back as it fell forward

“Bang!”

The humanoid monster smashed into a tree causing the tree to sway violently, thereafter, it fell to the ground with a ‘Plop!’ without getting back up.

The person who had flown through the air firmly landed on the ground, his actions were extremely confident and at ease.

When this person finally landed, Su Yu and the others were finally able to see his appearance. This was a male who did not seem older than thirty, his face was handsome and it seemed miraculous that his black clothes were spotless, without any stench coming from them.

After staying in this forest for a few days, anyone would be covered with a stench and appear disheveled, however, this handsome male was clean and did not seem disheveled, this filled the group with puzzlement.

After landing, the male glanced over at Su Yu and the others, he was able to see their puzzled expressions and sorry figures but

simply ignored them, as though Su Yu and the others were not worth his attention.

“Why go through all this trouble? Mo Nian, just give up.” The handsome male spoke in a cold voice that seemed devoid of any emotions.

“Howl!” The rotting humanoid monster slowly climbed back up and unexpectedly spoke.

“Xue Tong..... Must you really be so ruthless?” A pair of black eyes that emitted a faint purple glow stared at the handsome male before emitting a howl, this sound was extremely miserable as though it were the roar of an ancient beast in despair.

Su Yu and the others who had backed away had shocked expressions, in this moment they realised that the rotting humanoid monster was actually a human? From their words, it was clear that the jet black humanoid monster was called Mo Nian while the cold handsome male was called Xue Tong.

“Ruthless? Mo Tian, what do you think?” A cold smile appeared on the male’s face as his body turned, suddenly looking off to the side.

Closely after, soft rustling sounds of footsteps could be heard from within the dark forest by the side, another figure slowly emerged.

This was also a male in his twenties, his hands were tucked within his sleeves and as he walked it seemed like he was huddled up, as though he were an old man who was afraid of the cold.

“Official business according to our principles!” This person’s voice was indifferent, as though he did not wish to interact with the humanoid monster as he stared off into the distance.

“Mo Tian, I’m your brother!” The humanoid monster that sat on the ground howled as it looked at the male who had suddenly emerged, the purple glow within its eyes gradually fading as it trembled violently, pieces of rotting flesh dripping down.

Xue Tong looked over at Mo Tian who had just emerged before looking at the humanoid monster Mo Nian, towards this pair of brothers, his face had a cruel smile.

Su Yu and the others continued to slowly back away, thereafter, he secretly activated the Eye of Perception wanting to gain information on the two new males. However, he did not expect that the information shown would actually be ‘Unknown’.

Why was the Eye of Perception useless against these three people? Su Yu did not understand. As for the three newcomers, they simply ignored Su Yu and the others, it was as though they were merely ants not worth paying attention to.

“Brother, if you want to be indignant..... You can only blame yourself for delving too deep..... for power you can actually stoop down to become a monster? We have orders to get rid of you, I’m

sorry..... Brother, I am going to kill you.” The youth who had walked out had a dazed expression as he finally looked towards the humanoid monster on the group, hesitation could be seen within his eyes before it swiftly hardened.

The extremely handsome Xue Tong continued with a mocking smile on his face: “Also, you’re merely a failed ‘Evil’, Mo Nian..... this is really pitiful..... Mo Tian, act now!”

Mo Tian whose hands were still tucked within his sleeves gently nodded before his hands suddenly stretched out, his fingers were ramrod straight as they suddenly began to extend, each becoming a chinese foot long, seeming as though his arms had enormous forks attached to them.

“Finger Spear!” Mo Tian exclaimed as he strode forward, both his hands were like a raging storm as they jabbed forth like a barrage of javelins that filled the air, all they could see were after shadows of his fingers that were raining down on the pitch-black rotting human form.

“Why..... why must you force me..... I really didn’t wish..... didn’t wish to become like this..... Aaaahhh!” The humanoid monster which was seated on the ground hugged its head as it continued to mumble, looking at the sky which was filled with Finger Spears falling onto his body, he suddenly opened his mouth to expose his white teeth as he howled.

“Kaboom!”

A loud noise rang out, no one had clearly seen what had happened but Mo Tian groaned as he suddenly fell away.

Ning Yan who was within the group suddenly groaned, her forehead was covered in cold sweat as she firmly held the nape of her neck, she could feel a burning sensation from that area.

“Are you okay?” Zhou Birong was shocked as she softly questioned.

“Why do you have to force me!” The humanoid monster howled as its body twisted strangely before standing up, the purple light which was fading within its eyes suddenly shot out, appearing like a lightbulb within the night as its entire body emitted this purple light, spreading out in all directions.

“Not good!” Xue Tong suddenly yelled as he stomped and kicked, his left leg landing on the ground while his right leg flew forward. Suddenly, his right leg began to swiftly extend and became like a two to three metre long whip in the blink of an eye as it swiftly flew forward.

“Pa!”

An explosive sound rang out as the whip-like leg swept into the humanoid monster which had just stood up.

The humanoid monster howled as it tumbled away, once again smashing into a large tree, causing the tree to emit cracking noises

as the entire trunk began to bend like a bow before finally breaking off, the strength behind the collision was simply frightening.

Ma Ziyue's eyes were wide open and her heart was stunned, her whipping kick was child's play when compared to the whipping kick from this Xue Tong, its power was simply inconceivable.

When the humanoid monster fell away, Su Yu's sharp eyes managed to see the three numbers '666' on the nape of its neck, the three numbers were flashing with a strange purple demonic glow as though it originated from the '666', continually dispersing into all parts of the body. The humanoid monster continued to struggle on the ground as it howled, the vicious whipping kick earlier did not cause any damage to it.

"666?" Su Yu immediately recalled the three black numbers '666' on the nape of Ning Yan's neck, was this merely a coincidence or.....

Su Yu felt stunned as he looked back, he could see Ning Yan shivering as her right hand firmly pressed down on the back of her neck, her reaction was extremely strange.

"666", what could it mean? Was all this merely a coincidence or was there something else to it?

Su Yu was dazed, as for Mo Tian, he had climbed back up as he pounced once again, his ten fingers extended as he yelled 'Finger Spear', wielding his arms as he pierced towards the humanoid monster.

The cold smile on Xue Tong's handsome face was gone, he did not expect the humanoid monster to have such a frightening amount of strength, his body bent slightly as he sprang forth, the upper half of his body and both his legs suddenly extended like rubber. Both his hands stretched out and to grab onto a nearby tree branch, using it as focal point as he spun his body around and viciously flung both his legs out.

“Pa! Pa!”

His extended legs and body whipped towards the humanoid monster which was barely four metres away.

“Roar!” The humanoid monster howled as the purple glow from its body formed a net, covering its entire body as purple magical runes began to emerge. The monster abruptly caught both legs that were approaching extremely quickly. The monster dragged Xue Tong about and flung him heavily towards Mo Tian.

Chapter 135: True Evil

The humanoid monster suddenly exploded forth, a purple layer of magical runes seemed to cover its entire body as its hands stretched forth, instantly grabbing Xue Tong's legs as it dragged him and tossed him towards Mo Tian who was rushing over.

“Bang!”

Xue Tong and Mo Tian groaned as their bodies slammed together before tumbling away.

“Damn, isn't he a failed product? How can he still be so powerful?” Xue Tong yelled, Mo Tian had used the Finger Spear and they had all pierced his body causing several finger sized holes to appear, blood spurting from them like a fountain.

The humanoid monster let out a frightening roar as it stomped, the ground sunk in as it rushed forward, large pieces of rotten flesh were flung aside exposing the white bone underneath. Its right hand clawed as it grabbed Xue Tong's face, lifting his entire body with a single hand.

Xue Tong howled as his legs clamped down on the humanoid monster's left arm, his entire lower body suddenly began to twist.

“Crack!”

A crisp sound rang out as the left arm of the humanoid monster

was snapped.

At the back, Mo Tian's left arm tightened as his right hand pulled on the fingers of his left, causing the left arm to be pulled into the form of a curved bow, the other five fingers had been pulled straight, forming five "bowstrings" which he firmly attached to his own waist.

"Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!"

Five "bowstrings" explosively shot forth, the humanoid monster miserably cried as its chest was blown open, the purple demonic markings on its body continued to fluctuate endlessly, the power from these five strings were extremely terrifying, causing the humanoid monster to instantly be flung away.

Xue Tong landed before kicking, closely following behind. All the strange energy was gathered within his two legs and his speed was stupendously fast, instantly covering over seven metres of space as he kicked, stepping hard onto the chest of the humanoid monster.

An oppressive sound like that of lightning could be heard from the chest of the humanoid monster, Xue Tong's leg had stomped onto the monster's chest as his entire person flew into the sky before kicking with his left leg, hitting the side of the monster's face.

These sequence of movements occurred lightning fast, Su Yu and the others in the distance could only stare speechlessly as they felt thoroughly stunned.

Whether it be the humanoid monster or Xue Tong and Mo Tian, the nimbleness and speed of their movements were not something that Qin Jiagui and the others could compare with, even Su Yu was a far cry from it.

Compared to Xue Tong's bunch, Su Yu and the others were not any different from ordinary people.

The humanoid monster was once again kicked flying as it smashed heavily into the ground with a 'Kaboom!'.

At the back, Mo Tian continued to stand in his original position, his five fingers which had been pulled into five 'bowstrings' had twisted together to form a 'bowstring' that was in the form of a fried dough crisp.

His right hand hooked this 'bowstring' as his gaze grew cold, continually pulling as the 'bowstring' emitted cracking noises, finally, his right hand was fully extended backwards, the bowstring had been pulled to a limit and the power contained within seemed to be unbelievable as Mo Tian's face was scrunched up, his entire body lightly trembling.

This blow surely contained a fearsome might.

Xue Tong had just landed after kicking the humanoid monster twice when Mo Tian suddenly exclaimed: "Dodge!"

Xue Tong's expression changed as he hurriedly pruned on the ground to avoid.

“Ha!” Mo Tian's facial expression twisted, his aim was locked on the humanoid monster which had just fallen away as he finally relaxed his hand.

“Boom!”

The air seemed to explode with a streak of lightning as the branches of the large trees by the side began to sway violently causing leaves to fill the sky, the humanoid monster which had just fallen to the ground had just stood up as it suddenly howled, the flesh at its chest area exploding out, the purple markings on its body instantly destroyed as a large clear hole appeared there.

Behind it, two large trees were also felled as they fell with a ‘Boom!’ to the ground.

An absolutely frightening blow, Su Yu and the others sucked in a breath of cold air, this blow was simply too astounding, if they were the ones to suffer this blow, they would have instantly been blown apart without a whole corpse left behind.

“Let's go.” Su Yu suddenly whispered, whether it be the humanoid monster or the mysterious Xue Tong and Mo Tian, they simply could not compare with them. Staying by the side could possibly result in their deaths.

Su Yu turned as he prepared to flee, nobody knew who would win or what would happen after, it was safer to take the chance to flee.

Qin Jiagui also recovered as he hurriedly picked up the two large bags on the ground as he whispered: “Everyone, move faster, it isn’t safe to stay here.”

Although it was not completely bright, everyone began to pick up their belongings. They were very curious on the backgrounds of the few people as well as who would win, but seeing the humanoid monster suffer heavy injuries, they decided that they could tarry no longer and immediately prepared to leave.

“Ning Yan, what’s the matter with you?” At this moment, Zhou Birong suddenly exclaimed as the group finally noticed something was amiss with Ning Yan.

There was still a piece of cloth covering Ning Yan’s face making it difficult to make out her facial expression, however, her entire body was continually trembling as her two hands firmly clasped the back of her neck. When Zhou Birong hollered, Ning Yan seemed to break down as she suddenly let out a low roar, as though a trapped beast within her body had finally been awakened and she was using everything within her to control it.

The humanoid monster which had been struck to the ground by Mo Tian’s frightening blow had a hole the size of a basketball in the centre of its chest, its injuries were extremely severe but Xue Tong and Mo Tian did not have the time to celebrate as they saw piercing purple lights shooting forth from the large hole in its

chest.

The purple light was akin to a beam of light from a searchlight, within the purple lights, streaks of threatening looking black lights could be seen within it. Suddenly devil like features could be seen within the lights, extremely fearful and eye-catching.

“Hahaha.....” A frightening sinister laugh suddenly spread in all directions, azure light and black mist was being emitted from the hole within the humanoid monster’s chest, the scene seemed as though the black mist had been trapped within the humanoid monster’s body, ‘it’ had finally broken through the confines and the true evil had been unleashed.

“This..... this is..... Damn it.....” Cold sweat could be seen on Xue Tong’s handsome countenance, in the blink of an eye beads of sweat could be seen trickling down his face.

Mo Tian’s mouth was agape as though he was absolutely stunned, his lips were trembling as he muttered: “Wasn’t he a failed product? How could it be like this..... This response..... That isn’t right, could it be that there is another ‘existence’ nearby?” Having said this, he suddenly turned as divine lights seemed to flash from his eyes, shooting towards Su Yu and the others who were preparing to leave.

The black mist which was emitted from the humanoid monster’s chest was becoming more and more dense, quickly swallowing the body of the monster as the rotted flesh began to continually twist and swell, boils began to grow and burst, suddenly, a white boney finger extended from within the rotted flesh, continually

extending as the large amounts of black rotted flesh on the ground began to swirl.

When this hand reached the side of Mo Tian, large amounts of rotten black flesh began to gather on this boney hand, causing it to become a thick black arm, the huge arm was swelling as thick black fur began to grow on it, five fingers like metal hooks with sharp fingernails, with a speed that far surpassed anyone instantly slashed out towards Mo Tian's chest.

“Ahhh!” Mo Tian suddenly let out a miserable cry, a faint layer of yellow appeared above his chest seeming like a protective shield, however, it was instantly shredded by the huge black arm as the five sharp fingers instantly pierced into his chest.

Xue Tong who was by the side realised that the situation was grim as he instantly moved, climbing up the side of a big tree before jumping into the air, turning as his legs stuck together, spinning as he became like a drill while attacking.

Within the large amounts of black mist, a boney hand stretched forth, pieces of rotted black flesh began to gather forming another gigantic black arm, five fingers went forth like a demonic claw as they struck towards Xue Tong.

Suddenly, the demonic claw swept as it grabbed Xue Tong's legs which were flying forward, flinging him towards Su Yu and the others who were planning to run away.

“Careful!” Su Yu exclaimed as everyone attempted to dodge, he

could see that Xue Tong was flying towards was hurtling fast towards Qin Jiagui, it was simply too fast and Qin Jiagui did not have the time to dodge, Su Yu urgently moved as he pushed Qin Jiagui aside.

“Bang!”

Xue Tong tumbled past Qin Jiagui as he smashed into the ground, rolling a few times before finally stopping, blood spurting out of his mouth.

Xue Tong was already extremely frightening, however, compared to the monster, he seemed like a newborn baby.

Mo Tian's chest had been pierced as he let out a miserable howl as he hoarsely shouted: “Brother!”

This shout was heard by the monster as the black arm that was pierced into his chest began to tremble, its movements became sluggish as Mo Tian kicked, knocking the monster aside as his body tumbled away. Mo Tian's right hand tossed as his left hand which was in the form of a fried dough twist split up into five ‘bowstrings’, suddenly causing five ‘Boom!’ noises to sound out within the black mist as frightening howls rang out. As the sounds faded away, a white skeleton appeared from within the black mist.

There was a frightening howl as the rotted black flesh on the ground began to swirl, swiftly rushing to the skeleton before forming a black human roughly 2.5 metres tall, its entire body was swollen with exposed purple tendons everywhere, like little purple

snakes crawling around the body.

Chapter 136: Gecko Beast Transformation

“Howl!”

The gigantic black monster with purple veins roared as his two hands began to transform, extending to his knees. Ten black fingers were shaped like metal hooks, on his back were two rows of ten black protrusions, the numbers ‘666’ were on the back of his neck, glowing with a brilliant light, seeming to contain unfathomable amounts of energy yet also like a sort of frightening curse.

Mo Tian continually retreated as he pressed his chest, fresh blood was flowing from the five punctures on his chest but they were recovering at an astonishing speed as the blood flow swiftly stopped.

At this moment, his hands had returned to their original form, slowly tracing a circle as though he was preparing for something.

On the other side, Xue Tong also climbed back up from the ground as he wiped the blood from his mouth, his legs were shivering slightly as soft cracking sounds could be heard, like a piece of machinery that was beginning to start up, his handsome face was extremely pale with a cautious expression on it, his current gaze made it clear that he was currently taking things seriously.

The gigantic black monster stopped roaring as his eyes turned azure, his hands gently lifted before suddenly kicking.

“Bang!”

The entire ground seemed to be filled with the oppressive roar of lightning as the gigantic black monster rushed forward, contrary to their expectations, he ignored Mo Tian and Xue Tong as he shot directly towards Su Yu and the group. His immense body together with the frightening force of his rush was definitely not any less than that of a tank rushing towards them.

“Quick, dodge!” Su Yu exclaimed, they had just prepared to leave but did not expect such a sudden change of events, the giant black monster had actually ignored Mo Tian and Xue Tong as he directly rushed towards them.

The giant black monster was almost 2.5 metres tall, each stride covered much ground and his speed was tremendous as he rushed over in an instant.

Su Yu exclaimed as he dodged to the side, Zhao Shichang howled as blood spurted from his mouth, he had been knocked aside by the giant black monster.

“Bang!”

Zhao Shichang was like a ragdoll as he was flung aside, falling into a copse of shrubs as he crunched several of them causing his body to be pierced by their broken remains.

Su Yu, Qin Jiagui and the others had barely managed to avoid being hit, Zhao Shichang was sent flying away and the others had pale expressions as they swiftly ran, only Ning Yan continued to clasp the back of her neck as her body stood rigidly there.

Su Yu who had just avoided the rush noticed this and was stunned, by the time he recovered it was already too late.

The giant black monster stopped before Ning Yan who was standing there rigidly, contrary to expectations, he actually did not knock her to send her flying but rather raised a black demonic claw, pinching Ning Yan's neck before lifting her.

“Huuu chiii”

The giant black monster had lifted Ning Yan up as coarse breathing could be felt on Ning Yan's face. Suddenly, Ning Yan seemed as though she had suddenly been aggravated as she began to scream, her two hands letting go of the back of her neck while a piercing black light shot from the back of her neck.

“666?” At the back, some people finally noticed this. Zhou Birong had always been paying close attention to Ning Yan, at this moment she was crying hoarsely, she had finally seen the ‘666’ symbol appear on the back of Ning Yan's neck.

Ning Yan's long hair had always been let down as it covered her shoulders, together with the small size of the ‘666’ symbol, if one did not pay close attention it was simply too difficult to notice. Su Yu had inadvertently noticed it but did not share it with anyone, at

this moment, everyone noticed the piercing black light from the '666' symbol and could not help but connect it with the azure coloured '666' symbol on the black monster's neck, a strange feeling welled up within everyone's hearts.

At the back, Xue Tong and Mo Tian also had a drastic change in expression.

“Another seed? No, it cannot be aggravated or we won't have any chance!” Xue Tong suddenly let out a terrifying howl: “Gecko Beast Transformation!”

His body suddenly dropped to the ground as his legs and chest began to strangely change, frightening scales began to appear over them, besides his head and two arms, the rest of his lower body had transformed into that of a gecko.

At the same time, a pair of strong and powerful lower limbs kicked, causing the entire body which was prone on the ground to fly into the air, accurately landing on the back of the monster which had just lifted Ning Yan off the ground, his entire body instantly wrapping around the black monster.

“Haooooo!”

The black monster howled as it twisted attempting to shirk Xue Tong aside, who knew that Xue Tong's transformed limbs and bodies would contain countless suckers both big and small, firmly sticking onto the black monster, his transformed body was also covered in scales and densely covered in glandular hair, these

glandular hair would release large amounts of mucus upon contact with an enemy's body.

“Mo Tian! Quickly!” Xue Tong shouted as he held onto the black monster in a death vise while secreting the frightening mucus.

At the back, it was unknown when Mo Tian had wrapped his left hand around the trunk of a tree which required three people to fully encompass it, his person had swiftly ran to the other side causing this left arm to be stretched incredibly long, his right arm was still holding onto this extended left arm as he continued to pull it backwards.

He was actually relying on this thick trunk and his body to form a bow, while using his stretched left arm as a ‘bowstring’, prepared to send out the most frightening arrow in his life.

Sounds of beans being fried could be heard from within his left arm as the bones within seemed to squirm, his left arm had been pulled to a limit and a frightening arrow was about to be released.

“Bang!”

Even Su Yu and the others who were over twenty metres away could feel a frightening gale as the withered leaves on the ground scattered, the giant black monster had barely managed to reach Xue Tong who had climbed onto his body, however, the large amounts of mucus secreted out had already flowed down his body, glueing its two feet to the ground.

By the time the monster realised that it needed to dodge, the mucus was already glueing its two feet to the ground. As it attempted to jump, large amounts of soil was actually forcefully pulled out causing it to stumble, this had occurred too suddenly and Mo Tian's frightening blow had finally reached.

“Kaboom!”

This blow contained all the strength within Mo Tian, after releasing this arrow, he howled as blood flowed out from his nose and mouth, tumbling away from the recoil.

This was a blow which contained all the potential within his body, although its might was frightening, it also had a frightening rebound on the body, causing internal injuries, it would definitely take several days for recovery.

If it were not absolutely necessary, Mo Tian would definitely not be willing to do so. The strength of the black monster was simply too terrifying, only by risking injury to himself would there possibly be a chance to exterminate it.

Following the sound of explosion, the black monster let out a miserable shrill cry, its two legs and waist had instantly disappeared without a single trace of blood. Even Xue Tong who was wrapped on its body had been severely injured, he had suffered from the terrifying attack, losing one of his large hind legs.

The lower half of its body had suddenly been destroyed as the

black monster howled while falling to the ground, turning as it pressed Xue Tong who was on its back below him, the azure veins on its body began to jump erratically, ridding its body of the mucus as a demonic claw regained its freedom, instantly clamping down on the neck of Xue Tong.

Xue Tong began to struggle with his life on the line, an ordinary opponent would have long been rendered immobile by the large amounts of mucus but the demonic markings on the black monster could actually break through the mucus in a short period of time, regaining its freedom.

Xue Tong had his neck clamped by a terrifying demonic claw, it immediately became difficult to breathe as he shouted: “Mo Tian..... Save me.....” His hands clawed haphazardly as his body continued to tremble, the transformed areas of his body releasing even more mucus.

At the back, Mo Tian had fallen to the ground after that final blow, all the strange energy within his body had been emptied without a single ounce left behind.

The left hand of the black monster continued to clamp down on Xue Tong while its right hand held onto Ning Yan, suddenly, it opened its huge maw as it moved towards Ning Yan’s neck in an attempt to bite.

Almost at the same time, Su Yu, Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou, Ma Ziye and the others recovered their senses as they rushed forward.

Half the reason for Su Yu rushing forward was to kill the black monster while the other half was to save Ning Yan, as for Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou and the others, they rushed forward merely thinking of killing the black monster.

The black monster was extremely strong, stronger than any tier three beast monster that they had faced, if they took the chance to kill such a frightening monster, what stage would they be able to advance to? This was something that had an incredibly large amount of enticement.

The lower half of the black monster had already been destroyed, it had fallen to the ground and was being held in a death grasp by Xue Tong. Its entire body was covered in mucus and could be said to be a tiger without its claws and teeth, even though it was much stronger than them, it really did not cause much fear.

The black monster's maw moved towards Ning Yan's neck, as though there was something it desperately needed there, at the instant it bit down, the '666' symbol on the back of Ning Yan's neck shot forth a brilliant black light.

Of the people rushing forward, Qin Jiagui was the one with the greatest enthusiasm in killing this monster, seeing the strength of it, he had already imagined himself becoming stronger than Su Yu if he killed it, this monster was his only hope of doing so.

In order to take this kill, Qin Jiagui did not care about the safety of the others as he instantly activated the Steel Missile.

A cylindrical object appeared on his right shoulder as a missile flew forward, instantly smashing into the black monster.

“Kaboom!”

An explosive sound resounded out, the black monster had purple veins protecting its body and was not hurt by the Steel Missile, rather, Xue Tong and Ning Yan miserably cried as they were struck by the shrapnel, blood instantly covering their bodies.

“Damn, this is impossible, this is merely a seed that hasn’t advanced..... I won’t accept this.....”

Chapter 137: True Terror, Ning Yan's Transformation

In the midst of them rushing over, the black monster suddenly lifted its head as it howled miserably, even Qin Jiagui's Steel Missile had failed to harm it but its mouth was currently dripping with fresh blood, it had attempted to bite the back of Ning Yan's neck when a frightening black light had erupted.

This black light seemed as though it had spiritual awareness as it immediately caused all the teeth within the monster's mouth to shatter before continuing upwards, mouth, nose, eyes, cheeks..... each area began to crack as a frightening scene unveiled itself, this exceptionally powerful monster cried miserably and indignantly before its entire head suddenly disintegrated.

A streak of purple light then flew instantly into the back of Ning Yan's neck before disappearing, thereafter, a streak of purple light tinged with a touch of black rose to the sky, Ning Yan suddenly let out a shrill cry as her body exploded with a frightening amount of power, heavily shirking off the black monster which had lost its head and lower body as well as Xue Tong away.

"Impossible....." Xue Tong had almost been crushed to death by the black monster, however, it had suddenly died allowing him to live. At this moment the scene before his eyes was simply too stupefying: "A seed..... How could it be so frightening..... could it..... Could it be..... really be..... Impossi..... impossible....."

He seemed to have thought of something as he swiftly shouted "Impossible", his face filled with fear as though the thing he

thought of was the most frightening existence within the world.

Ning Yan stood at her original position, a frightening energy fluctuation could be seen undulating throughout her body, the cloth covering her face fell to the ground, her originally disfigured face had already recovered, flawless and perfect, however, there were two streaks of red flowing from her eyes to her cheeks, like two trails of bloody tears.

Su Yu, Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou, Ma Ziyue and the others were stunned as they were halted in their tracks, staring dazedly at Ning Yan.

Besides Su Yu who had his suspicions, the others had always been unsatisfied with Ning Yan's usual actions, they did not paid much attention to her but at this moment, no one could have imagined such a shocking transformation would occur.

Her entire body was trembling as she slowly turned, looking towards the dazed group of Su Yu and the others as purple black light shot forth, a hoarse shout could be heard from her mouth: "You guys..... go..... Quickly leave..... The further you run the better..... I'm about..... About to lose my will....."

Her voice was becoming hoarse, as she spoke her last words, her body was already trembling violently as though she were bearing some immense pain, the '666' symbol on the back of her neck continued to release purple black light, streaks of purple black demonic veins began to flow throughout her body from the back of her neck.

“Ning Yan!” Zhou Birong and Su Yu could not help but shout.

“Leave, quickly leave!” Ma Ziyue tugged on Su Yu as they felt their bodies cover in cold sweat, they were not stupid and could tell that Ning Yan must have acquired the power of the black monster. No, it was something even more frightening than the black monster, it was also possible that she would lose her mind, becoming a killing machine.

“Su Yu, let’s leave, everyone, hurry and move!” Qin Jiagui also howled as he began to pick up the bags of food, grabbing Yuan Niping’s hand as he began to flee.

“Quickly flee!” Ning Yan roared, her two arms raising as the demonic veins covering her body became more apparent, her eyes were filled with a terrifying cold as a demonic aura became stronger and stronger.

At the back, Xue Tong struggled as he attempted to get up, he had lost one leg and could not climb up no matter how hard he tried as he shouted: “Mo Tian, Mo Tian come save me! This fellow is a monster..... We must swiftly report this..... she must be that thing..... she cannot be allowed out into the world..... hurry.....”

“Leave!” Ning Yan’s hoarse roar could be heard, her eyes seemed to emit a frightening vicious light, her right hand raised as her body swayed before suddenly piercing the chest of Xue Tong with a ‘Chi!’.

Xue Tong let out an incredibly miserable shriek as she continued to howl: “Quick, run!” Her hands were punching downwards as fresh blood spluttered forth, Xue Tong’s miserable cries were gradually becoming weaker and weaker, his body had been thoroughly shredded. Finally, a ball of black light flew up before entering the back of Ning Yan’s neck.

“Run!” Finally, Ma Ziye, Zhou Birong and the others stopped hesitating as they brought the food while running anxiously towards the other side.

Jade continued to personally carry Lei Rui, even under such a dangerous situation, she did not leave Lei Rui behind.

Zhao Shichang had been knocked flying by the monster, although his internal organs had suffered, he was a tier two dark iron warrior and had not been severely injured. He had long since climbed back up, at this moment he did not speak as he picked up two bags of food while running in the direction of the group.

Zhang Zhongmou pulled Su Yu along as he shouted again: “Su Yu, let’s leave, we don’t have any other option, we can’t save her.” Zhang Zhongmou was extremely panicked.

Su Yu looked over at Ning Yan a final time, he could see the form of Ning Yan continually swell as streaks of purple black demonic veins began to expand, a frightening demonic aura seemed as though it had influenced even the clouds in the sky.

An indescribable feeling welled up within his heart, a feeling of

emptiness, as though everything had become meaningless, however.....

Su Yu still turned around as he followed Zhang Zhongmou, following the group as they moved off in another direction.

At the back, Ning Yan's roars were becoming more shrill and frightening, like the demonic king from the depths of the abyss about to truly awaken, in no time, the group which had run far away heard a second miserable cry, this was clearly from Mo Tian.

Running hectically, everyone put their lives on the line and it was unknown how far they ran before the blond haired female Mao Mingzhu fell to the ground with a scream, the bags of food falling from her body, she simply could not run any further.

Closely after, Wang Xiang, Xue Shan and the others also stopped running as they began panting heavily, their legs grew weak as they all fell to the ground.

Ning Yan's frightening roars could no longer be heard, the scene earlier was simply too startling and everyone was still left shellshocked.

Things had occurred so suddenly, the few who were familiar with Ning Yan could not accept the current situation.

At this moment, the sky was already bright but everyone felt extremely cold in their hearts.

“Su Yu, what exactly happened to Ning Yan?” Jade placed Lei Rui down, she was almost dripping with sweat, she could not help but scream as she wiped the sweat off her face.

“Seed..... Was Ning Yan some sort of seed?” There was no sweat on Su Yu’s face, the run earlier was taxing for those at tier zero but it was nothing much for him, however, the scene of Ning Yan transforming and the ‘666’ symbol constantly flitted through his mind.

“It could be that when Ning Yan killed her very first Lesser Goblin, she had acquired a power that was completely different from ours, because it was completely different from that of ours, we did not understand it, causing her to act so unnaturally along the way..... maybe..... Maybe we have all misunderstood her.....” Su Yu muttered.

Zhou Birong said lightly: “That’s right, you guys didn’t notice it but when she killed that frightening monster, she gained energy. Thereafter, she killed Xue Tong who should also be a dark iron warrior like us..... She also managed to gain energy.....”

Everyone felt their hearts lurch, Su Yu had previously killed other dark iron warriors, it was clear that dark iron warriors were unable to acquire energy or new abilities from killing other dark iron warriors, however, Ning Yan was able to do so. Why was that?

“Could it be that those with the ‘666’ are able to kill not only monsters to gain energy, but also dark iron warriors? Could it

be..... could it be that the prey of those with '666' are actually us?" Qin Jiagui immediately thought of a frightening possibility.

"I know, the number '666' is linked to the devil within christianity. If it holds the same meaning within this world..... it's simply too coincidental....." Liu Zheng was an avid reader and an amateur novelist, his knowledge regarding gods and devils was more detailed than the rest.

Qin Jiagui said in a heavy voice: "This isn't a coincidence, this strange world could possibly have existed since long, it could have been around even before christianity. If someone was able to escape from this world into our world, that would easily explain why christianity has linked 666 to mean something demonic and devilish."

Everyone felt their hearts shiver as Liu Zheng exclaimed: "Brother Qin, your imagination is even more vivid than mine, if you were to write a book, it would surely become popular."

"Su Yu, what do we do now?" Qin Jiagui knew that Su Yu had good feelings towards Ning Yan, suddenly faced with such a situation, he naturally had to ask for his opinion.

Su Yu was off contemplating by the side, it was unknown what he was thinking when he heard Qin Jiagui's question, he could only sigh in response: "What should we do? What else can we do."

Zhang Zhongmou patted his shoulder: "We have all misunderstood her, thinking that she was merely a burden. Who

knew that she was carrying such an immense pressure on her back, however, we are simply powerless right now. During that final moment, it seemed that she had lost all sanity. If we were to find her..... We may end up being killed by her instead.”

Su Yu sighed before slowly continuing: “I know, we simply can’t help her.....” His fists were tightly clenched as he suddenly felt an immense pressure, this forest, this world, he was really powerless, unable to do anything.

“Su Yu, let’s go.” Ma Zi Ye spoke up: “Ning Yan has become so powerful, more so than any of us, she will definitely be alright.”

Su Yu bitterly smiled: “I hope so.”

Qin Jiagui muttered: “What exactly could the ‘666’ represent..... What exactly is a seed? Those people mentioned that the black monster was a failed product..... failed product..... That Xue Tong and Mo Tian must have known something, who exactly were they? Were they also people like us who had fallen within this forest? No, based on their attire, they weren’t in sorry conditions like us.....”

Everyone paused to rest, each person was currently contemplating on what had occurred earlier, however, the truth was like a blurry image, one could faintly see the outline of it but it was simply impossible to clearly see it.

Of the group, Zhou Huakang was silent but his entire body was covered in cold sweat, back in the day he had attempted to chase

Ning Yan, thinking back, he realised he might have prodded the wrong tree. The large maw of the black monster which seemed like it could swallow a person made Zhou Huakang shiver in fear.

The group rested for a while, eating some food to replenish their energy, the sky was already bright as Qin Jiagui retrieved the map, once again confirming their position. They had ran haphazardly and went off from his designated path.

“Eh?” A strange expression appeared on Qin Jiagui’s face as he noticed something on the map.

“What’s the matter?” Yuan Niping noticed that Qin Jiagui seemed weird as she hurriedly questioned.

Qin Jiagui had a strange expression as he muttered: “That’s weird, this map..... Some places seem to have changed their locations, they’re no longer the same.”

The group were dazed as they heard this, Zhao Shichang clutched his chest as he ambled over: “What? The map has changed? Are you sure you didn’t recall wrongly?”

Qin Jiagui also had a doubtful expression with a bitter smile on his face: “I’ve memorised this map very well, however..... It seems that there are some areas which are different, it’s simply too weird.”

Su Yu continued: “We seem to have overlooked something, this

map was a precious treasure found within the body of a Golden Gnome, since it's a precious treasure, there may actually be some special abilities that we have not realised or understood, treating it like an ordinary map could be our mistake."

As he said this, he also activated the Eye of Perception but the information regarding the map was listed as unknown.

Qin Jiagui's entire body shivered: "That's right, this map..... Is also a precious treasure, just like the ring and bracelet that you guys have acquired, there must be some sort of special ability contained within." As he said this, he became more excited as he begun to carefully scrutinise the map, however, he was unable to find anything special about it.

Zhou Shi Chang nervously asked: "Since the map has changed, will it affect our path ahead?"

Qin Jiagui shook his head: "That won't be the case, although there are a couple of changes in some areas, the overall topography remains the same."

After resting for a while more, the group continued on their way. Su Yu looked back into the distance, a look of longing appeared in his eyes as though he were hesitating, finally, he sighed as his expression became solemn, gritting his teeth as he followed the group.

They did not meet with any real danger this day, only a group of Lesser Goblins led by a small number of Greater Goblins, Su Yu,

Ma Ziyue, Qin Jiagui and the others who were tier two and higher did not act, allowing Zhou Birong, Jade, Yuan Niping and the others to fight.

Of them, Xu Ruyun's performance was the most outstanding, he managed to kill two of the Greater Goblin and looked to be the strongest of those at tier one.

Only one person managed to advance a tier, it was the honest looking middle aged man Huo Shan, with some luck and effort, he had managed to kill a Greater Goblin allowing him to advance to tier one, this Huo Shan had lived on a farm before moving into the city to work, he had the advantage of strength allowing him to be the second after Xu Ruyun to reach tier one amongst the newcomers.

After becoming a tier one dark iron warrior, his ability was very unique, it was unknown whether his ability had any relation to his previous job, when he used his ability, his right hand would open up and a sphere like coal briquette would form on his palm.

Once this charcoal briquette was tossed and came into contact with something, it would explode like a hand grenade, its might certainly could not be overlooked and also had a concussive effect. Such an ability was really outstanding amongst the tier one group, having multiple uses.

Chapter 138: Changes Of The Necklace

When comparing abilities that were gained at the tier one stage, it could be said that Huo Shan's ability was much stronger than Xu Ruyun, however, Xu Ruyun's combat potential was simply too strong, he was unnaturally calm and could use his surgical knives with superb proficiency, he could well be considered the number one fighter amongst the newcomers, even two Huo Shan's would likely be unable to handle a single Xu Ruyun.

This day passed swiftly and everyone managed to safely live through it, as night fell the group found a resting area, it was late into the night when fearsome roars were suddenly heard.

The people who were deep in their sleep were swiftly awakened, fear could be seen on their faces, the sound was akin to that of Ning Yan after she had completed her demonic transformation.

No one spoke in the darkness, they merely exchanged glances as they heard the sounds of an ancient demonic beast roaring in the night, Su Yu could not help but stand up, he felt an impulse to go take a look, wanting to check up on Ning Yan but was swiftly held down by Zhang Zhongmou.

Zhang Zhongmou could guess at what he was thinking.

Su Yu was merely being impulsive but swiftly regained control of himself.

"Pass me a stick." Su Yu whispered.

“Alright.” Zhang Zhongmou handed a cigarette over to him before assisting him in lighting it.

Su Yu took a deep puff, swallowing it into his lungs as he slowly sat back down against a tree before slowly blowing forth, looking at the smoke as he silently contemplated.

The roars made by Ning Yan continued through the night, it was mixed with another kind of roar, as though she were fighting with another fearsome monster.

The roars continued through a good half of the night before finally coming to a halt.

Jade’s face was filled with worry as she softly spoke: “I wonder how is Ning Yan faring, is she alright?” Back in school, her relationship with Ning Yan had been quite good, it was only when Ning Yan’s character took an abrupt change did they slowly drift apart, knowing the real reason for her change in character, Jade began to feel worried for Ning Yan.

Qin Jiagui said in a heavy voice: “Everyone forget about her, although..... Although it’s rather cruel, we are simply unable to help her. The best we can do is force ourselves to forget about her, also, from Xue Tong and Mo Tian’s reactions, Ning Yan is definitely very special, it’s possible..... that she will be able to live well within this forest. If we become sufficiently strong in the future, we may then be able to help her.....” Having spoken to this point, Qin Jiagui suddenly stopped speaking, even he was

unconvinced by his own words.

“That’s right, everyone stop thinking about it.” Su Yu suddenly spoke up.

The group were stunned as they looked over at him, Qin Jiagui and the others knew that Su Yu liked Ning Yan, amongst the group he was the one who was most likely to defend her.

Su Yu stubbed the cigarette he had in his hand against the ground, firmly pressing down as he slowly continued: “None of us are able to help her at the moment, stop thinking about it. We should think about how we are going to continue living well, how are we going to get stronger..... Only when we are sufficiently strong will we be able to help her..... we are currently just too weak.....”

His last words were spoken very softly, as though they were spoken to himself. His entire body was shivering as he held the stubbed cigarette within, he hated himself for being so weak, when Ning Yan exploded forth with that frightening strength, he was unable to find the courage to face it, this was simply because he was too weak..... just too weak.....

Strength! I need to become stronger, only when I am sufficiently strong will I be able to protect whoever I want to protect, believe in whatever notion I wish to believe in!

There was never a moment in his life where Su Yu thirsted so much for power, within his right hand, that drop of Golden Blood

began to roil, 'it' could feel the intentions of its master, slowly releasing streaks of gold as it swam throughout his body, suddenly flowing towards the origin force necklace that was on his neck.

The necklace seemed to have been aggravated by something as it suddenly began to wildly suck Su Yu's strange energy, streaks of source energy that belonged to the necklace gradually began to have traces of awakening.

Su Yu felt his heart lurch as he grabbed the origin force necklace, he could see a faint blue light shining from it, however, when carefully scrutinising it, there was simply nothing special.

"Weird, could that earlier feeling have been an illusion..... that feeling..... It was as though something was in a deep sleep within the necklace, it seemed like it had almost awakened....."

Su Yu silently contemplated.

This night, no one was able to sleep soundly, it was only when the sky began to brighten did they finally fall asleep, however, they were swiftly awakened by an assault from a group of goblins.

Three Greater Goblins led a group of fifteen Lesser Goblins as they charged forward.

The group swiftly leapt to their feet, Qin Jiagui's right shoulder was raised as a metallic cylinder suddenly appeared, 'Chi!' the Steel Missile was sent flying forwards.

“Kaboom!”

The missile exploded within the pack of Lesser Goblins, immediately blowing four Lesser Goblins apart.

Xu Ruyun did not speak, his body was stooped low as his right hand waved, immediately slicing the throat of a Lesser Goblin.

The wooden club of this Lesser Goblin was thrown away as it clutched its throat while fleeing, it was not long before it fell to the ground, twitching before it finally died.

Huo Shan held his precious case within his left hand while his right hand stretched forth, strange energy began to gather within his palm, a charcoal briquette slowly appeared before he tossed it out.

The charcoal briquette smashed into the ground with a ‘Bang!’ immediately killing a Lesser Goblin while heavily injuring another.

Jade began to continually draw runes in the air with Su Yu protecting her, if any monster approached he would easily deflect it. Finally, Jade was done drawing her rune as a streak of white rushed forward.

“Boom!”

The Greater Goblin which she had locked onto gave a ferocious howl as crisp cracking noises sounded out from its chest, the bones within had thoroughly disintegrated as its back exploded, bones mixed with innards flew out from its back before it fell to the ground, dead.

The Three Greater Goblins had been swiftly taken care of and the few remaining Lesser Goblins noticed that the situation was grim as they swiftly turned to flee, Wang Xiang, Mao Mingzhu and the other newcomers wanted to chase but Qin Jiagui said in a heavy voice: “Don’t chase, the forest is filled with many unknown dangers.”

The new people immediately halted as they heard these words, they quickly calmed down as they swiftly retreated back.

Since the day before, they had merely met with low tier monsters, besides Huo Shan who had advanced to tier one, the others maintained their status quo.

Zhao Shichang said with delight: “Doesn’t this mean that we’ve reached the outer fringes of the forest? Usually, the deeper we are in the forest the more dangerous the monsters, the outer fringes should be much safer. I think..... It may be possible that we could be exiting this forest soon, we’ve only met with goblins since yesterday.”

Hearing these words, several people began to nod their head, his words did make sense and they began to fill with anticipation.

Having eaten some food, the group continued forward. Qin Jiagui had gotten their bearings as they continued in a new direction, Zhao Shichang had carved a clear marking of a '10' on the trunk of a tree.

After they walked a certain distance, he would always leave a marking on a trunk in case they needed to retrace their steps.

Su Yu once again offered to assist Jade with carrying Lei Rui but was rejected once again, Jade wanted to personally carry Lei Rui.

Su Yu came to a silent realisation, Jade's determination was really outstanding, once a woman set her mind to something, it could even be greater than that of a guy's determination.

Zhao Shichang could have made the right conjecture, along the way they met up with only low tier monsters, there were some Lesser Goblins, Gnomes and even the strongest of the monsters was merely a Greater Goblin.

Initially there were still packs of goblins with Greater Goblins that attacked them, however as the road wore on, they encountered groups with merely ten odd Lesser Goblins that fled at the sight of them.

Initially the group really believed in Zhao Shichang's deduction, they felt that they were at the outer fringes of the forest and would be out of it in no time, however, after half a day of walking, there was still endless amounts of forest before them, the excitement and anticipation within their hearts gradually died down.

As Zhao Shichang used his boneblade to clear some branches blocking the path, he signaled for them to stop with a 'shhh'.

Qin Jiagui who was following behind him acknowledged as he swiftly came to a halt.

This was already the twelfth day since they entered the forest, besides the school, supermarket and police station, this was the fourth building that they had come into contact with.

At the back, Su Yu, Ma Ziye and Zhang Zhongmou swiftly moved forward. Zhao Shichang continued to open a path with his bone knife, clearing the branches and vines that were in the way allowing for the entire group to see what was in front of them.

The vegetation in this area was extremely dense, countless numbers of vines were hanging from tall trees, there were even several plants and flowers that could not be identified. Amongst the lush greenery, there were even a number of strange yellow flowers that seems like stars amongst the green.

Within this lushly vegetated area stood a huge building, at this moment, there were several vines snaking along the walls, as though the building had existed here for a long period of time.

The door of this building was very impressive, above the marble doors were nine large golden characters: The First People's republic hospital of S.Z. city.

At this moment, looking from a distance at this building that was surrounded by thick vegetation, one could feel desolation, as though that place no longer had any life within it.

“Hospital? It seems like it’s been in this forest for a long period of time.” Qin Jiagui measured from a distance.

Zhao Shichang stopped his hacking of the vines as he looked back: “What’s the plan, does everyone wish to go forward to check it out? Or should we just avoid it?”

Chapter 139: Condoms

Liu Zheng hurriedly added: “We definitely have to check it out, at minimum we have to check if there’s anyone else there. Who would have imagined that such a large hospital would be in this place, that’s simply too astonishing.”

Qin Jiagui added: “Let’s go check it out, who knows, we may be able to acquire some good stuff.”

Li Dong chose to speak at this moment: “I’m opposed to the idea, we are almost out of the forest, there’s no reason for us to take this risk. The vegetation in this area is so dense, this is simply too abnormal. I feel that we should avoid this place, this hospital seems like it has been stranded here for far too long, there definitely aren’t any survivors in there, even if there were any survivors, they would have left long ago, going in now is simply pointless.”

Zhao Shichang smiled: “Li Dong, things aren’t as drastic as what you’re saying, we’ve only met with small monsters along the way and I’m actually beginning to feel bored, if there are any powerful monsters within the hospital, that would be exactly what I want. That area is so quiet, I think that there shouldn’t be too big of a danger, everyone let’s go in and take a look, who knows there may even be two beautiful nurses there, haha.”

The strength of their group was really quite strong at the moment, he was already at tier two and his voice was filled with confidence.

Zhou Huakang frowned: “My view is the same as Li Dong, there is no need to go in there, we don’t have to take any risks.”

There were mixed views within the group as Ma Ziyue spoke: “Su Yu, what do you think?”

Su Yu kept silent for a moment before speaking: “Within this forest, every area is filled with danger, it doesn’t mean that we will be able to avoid danger if we avoid this hospital. Running isn’t an option, let’s go in to take a look.”

Zhou Birong added: “I agree, you people may not know..... back then in the station when all of you suddenly appeared, to a person like me who had lost all hope..... all of you were like precious saviours..... Heroes..... who knows whether there are people within the hospital who require our assistance, as long as there is even a thousandth of a chance, I feel that we should not give up. If there are too many we won’t be able to save them, however, if there are only one or two..... We do have that ability, why should we give up on helping others?”

Zhou Birong’s words were moving, even Li Dong and Zhou Huakang were rendered speechless. Who knew that they had unknowingly become heroes in the eyes of others, such a feeling was extremely fresh to them, giving them a strange tingling sensation.

Zhao Shichang laughed, with Su Yu agreeing to exploring the hospital, this matter was already set in stone. Within the group, Su Yu’s opinion was key.

Zhao Shichang's right hand stretched forth as a bone blade extended outwards, he began to clear up the path leading towards the hospital once again.

The vegetation in this area was simply too dense, every inch forward was done with much difficulty. Zhong Zhongmou and Ma Ziye had both pulled out their Red Lotus Sword and Star Blades as they began to clear the dense vegetation blocking their path, creating a small road for them to move forward.

Su Yu was following at the back, cautiously looking in all directions. As for Xu Ruyun, Liu Zheng, Huo Shan and the other newcomers, they did not have a vote within the group and could only follow along after Su Yu and the others had come to a decision.

The short thirty metre road took the group almost ten minutes to finally create a path, reaching one of the walls before finally scaling it using the vines that snaked it.

There had been an electronic door at the front of the hospital but it was currently broken, traces of blood that had turned black could be seen on the ground, testament to the vicious battle that must have occurred here long ago.

Besides Ning Yan who had already left the group, the remaining eighteen people had entered the hospital.

Su Yu, Ma Ziye, Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou, Zhao Shichang

and the others naturally split out, moving out in a fan shape as they heightened their senses.

This hospital was extremely big, going past the large main doors, what entered their vision were flowers and shrubs along with a rock garden, below the fake mountain was a lake that had already dried up, decorative masses of flowers and shrubs lined the two sides, it was a large carpark and several different types of cars were parked there. These cars were mostly in states of disrepair, either overturned or smashed, none of the cars were left unscathed.

Zhang Zhongmou stopped before a car, his face an expression of regret: “Look here, this is my favourite sort of car, it’s such a pity.....” The windows of the car had been completely smashed, he attempted to open the car doors but they were bent at a weird angle and could not be opened.

He grunted as he exerted force but was still unable to budge it, his strange energy was mainly concentrated within his head and his strength was merely three to four times that of an ordinary human, the door was stuck and he simply could not budge it, causing him to curse out loud.

Su Yu walked forward as he gently stretched his left hand forward, gingerly giving a tug as the scraping noise of metal being ripped resounded, the entire door had been ripped off and he continued to toss it away.

“Damn, if this were our world you would definitely be the superman of the 21st century.” Zhang Zhongmou gave a thumbs up to Su Yu before beginning to sweep the interior of the car of all the

shards of glass, his entire person entered as he made himself comfortable, enjoying the feeling of being in a luxurious car.

The others were looking around at the rest of the cars when Zhou Huakang suddenly shouted: “Hey, look what I’ve found over here.”

The group were stunned as they looked over, he was doing something similar to Zhang Zhongmou, climbing into a off-road vehicle that was not too seriously damaged, rummaging before bringing out a case with an elated expression on his face.

Yuan Niping who was not far away noticed this, she clearly recognised the object as she gasped.

Qin Jiagui responded: “Zhou Huakang, you’re really too bored, it’s merely a box of condoms, what’s there to be so shocked about.”

Zhou Huakang had actually found a box of condoms within the car.

“What do you mean a box? There are several of them, there’s durex, jissbon, ultra thin, ribbed, all the high end stuff. The owner of this car actually left so many of this in the car, damn, that fellow must have had tons of fun in the car.”

Ma Ziyue curiously tugged at Yuan Niping: “You actually recognise those condoms? You’re really awesome.” Although she had heard of condoms, she had not seen them before. Since young, she had buried herself in martial arts, her family was very strict and she

had never seen a condom before, at this moment, Yuan Niping was able to recognise them with a single glance making her feel impressed.

Yuan Niping's face immediately blushed as she looked over at Qin Jiagui, coughing twice before replying: "I inadvertently saw it one time, what are you thinking about."

Amongst the group, the most agitated was the bus driver Shi Guozhong, with all these luxurious cars before him, his eyes were gleaming with happiness. Although he had driven cars for over ten years, he had never driven a luxurious car before, at this moment he had chosen high-end car as he began fussing around, suddenly making the car start up.

The others were stunned as Zhang Zhongmou cried out: "Uncle, where did you find the keys to the car? How did you manage to get it to start?"

Shi Guozhang was really excited, he had managed to start up the car as he swiftly drove two rounds, going faster and faster before the piercing noise of the car breaking was suddenly heard, the car skid beautifully before parking neatly into a lot, seemingly smooth and easy.

"Uncle, so cool!" Zhang Zhongmou yelled.

The car had stopped as Shi Guozhong walked out with a dismayed expression.

“It’s useless, within this forest, a car simply has no uses. Sigh.....” Shi Guozhong lamented.

Zhang Zhongmou continued rather excitedly: “Uncle’s driving skills are really top notch, if we get out of this god forsaken place, uncle must teach me how to drive like that!”

Shi Guozhong had a faint smile on his face: “Alright, no problems, as long as you learn earnestly, you’ll be good in no time.”

By the side, Qin Jiagui was moving closer after scolding Zhou Huakang, he secretly nudged him: “Durex ultra thin?, hand me a box.”

Zhou Huakang had a strange smile on his face, Qin Jiagui knocked his head as he whispered: “We’re all guys, there’s nothing to laugh about.”

“Yes yes, haha, you’re really fortunate with a girlfriend by your side. However, it seems like you haven’t had the chance these past few days, this hospital..... seems like a rather good place.”

Zhou Huakang laughed boisterously as he placed a box within his pocket, shifting his gaze towards the blonde haired Mao Mingzhu who was beside Wang Xiang, ill intent could clearly be seen in his eyes. At this moment, he was really grateful to Su Yu, it was all thanks to him forcing them in that he managed to get such a good chance.

For the others girls like Jade, Ma Ziyue, Zhou Birong and the others, he did not dare to have untoward thoughts. However, towards Mao Mingzhu who had just joined, her connection was not close to the others and would be the best candidate to act against. Also, no matter how he acted towards Mao Mingzhu, it was unlikely that Su Yu and the others would intervene, he only needed to pay close attention to Wang Xiang, he seemed like the partner to Mao Mingzhu.

Zhou Huakang began to contemplate how to act, everyone was now gathered together and it was simply too difficult to act now, he began to discreetly plan.

His mind was churning fast as he suddenly spoke up: “Everyone, the hospital is simply too big, shouldn’t we split up in order to save time?”

Ma Ziyue looked over at him as she frowned: “Split up? Wouldn’t that be very dangerous?”

Zhou Huakang laughed: “We’ve already been here for so long and made so much noise, if there are really monsters here, they would have already run out, how dangerous could it be?”

Chapter 140: Splitting Up Into Groups

Earlier when Shi Guozhong had driven the car, the car braking noise had been extremely piercing, if there really were any monsters, it was most likely that they would have exposed themselves. However, it seemed that it was quiet all around and what Zhou Huakang said did seem to make some sense, there were likely no monsters within the vicinity of the hospital.

“Hey, Zhou Huakang’s words seem to make sense.” It was rather rare that Qin Jiagui would agree with his thinking as he continued: “The hospital is indeed quite large, let’s just split up into groups to better explore the place, even if we meet with any danger, we can scream to alert the others. This would be better than slowly searching, we can’t possibly waste an entire day here.”

“That’s right, that’s right.” Zhou Huakang secretly nudged Li Dong, signaling to him with his eyes.

Li Dong looked over at him and immediately knew what he was up to as he acquiesced as well.

Su Yu frowned slightly, splitting up to act would drastically increase the danger, however, Qin Jiagui and Zhou Huakang did make some sense, this hospital was simply too big, buildings could be seen all around and if they were to carefully comb every inch, that would indeed take up a lot of time. Splitting into a few groups was not a bad idea, looking at the peaceful surroundings, the likelihood of monsters being present was indeed quite low.

Although Su Yu did not feel great about the plan, he did not reject the idea.

Noticing Su Yu's silence, Qin Jiagui immediately acted: "So we'll go with this plan, everyone split up into your own groups, don't move about haphazardly, each group must choose a destination and shout if you spot anything, if nothing is found, we'll gather back at the parking lot."

Ma Ziyue pondered for a moment before adding: "For safety, each group should have at least a tier two or tier three dark iron warrior, don't you think that would be better?"

Qin Jiagui laughed: "That idea seems workable, alright, the large surgical building no.1 will be handled by myself and Niping, the rest of you can freely choose, let's leave the food out here with someone to guard it."

Su Yu noticed Jade placing Lei Rui down on the ground as he spoke up: "I'll stay behind, Jade, you stay behind as well." He seemed to feel a strange danger in the place, however he did not voice out his concern. He did not wish for Jade to take any risks, thus coming to such a decision.

Jade nodded, it was pointless to act brave.

Zhang Zhongmou then spoke: "Qin Jiagui, will the two of you be alright?"

Qin Jiagui had a faint smile on his face: “That building isn’t too big, Yuan Niping and I will be sufficient, we’ll make a move first.” Pulling Yuan Niping’s hand as he hurriedly moved towards the building.

Yuan Niping seemed to have guessed something as her face was tinged with a shade of red, seemingly more alluring.

Looking at the backs of Qin Jiagui and Yuan Niping, Zhang Zhongmou called out: “Hey, who’s willing to team up with me.”

Zhao Shichang also rotated his left arm before adding: “Who’s willing to come along with me?”

Liu Zheng lifted his hand: “Brother Zhang, I’ll go with you, you must look after me.” before gingerly running over to Zhang Zhongmou’s side.

Zhou Huakang pulled Li Dong as he walked before Wang Xiang and Mao Mingzhu while laughing: “The two of you will be grouped up with us, let’s go check out the general medicine on the second floor.”

Mao Mingzhu’s expression changed, Zhou Huakang and Li Dong had an altercation with Wang Xiang previously, now that they wanted to form a group, it was clear that they had ill intentions. She was planning to reject that but Wang Xiang actually nodded: “Alright.”

Zhao Shichang walked over as he exclaimed: “Zhou Huakang, are the two of you planning to create trouble? The four of you will form a group with me, let’s head out together.”

Zhou Huakang’s expression changed as he cursed in his heart “This dog is really annoying”. He suddenly smiled before replying: “Our group has sufficient people, too many people is a waste of resources.”

Zhao Shichang harrumphed, he was a tier two warrior while Zhou Huakang was only at tier one, he simply did not care for his views as he indifferently replied: “The four of you don’t have a single tier two amongst you, that’s simply too dangerous. I’m actually being considerate for all of you, let’s go together.” He was thinking that if they created any trouble, he would have to teach them a good lesson.

Ma Ziyue walked to Su Yu’s side as she whispered: “Zhou Huakang is clearly forming the group to cause trouble, aren’t you gonna meddle?”

A faint smile appeared on Su Yu’s face as he calmly said: “They are all causes for distress within the group, is there a need to care about them? Zhao Shichang has actually created more trouble.”

Ma Ziyue was stunned, it was only now that she understood Su Yu’s plan. Such a group was fine if they did not create trouble, if anything happened, one or two people dying would not really affect the group.

In reality, whether it be Li Dong, Zhou HUakang or Wang Xiang, they were indeed people who could result in instability within the group, them fighting each other was something that Su Yu was more than happy to see.

Su Yu turned to look at Ma Ziyue before suddenly spreading his hands: “Do you think I’m cruel?”

Ma Ziyue thought for a moment before sighing as she shook her head: “I’m also clear that Wang Xiang cannot possibly coexist with Zhou Huakang, there must be a conclusion. For Li Dong and Zhou Huakang, the earlier they get rid of Wang Xiang the better. If he advances further, he may cause their deaths. If we stop them now, we are also helping Wang Xiang in dealing with them. I understand what you’re trying to do.”

Li Dong and Zhou Huakang had walked out of the school together with them but were only at tier one, it could be seen that their aptitude was really lack lustre. As for Wang Xiang, he was a hooligan and his eyes had a vicious light in them, he was unrestrained and if he advanced any further, he would definitely act viciously against them.

Su Yu calmly continued: “Wang Xiang has long regarded Li Dong and Zhou Huakang as our comrades, his hate doesn’t only remain with Li Dong and Zhou Huakang, it also extends to us. Such a person cannot be allowed to grow.”

Ma Ziyue suddenly understood, Su Yu had steeled his heart to let Wang Xiang die here, this was why he had not acted out to stop the formation of the group.

If Su Yu made use of his individual strength, he could easily take care of Wang Xiang. However, this would make the newcomers that had come together with Wang Xiang feel estranged, causing the group to be filled with distrust, that could potentially cause the group to eventually fall apart.

They could certainly kill off all the newcomers together with Wang Xiang, however, they were unwilling to do so unless it was absolutely necessary, this was their moral baseline.

Only Wang Xiang who was such a clear threat had to be exterminated.

Zhao Shichang obviously did not know what Su Yu and Qin Jiagui were planning, he had thus acted to prevent any further commotion from occurring. By then he would be able to teach them a lesson, such a feeling made him feel awesome.

Understanding Su Yu's intentions, Ma Ziyue softly said: "Then let me join their group as well."

Su Yu acquiesced, at this moment if they were to speak up to tell Zhao Shichang not to concern himself with the matter, that would simply be too obvious. This would then let the others know that Su Yu was purposefully allowing this.

Ma Ziyue walked over with a faint smile on her face: "Let me join your group as well, our group is quite large, we can go search that largest building there."

Zhao Shichang laughed: "Sure."

Zhou Huakang had an expression of helplessness, his original plans had fallen through, with Ma Ziyue and Zhao Shichang tagging along, what could they possibly do? He grudgingly acquiesced as the group headed towards the largest building within the hospital.

Besides Su Yu, Jade, Huo Shan and Jade who was in a vegetative state, the others had formed a group with Zhang Zhongmou as they headed to one of the buildings.

Su Yu and the others remained not only to look after the food but to also be in a better position to act if anything bad occurred.

"If anything bad happens, you people stay to look after the food, I will be fine on my own." Su Yu instructed Jade and Huo Shan.

Huo Shan had been chosen by Su Yu to stay behind, he was an honest man and also one of the strongest amongst the tier one with his ability, with him together with Jade, Su Yu could feel more relieved.

Ma Ziyue, Zhao Shichang, Li Dong, Zhou Huakang, Wang Xiang and Mao Mingzhu had moved towards the largest building within the hospital, this building was the largest within the hospital, it was at least thirty odd storeys high, air conditioning compressors could be seen along the outer region of the building, vines could also be seen snaking along the walls, the hospital must have been

here for a really long period of time.

What met them within the large building was a large hall, there were elevators by the side as well as rows of chairs that had been destroyed, fissures could be seen along the walls, clear signs that a fierce battle had been fought within this area.

The elevators were out of order but there were a flight of stairs by the side as Ma Ziyue smiled: "This building is simply too big, let's split up to work. Zhao Shichang you take this floor, I will check the second one and the rest of you can go to the third one."

Zhao Shichang was dazed hearing Ma Ziyue's words but Zhao Shichang quickly acknowledged: "Alright, let's go."

Zhao Shichang seemed as though he still wanted to say something but Ma Ziyue glared at him as she quickly added: "Alright that's the plan. I'll head up this second floor first." before she swiftly began to run up the stairs.

Zhao Shichang bitterly smiled, he was not dumb and could finally understand Ma Ziyue's intentions, thinking back to Ma Ziyue and Su Yu whispering before she suddenly joined the group.

"So that's Su Yu's intention, he actually wishes for them to go up against each other."

Zhao Shichang finally understood, he did not think much more as he headed into the walkway.

With the surroundings so quiet, it was quite clear that it was unlikely to contain any monsters of living people. The reason why they were searching was just a precautionary measure, as for Qin Jiagui and Su Yu acquiescing, it was for other reasons and not really to find any survivors.

Ma Ziyue reached the second floor as she turned to Zhou Huakang and the other three: “You guys head up to the third floor, leave the second one to me.”

“Alright, relax sister Ma.” Zhou Huakang was really grateful to Ma Ziyue and even his addressing of her had changed, if Ma Ziyue really wanted to be his sister, he would be besides himself with joy, Ma Ziyue’s strength was definitely the real deal.

Wang Xiang clearly knew that Zhou Huakang and Li Dong were finding ways to deal with him but he did not seem to care, not even choosing to reject the idea. Ma Ziyue found this very strange, Zhou Huakang and Li Dong were both at tier one while Wang Xiang was only at tier zero, could he really be so stupid as to allow Zhou Huakang and Li Dong to take the chance to act against him?

Ma Ziyue was puzzled as she watched Li Dong and the four others disappear up the stairs to the third storey.

Qin Jiagui held Yuan Niping’s hand as they walked into the surgery building no.1.

There were signs of the area being destroyed everywhere,

however, Qin Jiagui was not in the mood to search but rather pulled Yuan Niping along, swiftly finding a room and noticing two sick beds there as he quickly locked the doors.

“Jiagui, what’s the matter? What do you want to do?” Yuan Niping timidly asked as though she did not know what was happening, however, the blush on her face was already becoming redder.

Qin Jiagui had finally locked the door, sighing, he turned to hug Yuan Niping as he softly whispered: “You really don’t know what I want to do?”

Yuan Niping bit her lips as she softly replied: “I really don’t..... Ah.....”

Her words were cut short as Qin Jiagui suddenly sealed her lips, the two people falling onto a single bed.....

Wang Xiang and Mao Mingzhu held hands as they followed behind Zhou Huakang and Li Dong as the floor people followed the stairs towards the third storey. They had just reached the third storey when Wang Xiang suddenly pushed Mao Mingzhu towards Zhou Huakang and Li Dong before suddenly turning and wildly running down the stairs.

Mao Mingzhu was stunned, she did not understand what had happened. Li Dong and Zhou Huakang were similarly dazed, they did not speak as they swiftly ran after Wang Xiang.

Mao Mingzhu was still confused, looking at Zhou Huakang and Li Dong chasing after Wang Xiang, she worried for his safety as she hurriedly chased.

When she finally reached the fifth storey, she noticed that Wang Xiang was no longer running. A smile was plastered on his face as he said to Li Dong and Zhou Huakang: “..... Big brothers, this little one understands your intentions, I really mean it, I’m willing to hand her over to the both of you, I’ve never thought of seeking revenge, I swear.....”

Li Dong and Zhou Huakang exchanged glances, earlier when Wang Xiang had suddenly fled, they had imagined that Wang Xiang had wanted to flee as they chased him. Who knew that once they caught up to him at the fifth floor, he had actually stopped, respectfully addressing them and even telling them that he was willing to hand Mao Mingzhu over to them, this made them feel excited but also puzzled.

When they had made fun of Mao Mingzhu, they did not have any funny ideas, however, right now ill intent filled their minds.

“Haha, since brother is able to recognise our greatness, we won’t reject your kind offer.....” Zhou Huakang had a sinister smile, he was laughing in his heart at the stupidity of Wang Xiang, did he really believe that they would let him off if Mao Mingzhu was given to them? Haha, they would do his girlfriend in front of him before killing him, filling him with hopelessness and regret!

Zhou Huakang laughed sinisterly as he turned, suddenly grabbing Mao Mingzhu who had just reached the fifth floor.

Mao Mingzhu was stunned, she wanted to say something but Zhou Huakang had already clamped his hands down on her mouth, afraid that she would scream alerting Zhao Shichang and Ma Ziye who were below them.

Chapter 141: New 666 Beast

Li Dong coldly measured Wang Xiang, he was not foolish and would not be hoodwinked by a few words from Wang Xiang, the strange energy within his right hand began to surge, if Wang Xiang did any unnatural movements, he would immediately act to kill him.

Wang Xiang had an appeasing smile on his face, without a single trace of unhappiness or hatred.

Mao Mingzhu's eyes were wide as she stared at Wang Xiang, she simply could not believe her eyes and ears, she struggled violently but was punched viciously in the stomach by Zhou Huakang, immediately weakening from the pain in her gut.

Zhou Huakang swiftly ripped off Mao Mingzhu's clothing, using a cloth to firmly tie her hands as well as one to gag her mouth.

Wang Xiang's actions together with the fist in her stomach had caused both her physical body and spirit to be broken, her retaliation was rather frail.

Zhou Huakang pushed Mao Mingzhu to the side.

Wang Xiang and Li Dong watched from the side, Li Dong could not help but swallow his saliva, he was barely able to restrain himself but he knew that he had to keep an eye on Wang Xiang, just in case.

Wang Xiang continued to smile as he watched the scene unfold before him, it was as though the women currently being violated was not his girlfriend, as though he was not acquainted with the person who was trying to resist, from his appearance, one could not feel anger, as though he were looking forward to go up as well.

Li Dong sneered, Wang Xiang's actions were disdainful, even though he was extremely afraid of death, if it were his girlfriend who was treated in such a manner, he would definitely put his life on the line to defend her. This Wang Xiang was merely a hooligan and by all rights he should not have been so cold blooded, who knew that he was actually a useless scoundrel.

Li Dong's face was filled with disdain, he knew of Zhou Huakang's plans, it was simply impossible for them to allow Wang Xiang to live, even if Wang Xiang did not act against them, no one wanted a possible threat by their sides.

He was distracted for a brief moment when Wang Xiang suddenly struck, opening his mouth as twenty odd teeth actually started flying out.

“Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu!” Crisp sounds rang out, Zhou Huakang did not manage to react in time as his face, arms and body became riddled with twenty odd small holes.

“Aaaahhhh!” The twenty odd teeth had entered his body before he reacted, the pain made him miserably cry as he turned his head, Wang Xiang's mouth which had no more teeth actually spat a big

mouthful of saliva.

This mouthful of saliva landed on Zhou Huakang's face, immediately causing 'Chi! Chi!' noises as he felt an intense pain, his eyes seemed as though needles were piercing them and he instantly lost his vision.

After acquiring strange energy, Wang Xiang's saliva was actually more corrosive than aqua regia, Zhou Huakang had a moment of carelessness which resulted in a successful sneak attack.

"Aaaahhhh!" Zhou Huakang continued to howl, his eyes could no longer see as he haphazardly swung his two arms, the areas of his body which had been struck by the teeth had also begun to corrode, swiftly secreting yellow pus as the holes gradually became larger.

Things had occurred too suddenly, Li Dong swiftly acted as his right hand stretched forth, summoning poisonous wasps to attack but suddenly felt an intense pain at his waist area, he was astonished to realise that Mao Mingzhu had managed to struggle free, at this moment she seemed crazed as she grabbed Li Dong's genitalia before suddenly pulling with all her strength.

Mao Mingzhu had also acquired strange energy previously, although it was far from that of Li Dong's tier one stage, the strength within her hands was several times that of a normal human and she was using the strength of her entire body to pull.

Immediately, fresh blood began to spurt as Li Dong screamed, the

intense pain almost caused him to faint as his right hand instinctively smashed towards Mao Mingzhu's face.

“Pu!”

Mao Mingzhu's face was smashed in as one of her eyeballs flew out, Wang Xiang seemed crazed as he opened his toothless mouth, suddenly spitting another mouthful of saliva.

Li Dong's genitals had been ripped off, the pain was simply too excruciating for him to react, the saliva coated his face as he immediately began to scream like Zhou Huakang, Li Dong had fared slightly better than Zhou Huakang, he had not been pierced by any teeth. In his terror, he quickly jumped on his feet and attempted to break through the window to go outside.

Upon being hit by the saliva, he had spotted the semi broken window by the side and in his fright, he had used all his strength to smash into it.

“Pang!”

Glass shattered as Li Dong's body flew out of the window.

Although this was the fifth floor, Li Dong knew that with his current physical prowess, this fall would not be able to kill him, however, if he remained, he would definitely be killed. Zhou Huakang was already blind and had over twenty holes in his body, the holes were continually growing larger and it was clear he

would definitely die.

As for himself, he had been hit by the corrosive saliva of Wang Xiang and his eyes were swiftly going blind, under such a circumstance, staying behind to face Wang Xiang and Mao Mingzhu was suicide because even if he killed them, he would surely die.

He did not know that with the random smash of his fist, Mao Mingzhu was nearly dead.

Wang Xiang watched as Li Dong crazily jumped out the window, ignoring him as he turned to look at Zhou Huakang who was flailing about.

Zhou Huakang could no longer see, his eyes were already corroded as yellow pus was secreted, it was extremely itchy as he began to claw at his face, he suddenly felt something mushy within his hands, he had actually plucked out his own eyeballs.

Wang Xiang no longer cared about Zhou Huakang as he went forward with a strange smile on his face, slowly taking off his top as he covered the twisted naked body of Mao Mingzhu who was lying on the ground.

Mao Mingzhu's skull had already been cracked, her face was caved in and she was clearly not far away from death. A single eyeball had flown out leaving one behind that could barely make out Wang Xiang's figure.

“Xiang..... Brother Xiang.....” Mao Mingzhu’s lips trembled as she gasped in a barely discernible voice.

Wang Xiang’s expression was very complicated, it looked like a mix between a laugh and a cry as he muttered: “Mingzhu, do you know? I really love you, really..... however, I’ve never said it. I really..... really thought about marrying you..... ke..... ke..... ke.....” An evil grin appeared on his face, his teeth had been spat out and his cheeks were sunken in but he was gradually recovering his previous looks, new teeth were slowly growing out.

“As for those damned people..... I want them..... I want them all to die..... ke ke.....”

On his exposed upper body, on the back of his smooth neck, three small numbers slowly appeared, gradually becoming clearer before forming the ‘666’ symbol.

“They wish to kill me..... wish to kill this granddaddy..... haha..... want to kill me? Dream on. No one can kill me, anyone who wishes me dead will die by my hands..... Mingzhu, I really love you, even if you die, you will only die by my hands. Even if you die, you are still my woman.” Suddenly, his five fingers were like hooks as they clamped down on Mao Mingzhu’s throat, twisting as a crisp ‘Crack!’ rang out, snapping her neck in two.

Mao Mingzhu died as a ball of black energy floated from her body, entering the neck of Wang Xiang causing the ‘666’ symbol to become even clearer.

Wang Xiang used his clothes to tightly wrap Mao Mingzhu's naked body before gently caressing her face, slowly closing her wide open eyes.

By the side, Zhou Huakang's yells were gradually becoming weaker, his upper body corroded to the point of no longer having a human form.

Wang Xiang stood up, walking slowly towards Zhou Huakang with eyes filled with viciousness and hatred, his current hatred was not something that simple words could describe,

Li Dong cried as he fell from the window, this immediately alerted Su Yu and the others who were in the parking lot.

Su Yu frowned, he could hear that the miserable cry had come from Li Dong.

What was going on? Could it be that Li Dong and Zhou Huakang were unable to deal with Wang Xiang who was not even at tier one?

At this moment, Qin Jiagui and Yuan Niping had walked out of the surgery building no.1, their faces were filled with contentment.

Chapter 142: Terrifying Hospital

“Aaaahhhh!” Suddenly, an extremely bone-chilling cry could be heard from a distance, this was a cry from Zhou Huakang.

Su Yu and the others felt their heart lurch as the miserable howls of Li Dong came from a distance: “Save me, save me!”

“I’ll go take a look.” Su Yu frowned as his figure flashed, instantly rushing towards the largest building.

Jade yelled: “Be careful!”

Su Yu waved his hand nonchalantly, indicating to her not to be worried.

Qin Jiagui and Yuan Niping also heard the commotion as they hurriedly rushed over, looking towards Jade and Huo Shan as they questioned: “What’s going on?”

Jade replied: “There seems to be some problems in that area, Su Yu is rushing over to check it out.”

Qin Jiagui frowned as he suddenly raised his voice: “Everyone who can hear my voice gather back at the carpark now!”

His voice was raised as he yelled a couple of times before continuing to ask Jade about how the groups were divided up after

Niping and himself left. Jade began to fill him in as Qin Jiagui's brows scrunched.

After a while, Zhang Zhongmou came with Zhou Birong, Xu Ruyun and the others, rushing towards them.

“What's the matter? What's going on now?” Zhang Zhongmou shouted.

Qin Jiagui noticed that everyone else besides those who had entered the largest building had gathered, but Zhao Shichang and Ma Ziyue were still missing and surmised that something must have gone wrong as he said in a heavy voice: “Everyone take all the food and head towards that building.” picking up two large bags of food before swiftly running forward.

Zhang Zhongmou and the others had also heard the miserable cries of Li Dong, they did not know what had happened but under Qin Jiagui's instructions, they did not speak further as they swiftly picked up the food. Jade lifted Lei Rui from the ground as they all ran towards the building.

Upon reaching the large building, they saw Su Yu carrying Li Dong whose lower body was naked walking out from the other side of the building. Noticing Qin Jiagui and the others who were rushing over, Su Yu nodded before placing Li Dong down.

“What happened?” Qin Jiagui was alarmed as he asked, he could see that Li Dong's lower body was covered in blood, his face had corroded to a terrifying degree.

Li Dong had fallen five floors and was gravely injured, after a few howls he had fallen unconscious. When Su Yu found him, he was already unconscious.

“No idea, something must have happened.....” Su Yu spoke as his right hand went forward to press on to Li Dong’s face, strange energy in the form of qi was circulated as it swiftly prevented further corrosion of the face. Thereafter, the strange energy within Li Dong’s body began to swiftly heal his face, however, his broken genitals could not be recovered, only if the missing part was found could there be a hope for Su Yu to help, this also had to be done in a short amount of time or it would be too late.

Su Yu was not interested in helping him to find his genitals, looking at Li Dong’s naked lower body, Su Yu surmised that he must have done something but could not confirm his suspicions at the moment.

“Su Yu, the others have all come down. Only Ma Ziyue, Zhao Shichang and the others within that block have not come out, something must have gone wrong within the building.” Qin Jiagui placed the bags of food down as he looked towards Su Yu.

“Alright, leave a few people behind to look after the food together with Lei Rui and Li Dong, the others will follow me to see what happened.” Su Yu was worried about Ma Ziyue but was still rather calm, Ma Ziyue was at tier three and also had the Star Blade, even if she suddenly met two tier three beast soldiers at the level of the Single Eyed Zombie King, she would not be able to win but also not be in too much danger.

Qin Jiagui acquiesced: “You, me and Zhang Zhongmou will go check it out, the rest can stay here. Even Ma Ziyue has not responded, I’m afraid the danger won’t be small.”

Su Yu glanced over at him: “Alright, let’s go.” before rushing into the building.

Qin Jiagui looked back: “All of you be careful, no matter what happens, don’t be curious and act on your own. If there’s any problem, just remember to shout.”

“I know, Jiagui, just be careful.” Yuan Niping was extremely worried for Qin Jiagui, after experiencing the moment within the surgery building, Yuan Niping was even more inseparable from Qin Jiagui.

Qin Jiagui nodded before going with Su Yu and Zhang Zhongmou into the building.

The others exchanged glances as they watched them leave, cautiously looking at their surroundings. Initially, everyone believed that this area was without any danger and had been rather relaxed, who knew that Zhou Huakang and Li Dong would actually scream out miserably, bone-chilling to the extreme. Ma Ziyue and Zhao Shichang had also disappeared and this was certainly alarming.

Huo Shan opened his case as he retrieved an off white pants, covering the lower body of Li Dong.

The few females saw Li Dong's mangled genitals and looks of disgust could be seen on their faces.

The back of this building was covered with vines, at this moment no one was paying attention to this area as a window was pushed open, a figure could be seen climbing out of it.

This figure's upper body was naked with a tattoo at his shoulder, his entire body was covered in blood, as he climbed out of the window, he made use of the vines and was like a lizard as he slowly climbed down.

As he occasionally lifted his head, one could see his face which was filled with a frightening hatred, his eyes seemed to be dyed red.

The '666' symbol on the back of his neck flashed as though there were some hidden power within, stirring restlessly within his body, appearing tough yet unstable at the same time.

This person with a naked upper torso was precisely Wang Xiang.

Not long after, he had finally climbed to the bottom as he slowly circumvented the building, looking from a distance at Jade, Zhou Birong, Xu Ruyun, Huo Shan, Liu Zheng and the others who were guarding the main entrance, a sinister and terrifying smile suddenly appearing on his face.

Su Yu, Qin Jiagui and Zhang Zhongmou had rushed into the large

building, they could clearly see the fissures on the walls within which exposed the vines outside, these vines seems to be covered with small holes and were releasing smoke.

As Su Yu and the two others rushed in, the level was already filled with thick mist.

“Be careful, there’s poison!” Su Yu had just spoken but he could not help but suck in a little, he realised that there was no strange feeling and the strange energy within his body did not react, only then did he calm down.

After the few encounters over the past few days, Su Yu knew that the strange energy within his body was able to counteract poisons, if this mist contained poison, his strange energy would definitely have a reaction.

Su Yu looked back to see Qin Jiagui and Zhang Zhongmou holding their noses: “Relax, it seems like there isn’t poison in the mist after all.”

Hearing Su Yu, Qin Jiagui and Zhang Zhongmou released their hands.

Qin Jiagui sucked in a breath before nodding: “This mist feels a little moist, it seems like ordinary water vapour, however..... they are actually being released from the plants within the fissures of the walls..... This is really rather strange.”

Zhang Zhongmou added: “Don’t forget, what world is this? Strange things are supposed to be the norm.”

Qin Jiagui nodded as Su Yu began to raise his voice, calling out Ma Ziyue’s name.

“Let’s go.” The building was very large and even with his shouting no one answered, Su Yu and the other two could not help but slowly search from the first level.

Zhang Zhong Mou lifted a leg as he kicked open a wooden door, Zhang Zhongmou took a single glance to see that the room was empty before proceeding to the second room.

The three people continued to search while shouting for Ma Ziyue and Zhao Shichang.

“It’s simply too weird, such a large hospital but not a person in sight. Even if they all died, there should at least be some corpses.” Qin Jiagui muttered.

The deeper they went, the thicker the mist became. The vision of the three became more obscured and besides their footsteps, no other sounds could be heard. This large building which was dark and contained so much mist was clearly strange and frightening.

“Everyone, be careful.” Su Yu lowered his voice, he could sense that something was amiss, this building was definitely strange.

Zhang Zhongmou acquiesced with a grunt as his right hand waved, the Red Lotus Sword appearing within his hand.

The bright red light illuminated the area as Su Yu suddenly stretched his left hand, black scales appeared as five fingers went forward like hooks, grabbing a vine that was filled with small holes currently releasing the faint water vapour.

Su Yu exclaimed as he pulled the vine, forcefully attempting to snap it.

With Su Yu's current strength, even a steel club would be bent, who knew that the green vine would actually remain undamaged.

“Eh?” Su Yu was stunned, the black scales on his left hand raised as it began to rotate, his left arm smashed forward as the Rending Storm activated.

“Ssss!”

The green vine immediately broke off as Su Yu suddenly shouted while explosively retreating.

As the green vine broke off, large amounts of red blood spewed forth, the surrounding walls seemed to shiver from immense pain, this scene was simply too strange.

Qin Jiagui was greatly shocked as he exclaimed: “How could this be? That is.....” His hairs were standing on end.

Su Yu seemed to have noticed something as he said to Zhang Zhongmou: “Slice off this entire portion.” The Red Lotus Sword was exceptionally sharp, using it to slice the green vines was much more effective than using his Rending Storm.

Zhang Zhongmou nodded as he wielded the Red Lotus Sword, cutting through the wall like tofu to form a big hole.

As the wall began to fall off in chunks with sliced off pieces of green vine, the few people could see large amounts of fresh red blood flow out, mixed with the blood was also a half broken leg and hand.

Seeing the items on the ground, Su Yu, Qin Jiagui and Zhang Zhongmou were silent as a cold chill filled their hearts.

Chapter 143: Opening A Passageway

The broken leg and hand was covered in yellow pus, it was mostly rotten and Su Yu could tell that the hands and feet were not from that of a female, allowing him to calm down slightly.

Zhang Zhongmou continued to wield his sword, cutting up more of the green vines as large amounts of fresh blood spurted forth, this scene was simply stunning.

“What should we do now?” Zhang Zhongmou was also strangely concerned for Ma Ziyue, an expression of anxiety had appeared on his face, looking through each level within this large building was really rather difficult.

Qin Jiagui responded: “Continue looking, we don’t have any other good alternatives.” rushing forward as he spoke.

Although they realised that the green vines of the wall were definitely strange, they had no other options because these vines had already covered every inch of the wall within the hospital, it was simply impossible to slowly cut through each and everyone of them. What was most important was to find Ma Ziyue and Zhao Shichang first.

Zhang Zhongmou swung his Red Lotus Sword, chopping a door in two before kicking, the door flew in as the empty room was exposed.

“Who!” Suddenly, Su Yu roared as he turned, earlier he felt as

though there was a black shadow that had flashed behind him.

“What?” Qin Jiagui hurriedly turned, he could only see the dense mist within the walkway, his vision was too obscured to make out anything else.

Su Yu was frowning when Zhang Zhongmou who had rushed the furthest suddenly yelled.

“What’s wrong?” Qin Jiagui hurried forward.

Zhang Zhongmou held his Red Lotus Sword as he stared at the end of the hallway, up ahead, the wall had rotted off exposed an extremely large hole, surrounding the hole were countless numbers of green vines, amongst the green vines were corpses of humans, these corpses seemed to have conjoined with the vines revealing an extremely creepy scene.

Looking at the attire of these humans, Zhang Zhongmou and Qin Jiagui sucked in a breath of cold air.

These people were doctors who wore white gowns, nurses who wore their uniforms, patients who wore their sick personnel uniform, their eyes were all closed and their bodies were covered in thick juice. They were all conjoined together with the green vines painting an extremely terrifying scene.

Zhang Zhongmou held the Red Lotus Sword as his entire body trembled, his goosebumps were all standing up.

Su Yu walked over from behind as he said coldly: “Indeed, this building seems to be in the control of some unknown power, all the people within this hospital seem to have died here, damn.....”

Zhang Zhongmou’s entire body was trembling as he shouted: “Then..... Then Instant Noodles and the others.....”

“She should be alright, I believe in her.” Su Yu patted Zhang Zhongmou’s shoulder as he continued calmly: “Use the Blazing Red Lotus.”

Their biggest problem right now was that they did not know the true form of their enemy, it was imperative for them to force the other party to show himself, this was why Su Yu had instructed Zhang Zhongmou to use the Blazing Red Lotus.

Zhang Zhongmou trusted Su Yu the most, since he was asked to use the Blazing Red Lotus, Zhang Zhongmou did not hesitate as he immediately pierced the Red Lotus sword forward, softly uttering: “Blazing Red Lotus!”

Zhang Zhongmou was also at tier two, his Blazing Red Lotus had become stronger as it immediately caused the monstrosity before them to burn with large amounts of blazing fire.

Su Yu and Qin Jiagui backed away slightly, the blazing fire before them had formed the shape of an enormous lotus, blooming within the hole in front of them. The fiery blaze immediately caused the mist to emit ‘Chi Chi’ noises, the originally silent hole that was

filled with vegetation suddenly began to violently trembled, thereafter they could faintly hear a terrifying roar.

Su Yu's ears twitched as he twisted his head, staring in a certain direction.

This trembling became greater and greater, the walls in all directions began to emit cracking noises as the fissures became larger.

Su Yu seemed to have grasped something as he suddenly let out a long breath, his left arm, chest and back were suddenly covered with a layer of black scales as he kicked, rushing forward as he ignored the flames released by Zhang Zhongmou.

Zhang Zhongmou could not help but gasp, Su Yu roared as the holes within his body began to wildly suck energy from the surroundings, transforming it into strange energy which gathered within his left arm. Thereafter, an explosive noise could be heard as the Rending Storm was sent forward with a frightening force.

A wall that was covered in vines ten odd metres away suddenly exploded with fresh blood, green vines and corpses, Su Yu was like a bolt of lightning as he sped past the Blazing Red Lotus, landing beside the wall as he activated the Rending Storm once more.

“Damned monster, come out!”

Su Yu roared, his right fist clenched as the Golden Blood within

his right arm began to roil, streaks of gold appeared on his black scales before finally gathering within his left hand.

Suddenly, the shrill sound of a steam whistle could be heard as the terrifying strength ignited by the Golden Blood caused a second explosion.

‘Kaboom!’

Su Yu’s face and body was immediately dyed red with blood, as for the pit within the tree that was over ten metres wide, it instantly collapsed forming a frightening black hole, within the large building, a faint indistinct roar could be heard, gradually becoming clearer.

At the back, Qin Jiagui and Zhang Zhongmou were stunned speechless, Su Yu’s strength and ferocity was simply astounding.

Qin Jiagui’s palms were drenched with cold sweat, Su Yu’s performance was gradually eroding his confidence in competing with him, each time he struggled to become stronger and gained confidence, thinking he must have closed the gap with Su Yu, only to discover to his dismay that Su Yu had already run even further forward, creating an even larger gap.

This had occurred several times and Qin jia gui was slowly losing the confidence of overtaking Su Yu.

The cost of activating the Golden Blood was not small as Su Yu

panted, the walls and green vines were trembling violently, in that instant earlier, he had used the ten odd holes within his body to suck in large amounts of strange energy, filling his body before daring to dash through the Blazing Red Lotus.

This was something he had researched and discovered, if he filled his body with strange energy using the holes within it, his body's defensive capabilities rose significantly, even the Blazing Red Lotus was unable to harm his body which was filled with the strange energy. This was why Su Yu had dared to leap through the Blazing Red Lotus, however, this was a shocking sight for Zhang Zhongmou.

Of course such a state could only be maintained for a short period of time, with his entire body filled with strange energy, if he did not swiftly use it, he could possibly lose control of it, and as a result explode.

This was thus an extremely dangerous maneuver, it could not be easily used because a single mistake could result in his death.

Su Yu had utilised the power of the Golden Blood, creating an immense hole at the pit of the tree, large amounts of fresh blood was spurting forth as Su Yu used his sensitive hearing to follow the traces of the tree. There was a strange sound and he could not be bothered about the fresh blood that was spouting forth, taking a deep breath before rushing into the hole which he had made as he saw a reinforced concrete wall within. His left arm transformed, instantly becoming the immense Lizard's Arm.

Roaring as he kicked, his entire body rushed forward as the

Lizard's Arm smashed into the reinforced concrete wall.

The Lizard's Arm could increase his destructive prowess by two to three times, although his speed was reduced, his thrust was like that of a tank, how frightening was the force behind this rush?

“Rumble!”

The reinforced concrete wall immediately shattered.

At the back, the Blazing Red Lotus had already extinguished, Zhang Zhongmou wielded his sword as he rushed forward with Qin Jiagui.

“Su Yu, what's in there?” Qin Jiagui yelled, his right arm had thoroughly transformed, a metallic drum was seated on his right shoulder as the Steel Missile was readied to be fired at a moment's notice.

Zhang Zhongmou looked at the large hole which contained large amounts of blood and dismembered corpses, gritting his teeth, he also leapt in.

The Red Lotus Sword chopped large amounts of broken limbs and green vines which rushed to meet him.

From the front, piercing streaks of dazzling light shot out, Su Yu suddenly exclaimed: “Everyone, down!” as he explosively retreated backwards before proning.

Zhang Zhongmou and Qin Jiagui did not understand what was happening but they believed in Su Yu one hundred percent, immediately proning without further questions asked.

At the end of the path, dazzling lights flashed as streaks of faint blue light shot forward, like a laser which immediately disintegrated the pit of the tree and wall, causing them to collapse which formed an even larger hole.

Thereafter, the group heard the frightening roar once again, this time, the sound of it was extremely clear, as though the frightening existence were gradually nearing them.

Zhang Zhongmou's emotions were unstable, after watching the blazing light go by, he climbed back up as he said breathlessly: "Instant Noodles?" an expression of happiness on his face.

That laser beam that was shot was clearly the ability of Ma Ziyue's Star Blade, Starlight.

Starlight was extremely powerful, it had immediately disintegrated a large portion of the tree pit and walls, allowing her to finally meet up with Su Yu and the others.

The noise that Su Yu had heard earlier was actually the ragged panting and shouting of Ma Ziyue, he had continued to destroy everything in that direction, finally creating a passageway linking them to Ma Ziyue.

At this moment, Ma Ziyue's entire body was covered in fresh blood, she cut a sorry figure and her face was filled with fatigue. Back when she had been forced into activating the Starlight, she had been filled with hopelessness. Who knew that after activating it, an enormous hole would suddenly appear with Su Yu and the two others suddenly appearing like heavenly soldiers.

Her despair turned to hope as she stood dazed, rubbing her eyes as though she were doubting her vision.

Su Yu looked over at where Ma Ziyue stood, it was a large circular tree that had green vines extended in all directions, these green vines moved as they wildly danced in the air, there were large amounts of broken vines on the ground, it was clear that Ma Ziyue had been engaged in an intense battle with the vines, she was currently extremely fatigued and had used the Starlight in desperation, accidentally opening a path to meet up with Su Yu and the others.

Su Yu looked at the dancing green vines that surrounded Ma Ziyue, rushing forward without speaking a word as his left arm transformed again, regaining its black-scaled form before activating the Rending Storm.

“Chi Chi Chi”

Green vines continued to meet with the Rending Storm as they were instantly ripped apart.

Ma Ziyue had suddenly been drawn out from her despair, she was dazed for a moment before shouting: “Su Yu!” her legs gave way as she suddenly fell towards the ground.

Su Yu’s right hand stretched forth, supporting her waist to prevent her from falling.

Ma Ziyue’s arms grabbed tightly onto Su Yu, her voice shivering: “You guys finally came…….”

She had just entered the terrifying boundless walls of trees, when endless amounts of green vines had suddenly struck towards her, that fear and sense of hopelessness was simply indescribable.

“It’s alright, everything will be alright.” Su Yu assisted to stabilise Ma Ziyue’s body, his left hand continually flying forward emitting crisp ‘Pa Pa Pa’ noises as the Fang Bullet Burst was shot, immediately slicing up three green vines.

At the back, Qin Jiagui howled as his right shoulder tensed up, the Steel Missile was sent flying forward with a trail of white mist.

“Kaboom!”

The missile flew into tree wall, immediately exploding and causing countless green vines to be disintegrated.

Zhang Zhongmou wielded the Red Lotus sword as he haphazardly slashed at the green vines, although he did not know any sword techniques, the Red Lotus Sword was exceptionally sharp, together

with his strange energy which made him at least three to four times stronger than an ordinary human, his random lashing caused large amounts of green vines to be chopped.

For each vine that was chopped apart, fresh blood would spurt, causing the floor to be covered with a pool of blood which covered their feet.

“Ma Ziyue, do you know where Zhao Shichang is?” Qin Jiagui had shot the Steel Missile as he swiftly followed up with the Demolishing Iron Fist, heavily smashed the wall of the tree, fissures immediately appeared on the tree pit as the surroundings began to tremble more violently.

“No idea, my guess is that he must be trapped inside like me.” Ma Ziyue’s mental state had finally recovered as she picked up the Star Blade from the ground.

Su Yu breathed out, his ears continued to twitch as he carefully listened, the indistinct roars began to draw closer but it was quite difficult to get an accurate direction.

Frowning, Su Yu did not hesitate as his right hand immediately pressed onto the wall of the tree by the side, activating the Earth Spikes Assault.

Suddenly, ten odd metres away within a large portion of the wall of the tree, countless numbers of sharpened stone pillars erupted from the ground, the indistinct roars became even more violent, trembling the entire area. Su Yu’s ears continued to twitch, it

seemed as though he had gotten wind of something. The stone pillars had disappeared as large amounts of fresh blood spurted forth, Su Yu did not speak as he activated the Rending Storm, heavily smashing in a direction.

Qin Jiagui and Zhang Zhongmou also wildly attacked in all directions, at this moment they could roughly guess that the wall of trees and green vines were likely part of a living organism that far surpassed their imagination, continually wreaking havoc would definitely be able to weaken the strength of the other party.

Zhang Zhongmou activated the Red Lotus Sword as he chopped, it was exceptionally sharp as the vines were easily sliced apart.

Ma Ziye held the Star Blade, panting for a period of time to recover some energy before beginning to chop anew.

“Roar!!!” A frightening howl could clearly be heard, the enemy’s real body had arrived.

Chapter 144: Demon Spawn

With the passing of each minute, Qin Jiagui would send a Steel Missile flying forth, this Steel Missile had an effective radius of twenty five metres, its power was immense and each missile would be able to cause a hole the size of a circular table to appear on the tree wall.

Su Yu, Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou and Ma Ziyue worked together to destroy, their destructive prowess was extremely formidable especially Su Yu's Rending Storm, each area he struck was thoroughly destroyed. Suddenly, a frightening roar could be clearly heard by their side.

Su Yu and the others lifted their heads, they could see that the ceiling of the tree wall had suddenly split, creating a large fissure, within this fissure were extremely thick tentacles which shot out, amongst the tentacles was a round shaped eyeball like object. Surrounding the eyeball were black circular vents, the vents were expelling out faint mist.

“Kaboom!”

An explosion rang out as an indescribable monster suddenly appeared from within the fissure, countless tentacles flew forward as it instantly swallowed Qin Jiagui within.

Qin Jiagui exploded with a frightening roar as the Demolishing Iron Fist was sent flying forward.

Su Yu's legs kicked as the Rending Storm smashed forward, landing squarely on the eyeball of the monster.

“Poof!”

The circular pipe that was surrounding the eyeball suddenly began to release large amounts of water vapour and fluid, as for the large eyeball in the centre, it began to release large amounts of ink-like fluid, instantly being crushed by the Rending Storm.

Ma Ziyue did not speak as the Star Blade swung forward, ‘Chi Chi Chi’, tentacles were cleanly sliced apart while Qin Jiagui continually sent the Demolishing Iron Fist smashing forward, finally joining back up with Su Yu and the others completely demolishing the monster.

This monster had just been killed when another monster of the same type appeared from the fissure, also an eyeball with many tentacles surrounding it.

Frightening roars could continually be heard.

Su Yu's Eye of Perception had finally managed to capture some information, he found out that the eyeball monster was known as a Demon Spawn, there was no other information to be shown.

“Demon Spawn”, this name was extremely peculiar but Su Yu did not have the time to consider as another seven to eight of the monsters came from within the fissure.

“Everyone, be careful, back away now!” Su Yu commanded as he rushed to Ma Ziyue’s side, activating the Rending Storm as a frightening amount of white mist was expunged.

Qin Jiagui and Zhang Zhongmou also explosively retreated as they shielded Ma Ziyue, these monsters noticed this as they immediately attacked from all directions.

Ma Ziyue immediately activated the Heaven’s Net, in the blink of an eye, the surrounding area of ten odd metres was covered with a frightening steel web.

The seven to eight monsters that had rushed forward were caught off guard as they instantly found themselves within the Heaven’s net, Su Yu howled as he rushed forward.

Qin Jiagui’s right shoulder raised as the Steel Missile shot forward followed by the Demolishing Iron Fist.

Zhang Zhongmou’s face had completed its stone transformation, the Eye of Petrification immediately shot a beam of light, causing a small portion of the body of a Demon Spawn to petrify, the Red Lotus Sword within his hand swept forward, piercing as it immediately killed one of the Demon Spawn.

Su Yu’s Rending Storm exploded forth, immediately killing three of the monsters, he lifted his head to see an unending stream of the Demon Spawn, realising that the situation was extremely grim. With such an unending stream of monsters, no matter how

powerful they were, they would still fall in this place.

Looking around in all directions, Su Yu immediately leapt as the Rending Storm was activated, knocking aside two of the monsters as he rushed forward, kicking as he suddenly flew into the air.

Reaching a height of four metres, Su Yu retracted his Rending Storm as his left hand pierced into the tree wall, holding his entire person in the air.

“Su Yu, what are you doing?” Zhang Zhongmou lifted his head realising that Su Yu was suspended in the air.

“You guys stay here, don’t break the formation!” Su Yu yelled while stretching his right hand to grab the vines by the side, alternating between his left and right as he swiftly ascended the wall.

At this moment, Zhang Zhongmou and the others realised that Su Yu wanted to climb through the fissure in the ceiling, such a reckless action was something that only he would risk.

Qin Jiagui had once attempted to send a Steel Missile into the fissure, although he had managed to cause much damage to the green vines as fresh blood splattered everywhere, it was simply useless as more Demon Spawn appeared.

As though feeling that Su Yu was nearing the centre fissure, the monsters surged towards Su Yu as their tentacles attacked.

The strands of energy from the Golden Blood flowed through his right hand, causing it to become stronger as he firmly attached himself to the wall, his left hand swiftly activated the Rending Storm as the hidden holes within his body began to wildly draw energy, filling him up before he punched forward.

“Kaboom!”

Two Demon Spawn which were moving towards him were immediately rent apart by the frightening fluctuations in the air.

Su Yu seized the chance to retract the Rending Storm, stabbing into the wall as he kicked at the same time, using the force from his left hand and legs to instantly fly like a fish through water, rushing to the fissure.

Having rushed to the fissure, the Rending Storm was activated as large amounts of white mist was emitted, “Zi Zi” sounds rang out as the white mist began to rotate, forming an immense white storm, mincing the surrounding tree walls with fresh blood mixed within. Su Yu exploded with a howl, he could not clearly see what was within the fissure, instinctively acting as he sucked in a frightening amount of energy before sending the fully charged Rending Storm flying forward.

“Roar!!!” An extremely shrill cry could be heard as the entire tree wall began to tremble, the vines everywhere began to collapse as large amounts of water and dismembered corpses fell to the ground, Qin Jiagui and the others who were below were shocked

attacking wildly in all directions to preserve their lives, the scene was extremely messy, something that words could not describe well enough.

Su Yu could only sense that his Rending Storm had smashed into a soft and mushy fleshy hole, thereafter, the frightening Rending Storm had minced the flesh within, Su Yu's right hand tightened as his legs kicked, moving further into the fleshy hole as the Rending Storm began to mince a path.

“Roar!!!!”

Su Yu could sense the frightening roar as the surrounding hole began to constrict, squeezing him as it twitched and trembled before opening once again, an immense pressure suddenly descended as he was sent hurtling out of the hole.

“Kaboom!”

Su Yu felt light-headed as he tumbled, unsure what had just happened. He had merely felt himself flung out of the hole before smashing heavily into the ground.

By the time he climbed back up, he saw a shocking scene that left his mouth ajar, as though he could not believe his own eyes.

Within the inpatient department, Su Yu and the others were engaged in a brutal battle with the unknown entity, as for the people outside, they were totally clueless as to what was going on.

Jade and the others were extremely anxious as they waited, the large bags of food as well as Lei Rui who was unconscious were placed in the centre as the others carefully watched their surroundings.

Not long after, sounds of footsteps could suddenly be heard as a figure swayed while rushing towards them.

“Who!” Zhou Birong exclaimed as her right hand lifted, immediately exposing three hooks.

Jade’s left hand also tightened as symbols appeared on the back of her hand.

“It’s me, save me!” The figure rushing over seemed panicked, shouting as he swiftly drew closer. The group were stunned, this person was actually Wang Xiang, at this moment he was covered in blood and he cut a sorry sight.

“Wang Xiang?” The group were dazed for a moment, back then Ma Ziye, Zhao Shichang, Li Dong, Zhou Huakang, Wang Xiang and Mao Mingzhu had moved into the building together, thereafter Zhou Huakang and Li Dong had let out blood curdling screams before Li Dong came falling down five stories. As for the others, there was simply no contact from them.

Li Dong was currently unconscious and the group had no idea what had happened within the building.

Wang Xiang seemed anxious as he swiftly ran over, Zhou Birong said in a heavy voice: “Wang Xiang, what happened to all of you inside? What about the others?”

Wang Xiang panted heavily as he reached the group: “It’s too terrifying..... that place..... that place has.....” As he said this, he carefully measured the group, noticing that Su Yu, Qin Jiagui and the others were not present, he secretly sighed in relief.

“What happened?” Shi Guozhong pressed.

“There was a killing incident!” Wang Xiang suddenly acted as his fist smashed heavily into Shi Guozhong’s face, his mouth opened at the same time as teeth shot forth like arrows, shooting towards Xu Ruyun who was by the side.

Things had made such a drastic change that Shi Guozhong failed to react, his face was smashed in as he felt an immense pain fill him, crying out miserably as he fell away.

Xu Ruyun barely managed to twist his body, avoiding a large amount of the teeth but a couple still managed to hit him. The teeth the Wang Xiang spat out had a powerful corrosive effect, the toxin contained within immediately began to create hissing noises from the small holes that had been pierced, green smoke rising from the holes.

Xu Ruyun groaned but remained silent, suddenly moving as his hands moved to his chest, picking seven to eight surgical knives as he reacted with a god-like speed that far exceeded one’s

imagination.

Wang Xiang had shot the teeth towards Xu Ruyun because he was most worried about him.

Chapter 145: Strange Symbol Of '8'

Xu Ruyun's performance this entire journey had been extremely tranquil, even Su Yu and Qin Jiagui had felt he was astonishing, much less Wang Xiang.

Seven to eight surgical knives shot forward but Wang Xiang did not dodge as he merely ran forward, opening his mouth in a maniacal smile, all his teeth had already been shot out and it seemed extremely menacing. The surgical knives entered his body as he spat a large mouthful of spittle, Xu Ruyun had not expected Wang Xiang's craziness and was immediately struck on the face.

His vision immediately turned black as an intense pain filled his face, Wang Xiang howled as he kicked heavily into Xu Ruyun's chest.

"Roar!" Wang Xiang let out a shriek, he did not expect that surgical knives would suddenly protrude from Xu Ruyun's chest, his leg was immediately stabbed by the knives while Xu Ruyun groaned, spitting out blood as he was kicked aside by the frightening kick.

At the back, Zhou Birong exclaimed: "Wang Xiang, are you crazy?!" her right hand waved as three claws appeared, slashing viciously towards Wang Xiang.

Jade's eyes were sharp as she suddenly gasped: "666?"

At this moment, everyone had finally realised that Wang Xiang's

bare neck had the '666' symbol, at this moment the '666' symbol was no longer indistinct but rather continually glowed, appearing exceptionally eye-catching.

“666? This fellow is also a monster?” Liu Zheng said in a raspy voice, the previous day's encounter with the black monster that had the 666 symbol together with Ning Yan's incident made the group extremely sensitive to the 666 symbol, seeing it at this moment on Wang Xiang's neck made them feel as though they were looking at a monster.

Xu Ruyun's face had been hit by Wang Xiang's saliva which contained extremely corrosive properties, immediately losing his sight while his body was also riddled with holes due to the teeth, they were currently rotting at a tremendous speed and he was currently rolling on the ground, his hands clutching his face, no longer capable of fighting.

Zhou Birong exclaimed as she sent her claws flying forward, clawing towards Wang Xiang. Jade gasped as she began to draw in the air, preparing to use the Runewords.

By the side, when Huo Shan saw the '666' symbol on the back of Wang Xiang, he did not hold back as his right hand turned, strange energy surged to form a honeycomb charcoal briquette which he tossed at Wang Xiang.

Yuan Niping was also a tier one dark iron warrior and under the current dire circumstance, she did not think further as she rushed forward.

Liu Zheng was shouting loudly, trying to cause a ruckus to draw the attention of Su Yu and the others who were in the building, it was a pity that they were currently surrounded within the frightening tree wall, simply cut off from the outside world.

Wang Xiang's feet had been pierced by several surgical knives, his body was rigid as Zhou Birong pierced her claws into him, it was a pity that she could not pull it out before Wang Xiang retaliated, his arm twisting as it smashed towards Zhou Birong's waist.

Zhou Birong groaned as she fell away, the three claws on her hands immediately spurting large amounts of blood.

Wang Xiang was hit by Huo Shan's honeycomb charcoal briquette squarely on the chest, it exploded immediately causing flesh and blood and fly, Wang Xiang howled as he tumbled away, no longer moving.

The group were stunned as they stared at the immobile Wang Xiang, Jade had finished drawing her Runeword and a streak of white immediately flew forward.

“Bang!” as it smashed into Wang Xiang's body.

After the continued assaults, Wang Xiang's body was like a broken doll, totally wrecked. The group noticed that he did not react even after suffering Jade's blow as they sighed in relief, thinking that Wang Xiang must have died as they slowly crowded

towards him.

The group had just sighed in relief when an eerie laughter suddenly transmitted from Wang Xiang, his tattered body slowly began to twist and shiver.

The group were shocked as they halted in their tracks, Wang Xiang had lifted his face, a strange expression was on it as he opened his mouth while laughing hysterically, his body continually transforming.

“Keke..... Kekeke.....” Wang Xiang’s sinister laughter echoed out, suddenly, a hand stretched forth as a frightening energy began to fluctuate, large amounts of rotten flesh began to gather, instantly forming a black claw, his legs kicked as he suddenly rushed forward.

The group were stunned as they swiftly attempted to flee.

“Aaaahhhh!” Shi Guozhong who was the slowest miserably cried, this bus driver had taken a blow to the face and had reacted the slowest, he had been caught by Wang Xiang as a frightening claw pierced his chest.

“Die! All of you must! Killing all of you will allow me to advance.....” Wang Xiang’s voice was sinister and cold, his mouth seemed to have fangs like that of a beast, biting down on the throat of Shi Guozhong who was struggling.

Shi Guozhong continued to struggle but he was gradually growing weaker and weaker.

The group were alarmed as Huo Shan once again tossed a charcoal briquette bomb, Jade's left hand was drawing Runewords while Zhou Birong grit her teeth as claws extended, clawing towards Wang Xiang.

As for Liu Zheng and Xie Zhiming who were not even tier one, they did not have any good methods to attack and could only retreat far away.

Huo Shan's charcoal briquette had be thrown forward, but Wang Xiang lifted Shi Guozhong's body like a baseball bat and swung it.

“Kaboom!”

An immense explosion resounded out as the charcoal briquette exploded, Shi Guozhong let out the final cry of his life before bursting into pieces, dying on the spot.

Huo Shan had never expected his charcoal briquette to kill Shi Guozhong in such a brutal manner as he shivered uncontrollably.

Wang Xiang tossed Shi Guozhong's battered remains towards Huo Shan as he swiped his hand, a black claw swiped forward, Zhou Birong groaned as the claws on her right hand were instantly snapped, her right shoulder which contained her strange energy had been injured, a searing pain could be felt as she screamed,

Wang Xiang continued forward as he kicked, hitting her chest as she flew away like a broken kite, blood spurting from her mouth.

Jade cried as a shock wave was sent forward, Wang Xiang laughed as he suddenly disappeared, suddenly appearing behind her.

“I remember you..... You’re Su Yu’s woman..... Using your power, you wanted to bully the weak, wanted to kill me..... It’s a pity..... I’ll be killing all of you today..... I want to kill his woman, keke, so what if he’s powerful..... Once I kill all of you and suck your power, my power will surely be able to deal with them..... By then..... I will be able to kill all of them..... hahahaha.....”

Wang Xiang’s face continued to rot, his arms stretched forth before clamping down on Jade’s neck, a sinister smile on his face: “Die! You bit**!”

His arms immediately exerted as he prepared to twist Jade’s head.

“I wonder what will his reaction be once he sees your skull before him.....Keke.....” Wang Xiang laughed sinisterly, Jade’s spine was emitting cracking noises and seemed like it would snap at any moment when suddenly, a cold could be felt from his neck as he suddenly felt powerless.

“What.....” Wang Xiang did not understand what was happening as an immense force suddenly pulled at his arms,

sending him flying away.

“Aaaaahhhh!” Wang Xiang howled as his immense body fell heavily onto the ground.

“Ba da!”

Smashing into the ground, his head was dizzy as he barely managed to turn his body to lift his head, he was stunned to see Lei Rui who had been in a vegetative state there, she had gotten up quietly before suddenly acting, attacking the ‘666’ symbol on his neck before tossing him aside, saving Jade.

The current Lei Rui’s eyes were emotionless, as though she did not have any consciousness. However, there was a brilliant white light shining from her chest, within the light a symbol of ‘8’ could be clearly seen.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

Lei Rui’s heart had previously suffered from a serious injury, at this moment it was beating violently, the sounds could even be heard by Wang Xiang, as though there was an incomparably powerful and unique heart within her chest.

Within the large building, Su Yu had been sent flying away from the fleshy hole by a gust of forceful air, heavily smashing into the ground. As he lifted his head, what he saw before him made him suck in a breath of cold air.

Within the centre of the inpatient department which was over thirty stories high was an immense empty space that had been dug out, within this empty space were countless vines that were hanging from tree walls, atop these walls were an innumerable amount of corpses.

These humans were combined with the green vines to form an enormous flesh tree wall, what made Su Yu most shocked was actually in the huge tree wall was a unique and strange monster.

This monster seemed to be formed from five thousand thick vines together with a large black eye the size of a circular table. From within, green tentacles emerged, these tentacles continued to spray out white mist while make wheezing noises.

At this moment, the monster's roots were connected to all the surrounding area, at the top of the flesh tree wall was a slit that showed red flesh. Just recently, Su Yu was spat out from that particular opening.

This monster was simply immense, based on height it was at least forty metres high, its lower body had completely integrated with the large building and it was impossible to determine which part was the monster's body and which was the building's construction, Su Yu was unable to determine if this could be considered a monster or a plant that really looked like a monster.

Chapter 146: Mist Demon, The True Power Of The Golden Blood

The Eye of Perception activated as a stream of information filled Su Yu's mind, immediately notifying him of information regarding this monster.

Name: Mist Demon

Information:

Adult form.

Carnivorous plant.

Requires nearby construction or vegetation in order to survive.

Has several energy stones contained within, if they are not totally destroyed, one cannot completely kill the Mist Demon.

Given sufficient time, it can grow back once again, it's strength will differ depending on the amount of energy it has consumed, there is no fixed tier and it can continually create Demon Spawn within, once the Demon Spawn mature, they will grow to become a new Mist Demon, combining with the mother body to allow the Mist Demon to expand further, it can even possibly swallow the entire world, a terrifying plant with endless potential for growth.

Others: Unknown.

Receiving the information from the Eye of Perception, Su Yu sucked in a breath of cold air, he finally understood that they had actually opened a path and accidentally barged into the body of the monster, thereafter he had been ejected from some part of the monster's body while Qin Jiagui and the others still remained within.

Su Yu was still in a state of shock when a howl suddenly rang out from behind him.

Su Yu was stunned as he turned back, he noticed that Zhao Shichang had actually merged with a part of a tree wall, only his head and portions of his body were exposed, he was clearly not dead but his face was filled with fear and pain as he wildly struggled and yelled, however, he was still being slowly pulled into the tree wall.

Zhao Shichang who had initially lost all hope suddenly noticed Su Yu, this immediately ignited hope within him as he continued to yell, the suction power of the green vines and tree wall was exceptionally frightening, far exceeding one's imagination.

Su Yu was dazed for a moment before he acted wordlessly, kicking as he rushed forward, black scales were raised as white mist was emitted, his body floated as though he were riding on the clouds, swiftly smashing into the side of the tree wall.

“Ha!” Su Yu roared as the energy contained within the Rending

Storm was sent flying forward, immediately causing an explosion on the tree wall.

“Kaboom!”

An explosive sound rang out as the frightening amount of power immediately caused an area of ten odd metres along the tree wall to collapse.

Over the past few days of endless slaughter, Su Yu’s grasp of the Rending Storm had become more and more proficient, although it was merely a simple ability, together with his familiarity with it, he was able to use it in a myriad of ways, he could use it as a direct force of destruction or he could slowly gather the strange energy before releasing it in an explosive burst, creating an explosive force similar to that of Qin Jiagui’s Demolishing Iron Fist, he could also make use of the holes within his body to absorb strange energy in order to create a vacuum-like effect.

Su Yu had suppressed the energy of the Rending Storm before finally releasing it, causing a huge explosion on the tree wall, Zhao Shi Chang yelled as he felt the green vines surrounding his body snap, he could feel the pulling force that was acting on him weaken.

Su Yu then flew forward, using the rebound from the explosion of the Rending Storm to fly towards Zhao Shichang, piercing through the green vines surrounding him as blood spewed forth like a spring.

The frightening roars from the centre had resounded out once again, suddenly, countless numbers of thick green vines began to pierce towards Su Yu and Zhao Shichang.

Zhao Shichang could feel that the green vines which were snaring him were becoming fewer and fewer, the constriction was steadily becoming weaker as he finally yelled, his right arm pulled as the bone blade appeared, slicing through his confines as he finally fell from within the tree wall.

Falling to the ground, Zhao Shichang began to pant heavily, he knew that he had barely escaped from an extremely grim fate.

Lifting his head to look at Su Yu who was in front, Zhao Shichang's entire body began to tremble as he muttered: "Su Yu, thank..... Thank you....." Only when a person had experienced extreme fear and hopelessness and been saved would they be filled with a sense a gratitude which Zhao Shichang currently had towards Su Yu, this was something that words alone could not describe.

Su Yu did not have the time to listen to Zhao Shichang, he could see the countless numbers of green vines which were swiftly spreading towards them, under the dire circumstances, he kicked the tree wall as he immediately flew forward, his chest and back were covered in black scales as his left arm flailed, continually slicing through the vines. There were simply too many vines and even with his valiant efforts he was still hit as he groaned, falling to the ground.

Crash! Su Yu finally fell out.

Su Yu immediately rolled to a stand as he looked at the large amounts of green vines and the enormous Mist Demon, for the first time, Su Yu felt that he lacked the ability to kill things in a large radius.

Although the Earth Spikes Assault contained formidable prowess, the cooldown was simply too long and he could only use it once every twenty four hours.

“Zhao Shichang, follow me!” Su Yu shouted as his black-scale covered left arm continually flailed, Zhao Shichang took a deep breath as he stood up, closely following behind Su Yu.

Ma Ziyue, Zhao Shichang and Qin Jiagui were still trapped within the monster’s body, this monster could continually create Demon Spawn and if they remained there, they would be in perilous danger. Su Yu roared towards Zhao Shichang as he continued to rush towards the monster.

The green vines were like enormous pythons that attacked wildly from all directions, Zhao Shichang followed closely behind Su Yu as he struggled to help, his bone knife whipped to and fro but his strange energy had been severely depleted and the force behind his swings was lacking.

It was fortunate that Su Yu’s body had hidden holes which enabled him to suck in strange energy from the surroundings, providing him with an endless source of strange energy that allowed him to continually battle on without fatiguing.

Although the Rending Storm is exceptionally strong, if one wants to cause massive damage to such an enormous monster is really too difficult.....” Su Yu’s mind was churning as he rushed towards the monster, his right hand was already clenched into a fist.

His right hand contained a drop of Golden Blood, he had always been able to occasionally activate the Golden Blood, causing his left arm to become even stronger, exploding with double his usual power, this was merely borrowing an ounce of power from the Golden Blood but not the true strength of it.

The power contained within the Golden Blood was simply too strong, although Su Yu was already at the third tier, he simply would not be able to withstand it, he had not dared to use the full power of the Golden Blood because that was simply too dangerous and his body had the possibility of falling apart if it could not bear the strain.

Back when Su Yu had first acquired the Golden Blood, its full power had caused him to remain unconscious for several days, this was extremely dangerous within this forest and he had not dared to easily make use of the Golden Blood.

At this moment, faced with this monster that was mind bogglingly huge together with the countless green vines that were swiping towards them, Zhao Shichang’s pain filled face as he was thrown aside by the vines, Ma Ziyue and the others who were still within the monster’s body, he simply could not hold back any longer as he grit his teeth and decided to use the true power of the Golden Blood.

His right hand clenched, Su Yu suddenly gave up defending against the green vines that were swiping at him from all directions as he looked to the sky and howled.

“Roar!” Su Yu howled, his right hand was clenched as a frightening golden light exploded forth, finally, the true power of the Golden Blood was activated.

Following Su Yu’s roar, his right arm suddenly exploded, in an instant, streaks of piercing golden light spread out, his right arm was twisting and swelling as he yelled: “Shit!”

His right arm could not withstand the full power of the Golden Blood, with the full activation of this frightening energy, it had immediately caused him to suffer the same consequences as when he had first acquired it, his right arm had immediately swelled then festered before tentacles began to wildly emerge, finally becoming like that of an octopus as it dragged him, pulling him along as it wildly wreaked havoc.

“Kaboom!”

This right arm that seemed as though it had taken a demonic transformation pulled Su Yu’s body as it smashed heavily onto the terrifying Mist Demon, the frightening golden light exploded outwards as the Mist Demon roared, countless vines were shattered as an enormous hole of over ten metres was formed.

At the back, Zhao Shichang was dazed, he could see that Su Yu’s right arm seemed to have transformed into a monster that had its

own will, pulling Su Yu along as it continually smashed the Mist Demon located in the centre, each collision would cause an enormous hole of over ten metres, swiftly causing the monster to become riddled with holes like that of a bee hive, tens of thousands of vines had been snapped and frightening rumbling noises contained to ring out.

The entire building was trembling, this power was simply too terrifying, as though the end of the world had suddenly come.

Zhao Shichang could feel that intense shaking of his surroundings and could only run behind some fallen concrete as he shivered, cutting an extremely sorry figure.

The miserable cries of the Mist Demon could be heard reverberating in the surroundings as vines wildly smashed forward, however, it was simply unable to hinder Su Yu who was currently in a violent state as his right arm continued to maniacally smash, in no time, it was riddled with holes.

Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou and Ma Ziyue who were within the Mist Demon were feeling panicked at the endless Demon Spawn within the Mist Demon when suddenly a frightening roar resounded, thereafter, the walls of the area suddenly began to collapse exposing big holes.

The three people swiftly ran out from a hole before seeing Zhao Shichang, the frighteningly enormous Mist Demon and Su Yu who was currently in a crazed state.

This scene was exactly the same as when Su Yu had first acquired the Golden Blood, Su Yu's destructive power was really astonishing.

The enormous monster that was over forty metres tall had been continually smashed and destroyed by Su Yu, the Mist Demon was a carnivorous plant and could only use its vines to attack, it could not move and its enormous body was like a sandbag for Su Yu's attacks.

It was only when the body of this enormous Mist Demon was thoroughly destroyed did the roars of Su Yu finally tone down, the entire scene was carnage with large amounts of concrete and shattered vines, amongst the shattered remains of the Mist Demon were pieces of black crystals which slowly turned into black lights which entered Su Yu's body.

Su Yu let out a low growl, absorbing so many crystals when he was already at the edges of breaking through could possibly allow him to advance to the next tier, however, his right arm suddenly had a frightening suction which caused all the energy to be absorbed within, like a snail entering the sea as it instantly vanished.

Su Yu did not have the time to think of the reason, he suddenly felt extremely tired as he fell weakly to his knees.

"Su Yu!" The others were stunned and only Ma Ziyue shouted as she leapt forward, the group immediately thought back to when Su Yu had entered such a state, he had fallen unconscious thereafter, could this possibly be a repeat of the previous incident?

“I’m..... I’m alright.....” Su Yu struggled to reply as he waved his left hand, his entire body was weak without any strength, he simply could not move a single muscle.

The current Su Yu was naturally much stronger than when he had first acquired the Golden Blood, even though he had suffered from the explosive burst, he did not fall into a coma like the previous time but was still severely injured, his body felt empty as though all the strange energy had been used up, his body seemed as though it was bereft of any strength. Inspecting his body, he was shocked to find several black crystals within his body, these black crystals continued to congeal causing the strange energy which was produced by his body to immediately be absorbed.

“This..... what is going on.....” Su Yu was alarmed as he continued to monitor his body, there seemed to be some phenomenal changes occurring but with his body completely void of strength, it was really uncomfortable.

Zhang Zhongmou kept the Red Lotus Sword before walking over to support Su Yu, feeling his frail body: “What was that thing? Was that a monster or a plant?”

“Called Mist Demon..... A type of plant.....” Su Yu said weakly.

Qin Jiagui spoke in a heavy voice: “Let’s bring Su Yu out first, as for Zhou Huakang and the others, we’ll look for them later.” He could see that Su Yu was extremely weak, remaining in this area was simply too dangerous, even if the Mist Demon was destroyed,

who knew what other dangers remained within this place.

Zhao Shichang hurriedly nodded, without Su Yu's strength, they simply did not dare to tarry in this place any longer, the might of the Mist Demon had far exceeded their imaginations.

Following the death of the Mist Demon, the surrounding tree walls began to collapse, the area was gradually returning to the form of an ordinary building that had suffered damage and they managed to swiftly find the exit.

Outside the building, Wang Xiang was attempting to snap Jade's neck when he was suddenly flung aside, he was shocked as he lifted his head to see that the person who acted was Lei Rui who had been in a comatose, vegetative state.

At this moment, Lei Rui stood there silently, a pure white light was emitted from her chest, within the light was a strange figure of 8, at the area of her heart, loud beating sounds could be heard, the powerful heartbeats rang in the ears of the group, causing a strange feeling to well up within them.

Chapter 147: Lei Rui Awakens

“You..... You.....” Wang Xiang could not help but growl, his body was festering and twisted, a pair of black claws emerged and the 666 symbol on the back of his neck became even more obvious.

“Lei Rui, You.....” Jade turned back to realise that it was Lei Rui who had saved her, looking at her current appearance, she could not help but exclaim.

The others were stunned, the scene before them was simply too strange.

Lei Rui’s expression was wooden, her eyes were dim without any light as she raised her right hand to point at Wang Xiang before saying in a barely discernible voice: “You..... failed..... product..... clear all traces..... of you.....”

A piercing white light suddenly exploded from her chest, the light emitted was like streaks of little white snakes which gathered at her right palm, thereafter, a piercing streak of light shot forward to envelop Wang Xiang.

“Roar!” Wang Xiang howled, his entire body began to twist and swell as the pair of black claws began to wildly flay, hoping to rip apart this white light which was shrouding him.

“I’m not a failed product, not a failed product. Roar!!!! I don’t want to die!!!!”

Wang Xiang continued to howl like a crazed man as he struggled within the white light, his claws emitted hissing noises as they came into contact with the light, showing the fearsomeness of the light.

Lei Rui's expression was wooden, her eyes did not seem human as she drew slowly closer towards Wang Xiang, the light emitted from her right hand became brighter and brighter till the point of it being piercing to the naked eye, everyone could only avert their gazes as the entire area in front of the building was enveloped within the light.

“Roar!!!!” Wang Xiang let out a thunderous roar as his body jumped, smashing forth as the white light suddenly exploded causing a huge black crater to form, Wang Xiang had immediately been disintegrated and energy could be seen flying like a rainbow into Lei Rui's body.

Receiving this energy, the symbol of 8 on her chest became even more prominent, a strange noise was emitted from her mouth as a pillar of white light rose from her body, encapsulating her within.

Ten odd miles to the north of the hospital within a forest lay seven Savage Bull Demons, each Savage Bull Demon had its four limbs and skull perfectly dismembered, each severed section was smooth, it could be seen that the blade used to do this was exceptionally sharp.

A tall strapping figure could be seen slowly holding a cloth as he

slowly wiped a butcher's knife within his hand.

This figure was extremely sturdy, well-built and tall, reaching an astonishing 1.92 metres tall, he had the back of a tiger and the waist of a bear, he had many strange items on his back. A soup pot, a frying pan, a wooden chopping board, a ladle as well as an assortment of kitchen knives, together with the butcher's knife and cleaning rag in his hand, he seemed like a walking kitchen.

This group of Savage Bull Demons which had been dismembered seemed like his handiwork, he seems to be in his thirties to forties, square faced with messy hair, a pair of sharp eyes as he devotedly wiped his butcher knife, it was at this moment when Lei Rui's body had emitted the pillar of white light, creating a white pillar of light that had lasted for a long period of time.

His face remained expressionless as he gazed at the pillar of light, thereafter, he tucked the clean butcher knife onto his back as he stood up.

“Uncle, what's that white light, should we go check it out?” Besides this middle aged man, there was another person beside him.

This was a little girl of around eleven years of age, she was very pretty with delicate features, her clothes were tattered and her face currently had an expression of curiosity on it.

The big man did not bother with her as he continued walking towards the pillar of light.

“Uncle, wait for me!” The little girl hurriedly chased.

“Didn’t I say not to follow me? I hate little kids.” The big man walked while speaking in a hoarse voice.

“But Little Wei likes uncle, I want to follow uncle.” The little girl’s voice was extremely clear as she replied, completely ignoring the words of the big man.

“Hmph..... that’s why I said that little kids were troublesome, I really hate little kids.....” The middle aged man’s voice was filled with discontentment as he suddenly bypassed the little girl behind him, his right hand stretched forth as a butcher’s knife appeared within it as he chopped.

Fresh blood spewed forth as a Bloody Ape Dog that had been attempting to sneak attack the girl was sliced in two, immediately dying.

The little girl was dazed for a moment, she realised that she had almost died to the claws of the Bloody Ape Dog.

The big man did not speak as he kept his knife, carrying his large amount of kitchen tools as he continued forward.

“I knew that uncle was the best, you saved little Wei again.” The little girl patted her chest which was already slightly developed.

“I didn’t save you, It’s simply because I hate monsters.” The middle aged man stuffily said.

“Uncle you’re still so stubborn, it was clear that you saved me.”

“So annoying, little kids are really annoying, always chattering away, that’s why I hate little kids.” The man exclaimed as though he was filled with indignation. In this manner, the two slowly walked towards the white pillar of light, their figures slowly disappearing into the forest ahead of them.

As Zhang Zhongmou supported the powerless Su Yu together with Ma Ziyue, Qin Jiagui and Zhao Shichang out the building, they immediately saw the receding pillar of white light from Lei Rui’s body, thereafter, Lei Rui fell silently to the ground.

“What happened?” Ma Ziyue and the others did not know what had happened outside, at this moment, looking at the group which seemed worse for wear, they were shocked as they hurriedly ran forward.

“Jiagui.” Yuan Niping ran forward as Qin Jiagui hurriedly embraced her: “What happened?”

“Not long after the few of you entered the building, that Wang Xiang appeared, his..... his neck has the 666 symbol, then.....” Yuan Niping swiftly explained the sequence of events, hearing of Wang Xiang’s 666 symbol was shocking and further realising that Lei Rui had a symbol of 8 on her chest was astonishing.

First there was the 666 symbol now there was the symbol of 8, what did all this mean?

Jade continued to shake Lei Rui, the chest of Lei Rui no longer had the symbol of 8 as she swiftly returned to normal, she slowly returned to normal as a coughing sound could be heard from her voice, she had finally awoken after Jade's persistent shaking.

"Lei Rui, are you awake?" Jade was stunned as she exclaimed.

Lei Rui opened her eyes, her eyes finally seemed alive as she asked hazily: "Jade..... what happened? Why am I sleeping here?" before sitting up, her face an expression of astonishment as she gazed at everything before her.

Looking at the corpse of Shi Guozhong, Zhang Zhongmou sighed, thinking back to their promise of being taught how to drive if they returned back to their world, who knew that he would lose his life in such a short period of time.

The injuries of the others were not light, Xu Ruyun had been hit by the frightening corrosive teeth of Wang Xiang, several festering holes were on his body. With the passing of time together with his strong will, the holes no longer grew bigger as the strange energy within him circulated, slowly pushing the teeth out as his injuries finally began to heal.

Although they were at tier one, Xu Ruyun's will was clearly much stronger than Zhou Huakang, relying on it, he had created a miracle which allowed him to recover without any external help.

No one could understand the change that had occurred to Lei Rui's body, the symbol of 8 had disappeared and Lei Rui seemed to have lost the frightening power. She had then awoken and Su Yu noticed that she was currently already at tier one.

Looking at the unconscious Li Dong who was on the ground, Ma Ziyue who had also reached tier three pressed her hand on his forehead, allowing the strange energy which was in the form of qi to flow out, with the help of the qi, Li Dong finally awoke before Qin Jiagui began to question him about what had happened.

Li Dong understood his current condition, not only was his body heavily injured, even his genitals were damaged, this made his face ashen but he did not become crazed, as long as there was a chance at life, this world was so mysterious that there should be a possibility to let his genitals recover.

Li Dong reassured himself as he slowly calmed down before beginning to explain to the others what had happened. He glossed over the fact that he had raped Mao Mingzhu, merely saying that it was Zhou Huakang's idea and he was innocent, thereafter he continued by saying that Wang Xiang had retaliated, he had leapt out of the window once he realised that the situation had gone south.

As the group heard this, they finally understood why Li Dong's lower body was covered with blood, although he did not say it, the group could guess at what he had done as they had expressions of disgust. However, thinking about what had happened to his genitals, they felt that he had gotten what he deserved and did not

say anything more about the matter.

Learning of the events that had transpired, Qin Jiagui and others others knew that Zhou Huakang and Mao Mingzhu were dead, getting rid of their plan to go back into the building.

The Mist Demon was simply too fearsome, with Su Yu in a weakened state, they did not wish to enter the place, who knew what other frightening creatures lurked within?

Counting their numbers, besides Zhou Huakang, Wang Xiang, Mao Mingzhu and Guo Shizhong, the others were all present. Lei Rui had now awakened and this was a pleasant surprise. The symbol of 8 was like a thorn in their minds and Qin Jiagui questioned Lei Rui about it, however, she only shook her head, not understanding what had happened.

Liu Zheng was more knowledgeable as he spoke: “In the western countries, 666 refers to demons while 888 refers to perfection..... It could also refer to gods..... Could it be that the people with 666 symbols like Wang Xiang are demons who have descended while..... she is a god? That isn’t right, she’s only had a symbol of 8 appear.....” pointing at Lei Rui, he did not know how to address her.

T/L thoughts: The number 8 means luck or prosperity in China. A lucky number for Japan and other asian countries. In the old testament, there were some connections such as the eighth day being a new beginning, and 888 for Jesus in christian numerology. All in all I feel it’s quite a stretch so don’t take anything as facts for

this novel. Just enjoy reading the novel, and thanks for reading!

Chapter 148: Final Day Of Travel

Qin Jiagui glanced at him: “This is the understanding of westerners, it doesn’t mean that it applies to this place.”

Liu Zheng thought for a moment before nodding, what Qin Jiagui said did make some sense.

At this moment, Lei Rui was slowly recalling what had happened before she went unconscious, Jade was holding her hand as she spoke: “Lei Rui, I don’t understand, why did you save me then? Didn’t you realise that you were putting yourself in danger?”

Lei Rui laughed as she seemed embarrassed: “Actually, I also don’t know why..... I merely thought that you were in danger so I pushed you aside, I didn’t think too much about it.” As she said this, she took out her spectacles from her pocket before wearing it.

Lei Rui had myopia, after falling unconscious, Jade had helped to keep her spectacles within her pocket, as she placed her spectacles back on, the scene before her immediately became clear.

After Jade heard Lei Rui’s words, she was stunned for a moment but felt even more touched as she held Lei Rui’s hands, not wanting to let go.

The group rested while eating, having been through the previous ordeal, the group had been reduced to fourteen people, Su Yu and the others were used to seeing death and were not affected too badly especially because Wang Xiang and Zhou Huakang were seen

as ticking timebombs, their deaths could possibly be beneficial for the group.

Lei Rui had also become a tier one dark iron warrior, amongst the group of fourteen, only Liu Zheng and Xie Zhiming remained at tier zero.

While resting, Zhang Zhongmou began to describe the frightening encounter within the building, upon touching on the Mist Demon, Jade and the others who had not went in felt their hairs stand on end as they gasped.

Zhang Zhongmou then spoke of Su Yu's bravery before sighed: "Instant Noodles, I seem to remember that you are at tier three as well, why aren't you as fierce as Su Yu."

Ma Ziyue glanced over at Su Yu before saying softly: "He's a monster in human's clothing, how can I compare with him."

Zhang Zhongmou was silent for a moment before wildly laughing, he felt that Ma Ziyue's assessment was rather accurate.

Su Yu bitterly smiled, at this moment his insides were a mess, his strange energy was forming black crystals causing him to be completely empty, he was unsure when he would begin to recover. There was an unexpected surprise as he felt the origin force necklace seemed to be occasionally releasing energy fluctuations as though something would emerge at any moment.

“This feeling..... it seems like it could be anytime now.” Su Yu could not help but grasp the heart shaped pendant on the necklace within his hands as he softly muttered, regarding the 666 symbol as well as Lei Rui’s symbol of 8, the group had discussed but could not make heads or tails of the matter, they only knew that those whose necks had the 666 symbol could turn into frightening monsters and could gain energy regardless of killing humans or monsters, this was a strong advantage that they had.

Qin Jiagui sat by the side as he retrieved the treasure map, frowning as though he seemed to have met with some difficulty.

“Jiagui, what’s the matter? Is there a problem?” Yuan Niping who was by his side questioned.

Zhang Zhongmou lit a cigarette: “Qin Jiagui, why are you in such deep thought, your brows are all furrowed. Could it be that there’s something wrong with the map? You’re making us all nervous.”

Qin Jiagui lightly blew out before continuing: “I have no idea, I’m not sure if there’s a problem with my memory or this map can make changes on its own..... any way, based on the map..... We will require one day..... Maybe tomorrow or the day after..... we will be able to reach the exit indicated on the map.”

A single stone can create thousands of waves, Qin Jiagui’s words immediately caused the hearts of everyone to tighten, Zhang Zhongmou shouted: “You’re saying that it’s a single day’s journey away?”

Qin Jiagui bitterly smiled as he nodded, based on his memory of the map, it should be several days before they reached it but the map seemed to have went through some changes. Based on the current map, they only needed one day to reach the area, but why was the map changing..... Could it be that this mysterious treasure map had some unknown power that could change based on the different circumstances?

Qin Jiagui could not understand as he carefully looked at the map, it was not made from ordinary paper but rather seemed to have been drawn on goat skin, it was soft to the touch yet extremely durable, this was the only thing that could be determined from examining it.

“Qin Jiagui, we really only have a day’s journey left? If it’s that close, we should move out right away, your grandnanny, I’ve already had enough. Let’s not talk about the other matters, just the number of days I’ve went without bathing is already unbearable.” Zhang Zhongmou shouted as he tossed away his cigarette.

Zhao Shichang had an expression of elation on his face: “It’s only a day’s travel, it’s really so close? Only one more day and we’ll be able to leave this damned forest, returning to the world we are familiar with?” His entire body had started trembling.

Qin Jiagui stood up: “Based on the map, this seems to be the case. Whatever the case, we should follow the map to find out.”

Jade, Lei Rui, Zhang Zhongmou, Huo Shan and the others began to stand up, Huo Shan was still firmly hugging his suitcase, the bank notes contained within were the precious items that could save his wife’s life even though it was completely useless within

the forest.

Su Yu also slowly stood up, he had rested for a while and his body had recovered some energy, he could sense that the fluctuations from the necklace were becoming stronger and some changes could occur to the necklace at any moment.

“Since there’s only one day of travel remaining, we should immediately set off. I actually wanted to rest here for the night, everyone, let’s go. Haha, one day, we only need to walk for another day.” Zhang Zhongmou began to smile as he lifted a few bags from the ground.

The others also began to pick up their bags, there was still more than half the food left, it was more than sufficient for the fourteen of them to eat for another ten odd days, based on the map, they would be able to get out in a day’s time, the group were elated but also cautious, they would still bring the food along, just in case.

Su Yu was still in a weakened state as Ma Ziye, Zhang Zhongmou and Zhao Shichang assisted him with his bags of food, in the end, he was the only one that could walk without any burdens.

Although Li Dong was injured, he had received the help from Ma Ziye’s strange energy that was in the form of qi and swiftly recovered. The other wounds on his body were mostly healed but his genitals had been severed and could not be grown back.

Xu Ruyun had forced the ten odd teeth out of his body, his wounds were recovering at a tremendous speed and when the

group finally left, Li Dong and Xu Ruyun's injuries were largely healed, although they would have difficulties fighting, moving was not a problem.

Leaving this hospital behind, the group took a final look, the walls of the hospital were still covered in vines and one could imagine that in the distant future, this hospital would be completely covered with vegetation, fully becoming one with the forest.

The situation with the Mist Demon had made it clear, it was likely that the people within the hospital had been miserably killed there, turning into nourishment for the Mist Demon.

Qin Jiagui looked at the map as he pointed in a direction, bypassing the large hospital as he spoke: "Walk towards the North, based on the map, we still have to travel for a day before seeing a mountain, the exit should be located there."

The others lifted their heads, they could only see tall strapping trees together with dense vegetation, the tall mountain was nowhere in sight.

Zhang Zhongmou climbed up a tall tree as he looked into the distance, all he saw were countless trees, there were simply no mountains to be found.

"Let's walk first, once we reach everything will be clear." Su Yu softly said, although his voice was weak, it still resounded strongly in everyone's heart.

Zhao Shichang continued to wield his bone blade to open a path, Zhang Zhongmou used his Red Lotus Sword to assist, Ma Ziyue had fallen behind to Su Yu's side, the current Su Yu was powerless and everyone could see it, Ma Ziyue was worried for his safety and would not take a single step away from him, although she did not say it, anyone could clearly see it.

Su Yu was touched as he looked her in the eye and faintly smiled, Ma Ziyue was definitely a trustable buddy, she was someone whom he could leave his back to.

Jade and Lei Rui were hand in hand as they walked, the two ladies softly spoke, after Lei Rui's awakening, Jade was in extremely high spirits and seemed to treat Lei Rui like a blood sister.

The gratitude that Jade felt was simply indescribable, Lei Rui had almost lost her life in attempting to save her and this favor was something that she simply could never return.

Su Yu noticed Jade and Lei Rui's closeness and could not help but envy Lei Rui, since a young age, Jade had never been so tender towards him before.

Zhao Shichang and Zhang Zhongmou were opening a path up ahead, the group of people struggled to advance, slowly pushing through the dense forest, the road ahead was gradually lightening up in terms of density as their path became easier to walk, Zhao Shichang and Zhang Zhongmou could finally relax.

Zhang Zhongmou kept his Red Lotus Sword as he wiped the sweat on his forehead: “From the looks of it, it seems like we’re really near to the exit, look, the road has actually become easier to walk, it’s no longer as densely packed as the past.”

Zhao Shichang excitedly continued: “That’s right, this patch of forest seems to be the edges of the area, such a circumstance is understandable, we must be nearing the exit of the forest, everyone, we’re going to be home soon.” Suddenly Zhao Shichang looked back as he elatedly waved at the group.

The others also had smiles on their faces, no matter what, this was definitely a good sign.

“Go, let’s move quickly, we’re about to go home!” Zhang Zhongmou shouted as he continued to rush forward.

The others swiftly followed, the speed of the group had immediately risen and they were all excited as they swiftly covered much ground.

Suddenly, Zhang Zhongmou who was rushing forward made a noise before coming to a stop.

Thereafter, Liu Zheng could not help but knock into Zhang Zhongmou as he asked: “Brother Zhang, what’s the matter?”

Zhang Zhongmou did not speak, merely stretching his hand to

point towards the left side not far away.

The others had also seen it, there were two people looking at him from a distance.

Chapter 149: Tier Four Expert

One of them was barehanded, wearing a clean black jacket with a pasty white face like he had never seen the sun, his age was around twenty seven to twenty eight years and his features were prominent, appearing quite handsome but his expression was very cold, cruelty and coldness shining within his eyes as though he had been borne from killing.

Facing him was an extremely tall middle aged uncle, this uncle had a back of a tiger and a bear-like waist, his height was above 1.9 metres and what was most surprising was his back that was filled with kitchen tools, woks, knives, pots and even a cleaning rag.

At this moment his body was covered in fresh blood and his right hand was holding a butcher's knife, his chest had several open wounds which were gushing fresh blood like a spring, his face was extremely pale but his eyes had a stubborn light that refused to bend down before the black clothed male.

Behind this tall and strapping middle aged uncle was a young girl, the young girl appeared delicate and pretty, at this moment she had a terrified expression on her face.

When Zhang Zhongmou and the others noticed this three people, the barehanded black clothed male was letting out a cold laugh: "Fool, you aren't my match, why aren't you running away? I'm afraid you don't know anything at all right? Don't you know who's that little girl behind you? Do you think that you alone will be able to protect her?"

The little girl wanted to squeeze forward: “Uncle, don’t care about me, you can run away.”

“Stop talking nonsense, when adults are talking, how could a little kid interrupt?” The middle aged man was injured but he continued to smile as he blocked the little girl, not letting her go forward.

The little girl anxiously replied: “Uncle, you can’t beat him, didn’t you say you hated little kids? Now..... Isn’t it just right?”

The middle aged man continued: “That’s right, I hate little kids, it’s still the same. However, I hate scoundrels who would hunt down little kids even more because they..... Wouldn’t even let off kids .” He lifted the butcher’s knife in his right hand as he pointed at the black clothed male.

Hearing this words, the black clothed male had a vile expression on his face as he said coldly: “Initially I felt that you were quite a talent, able to become a tier four warrior on your own, I actually wanted to let you live, who knew that you would actually wish for death..... Just hate me, although we are both at tier four, our abilities are simply incomparable.....”

The right hand of the black clothed male stretched forth as streaks of black smoke began to swirl, like little black snakes as he continued: “The injuries you suffered from me, Situ Wuya, can’t be healed by strange energy, you can die from loss of blood alone, what do you have to fight against me? What right do you have to be so confident in front of me?”

Situ Wuya let out a sinister howl as his rather handsome face twisted, his body spun as an explosive sound rang out, suddenly, a crisp explosion like that of explosive thunder rang out from within his five fingers, in the blink of an eye, his right hand, right arm and chest emitted countless numbers of small snakes which pounced toward the middle aged man.

“Little lass, run!” The middle aged man noticed Zhang Zhongmou and the others who had just arrived, hope flashed in his eyes as his left hand pointed towards them, thereafter, he shouted to the little girl before pouncing towards the black clothed male.

The black clothed male did not lie, as the middle aged man was rushing through the forest with the little girl, they had been suddenly attacked by him.

In order to protect the little girl, the middle aged man had suffered injuries from the attacks.

The frightening ability of the black clothed male made it such that the areas he had been wounded could not be healed by strange energy as they continued to leak blood, at this moment, the middle aged man felt slightly dizzy, he understood that he would not be able to beat the black clothed male and could only hope that the little girl was saved by Zhang Zhongmou and the others. As for him, he would use his life to slow the black clothed male down.

Su Yu, Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou and the others could hear their words by the side and were shocked, fourth tier? This black

clothed male and middle aged man were actually tier four warriors?

The strongest in their group was Su Yu and he was merely a tier three dark iron warrior.

Upon contact, the middle aged man explosively roared as the butcher's knife in his hand began to wildly assault, in the blink of an eye, countless numbers of black snakes were chopped apart, however, these black snakes actually became wisps of black smoke which continued forward, once they came into contact with the middle aged man they would instantly explode.

Although the strength of the explosion was not strong, with so many continual explosions, even a man of iron would be unable to bear it.

The middle aged man groaned as the black clothed male cackled, his left hand stretched forward as it suddenly transformed into a sword, heavily swinging downwards.

“Chi!”

Fresh blood splattered as the middle aged man began to scream, his waist had been sliced open, revealing a frightening wound.

“Uncle!” The little girl behind screamed.

“Quick, run! Run!” The middle aged man howled as he pounced towards the black clothed male in a crazed manner, hoping to stop

his advancement.

The little girl had an expression of terror as he suddenly moved towards Su Yu, Qin Jiagui and the others while shouting: “Save us..... Please save uncle!”

Qin Jiagui and the others had shocked expressions as they involuntarily backed away, the other party were both tier four, under such circumstances, how could they dare to intervene?

The black clothed male snarled as his right hand suddenly pierced, countless snakes began to explode forming an enormous wave of qi, immediately sending the middle aged man sprawling away. He no longer concerned himself with the middle aged man as he turned, heading towards the little girl who was rushing towards Su Yu’s group.

“Vile Spawn of the Kou Family, as long as I bring in your head, I, Situ Wuya will have the hope of becoming a member of the ‘White Tiger’!” Situ Wu Ya cackled as his left hand stretched forward, the sword was swung at the neck of the little girl who was running, if it connected, the girls head would be immediately severed.

“Little lass!” At the back, the middle aged man who had fallen to the ground saw this and could not help but hoarsely cry out, in this instant, his entire body seemed cold, filled with hopelessness.

Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou, Zhao Shichang and the others trembled, they could see the little girl who was rushing towards them and the black clothed male who was chasing behind, about to

kill her with his sword. In this moment, a choice appeared within each person's mind.

To help or not to help?

The group simply did not have the time to think as the sword of the black clothed male was swung, this was when a figure rushed out of the group.

It was Zhou Birong.

Hearing the screams of the little girl and her innocent and pure face, Zhou Birong instantly thought of Ding Shan. In this instant, the little girl before her seemed to merge with the image of Ding Shan, she did not hesitate as she went forward, not considering the frightening repercussions of lending aid. Zhou Birong's body instinctively went forward, hugging the little girl before dodging to the side.

“Chi!”

The black clothed male's sword landed on empty air as he looked stunned.

“出手——”苏羽低啸。

“Do it!” Su Yu exclaimed.

Initially, he was still rather hesitant, upon seeing Zhou Birong

act, he knew that the conflict could not be avoided and decisively chose to act, the faster they handled the situation the better. The black clothed male before them was actually a tier four dark iron warrior, this meant that he was certainly much stronger than all of them, their only hope of victory was using their advantage in numbers to surprise him and kill him in an instant.

Su Yu howled as Ma Ziyue stomped, the Heaven's Net was immediately activated as it snared the black clothed male.

The black clothed male roared, in this instant, he finally reacted as his right hand stretched forward, his fingers released crisp noises as black snakes were emitted.

Qin Jiagui's right shoulder loosened as the metal cylinder lifted, the Steel Missile was sent flying towards the black clothed male.

Zhang Zhongmou's face had instantly underwent its stone transformation, the Eye of Petrification between his brows immediately opened as a beam of light was shot towards the black clothed male's left arm.

Ma Ziyue's Heaven's Net had snared the two legs of the male, Zhang Zhongmou's Eye of Petrification had petrified his left arm as the Red Lotus Sword was chopped towards his legs.

With his legs ensnared by Ma Ziyue's Heaven's Net, even if the black clothed male was exceptionally talented, how could he possibly dodge this blade from Zhang Zhongmou?

The reason why Zhang Zhongmou had petrified the left arm was to prevent him from using the arm sword to block the Red Lotus Sword.

At the back, Zhao Shichang's bone blade was already swinging towards the right arm of the male.

The group had suddenly acted, their teamwork was impeccable, especially Ma Ziyue's Heaven's Net which had instantly snared the black clothed male, causing him to be unable to dodge. In this moment, he could not help but roar as explosive sounds rang out, four thick black pythons actually emerged from his back, acting like hooked claws as they smashed forward.

“Kaboom!”

The Steel Missile was blocked by one of the black pythons, immediately exploding in mid air. The second black Python came into contact with Zhang Zhongmou's Red Lotus Sword, forcibly blocking it. The third black python blocked Zhao Shichang while the fourth rushed towards Ma Ziyue.

No one had imagined that the black clothed male who seemed to be at the precipice of death would actually have such frightening retaliatory strength, in their shock, the group swiftly dodged as the Heaven's Net also lost its effectiveness. The face of the male was extremely pissed, kicking the ground as he flew into the air, the four black pythons behind him were like a spider with four claws as they pounced towards the little girl and Zhou Birong who was hugging her.

The black clothed male could tell that the tier of Qin Jiagui and the others was not high, although he was incensed, his top priority was to kill the little girl, if the little girl managed to flee while he was killing them, that would be a significant loss.

Thus, he chose to kill the little girl first before slowly killing off this group of people. He was Situ Wuya, he would definitely make sure..... That these people got what they deserved.

The black clothed male was extremely strong, more so than anyone had thought, their expressions had changed as Ma Ziyue exclaimed, the Star Blade swinging forward as it pierced towards him from the back.

Qin Jiagui's right hand clenched, his entire right arm transformed into metal as the Demolishing Iron Fist smashed towards the male's back.

The two sides had already engaged in conflict, it would only end if one side perished. If they did not kill the black clothed male, the other party would definitely not let them off after achieving his goals.

Within this forest, there was no such thing as logic or law.

By the side, the middle aged man suddenly let loose an explosive howl: "Everyone dodge!"

The others were startled as they halted their movement, thereafter they saw him take a huge wok from behind his back, his hands were holding the wok as streaks of strange light began to flash before he finally tossed it.

“Cyclone Wok!” The middle aged man burst out, there was a layer of streaking light on the wok as it suddenly flew forward, its might was astounding as it instantly struck the black clothed male who had just leapt into the air.

The black clothed male had just jumped up and could not dodge in time, the four black pythons behind him could only attempt to forcefully block the frightening wok.

Both sides collided as a terrifying ‘Boom!’ rang out, the black clothed male groaned as he spat blood, the wok had been stopped but rather than falling to the ground, it actually boomeranged back towards the middle aged man.

The force behind this blow was astounding, Zhang Zhongmou saw this and could not help but yell: “Awesome!”

The middle aged man was also an expert of the fourth tier, with regards to strength alone he was definitely not any weaker than the black clothed male, it was merely because he had been sneak attacked and his blood loss was severe, this had caused his strength to be greatly weakened. If they had met head on, it was difficult to guess who would be the eventual victor.

The might of the Cyclone Wok was terrifying, the four black

pythons behind the male seemed to lose all strength as his body was sent flying away, falling several tens of metres away, coincidentally right beside Su Yu.

Su Yu was still feeling weak and did not rush into the battle, he had retreated to the back but did not expect to see the black clothed male flung to his side. He hesitated for a moment and wanted to retreat but the male actually roared before jumping up, grabbing Su Yu.

The black clothed male wanted to kill the little girl but continually failed at his attempts, he had even been sent flying away by a large wok and spat blood, this made him extremely pissed. Seeing Su Yu by his side as he stood up, his hand immediately grabbed, ready to kill this person first in order to quell some of his fury.

His right arm had grabbed onto Su Yu, five fingers circled and twisted as he planned to snap Su Yu's head off.

"Su Yu!" Jade and Ma Ziyue screamed, they wanted to help but it was already too late.

If the black clothed male had grabbed onto Li Dong, Liu Zheng of any other person, with his abilities, he would certainly be able to easily snap their head, causing them to immediately die. It was such a coincidence that the person he grabbed was actually Su Yu.

Although Su Yu did not feel much energy within his body, his combat awareness, natural reflexes and adaptive abilities had not

been lost, as the black clothed male stretched forward to grab, he had already understood what the male was planning to do.

Under the threat of death, Su Yu's mind suddenly became extremely calm, his body contracted, as the arm of the male twisted, his body also twisted allowing him to escape from the grasp, his two arms then pushed against the chest of the black clothed male.

If Su Yu had strange energy present, he could have activated the Rending Storm and this blow would surely pierce through the chest of the male.

The black clothed male never expected Su Yu to be so agile, his arms had attempted to circle around but Su Yu had already escaped, he was dazed for a moment and was actually pushed aside by Su Yu.

He could not believe that he had failed to kill a fellow who seemed to powerless, the black clothed male angrily snarled as the lifeless black pythons suddenly flew up emitting explosive noises as they pierced towards Su Yu.

This was the absolute difference in strength, no matter how skillful Su Yu was, his body did not have an ounce of strange energy and even if he wanted to react his body could not keep up, he could only watch as he was pierced by the black pythons, fresh blood spewed forth as he miserably howled.

Chapter 150: Golden Thumb

Su Yu's reaction time was godly and had infuriated the black clothed male, in his anger he used his full force, the four black pythons which had appeared to be smashed lifeless by the Cyclone Wok had suddenly rushed forward, instantly piercing Su Yu's body.

"Roar!" Su Yu miserably howled, in this instant, the silent black crystals which were formed from strange energy began to flare up.

It seemed as though they had felt that their owner was faced with a life and death situation, causing these black crystals to instinctively explode, "crack!", the rush of strange energy was frightening as the sound of beans being fried could be heard from within Su Yu's body, the strange energy continued to wildly surge.

Su Yu roared towards the sky, his entire body suddenly exploded with power, actually caused the black pythons which had pierced his body to immediately be forced out of his body, the surging energy actually caused the black clothed male to fall to the ground.

"What?" The black clothed male was alarmed.

Su Yu's continued to emit out howls as his body released frightening amounts of strange energy, like the spring tide of the Yangtze river, flowing out from his left arm and chest, the four 'doors' seemed to be loosen as though it would be forced open yet simply lacked that final nudge.

Su Yu acted as his right hand clenched, a golden light exploded forth as he willed it, finally, all the strange energy gathered to rush at the door that was blocking his right arm.

“Kaboom!”

Su Yu’s mind felt as though there were tens of thousands of fluctuations, this door had finally collapsed as the frightening strange energy rushed into Su Yu’s right arm.

“Aowooooooooo!”

Su Yu howled as his right arm stretched forth, the strange energy continued to surge wildly, actually wrapping around that drop of Golden Blood within it. In no time, the Golden Blood began to spread, continually roiling within his right arm. The frightening energy was like a roaring dragon, this was the first time he could use the full power of the Golden Blood without fear of any repercussions.

“Fourth tier!”

Su Yu understood that he had broken through once again, entering the more powerful fourth realm, the current him was already a legitimate tier four dark iron warrior.

Black scales appeared, covering his left hand as it continued to spread, covering his left arm, chest and right arm. The black scales had fully covered his entire upper chest and arms, the drop of

Golden Blood within his arm was also flowing, Su Yu willed it as his right thumb lifted, suddenly, the jet black claws on his right thumb actually turned gold.

Surrounded by the jet black scales, this golden claw was exceptionally dazzling, contained within was an unfathomable destructive power.

Su Yu's transformation had shocked everyone, even the black clothed male and middle aged man were stunned.

They were both tier four dark iron warriors and had experienced the change from tier three to tier four, however, no one had expected the exaggerated ruckus that had come together with Su Yu's transformation.

At his chest area, the origin force necklace began to sway on its own, Su Yu lifted the golden thumb claw on his right hand as he suddenly moved, the sound of rustling could be heard as he suddenly appeared before the male, pressing down towards him.

Feeling the strange threat of death, the black clothed male snarled as the four pythons behind him began to wildly flail at Su Yu, the arm sword also pierced towards his chest as he exclaimed: "This little girl is someone that the White Tiger wishes to kill, getting yourselves caught up in her business, there's only death!"

The black clothed male yelled his threat, Su Yu and the others had no information regarding this world and did not feel any pressure.

No one knew what the White Tiger meant.

The four black pythons struck, their might was imposing, Su Yu kept a cool expression, as he stretched his golden thumb forward, pressing towards one of the black pythons.

This black python began to disintegrate inch by inch until it finally reached the back of the male, thereafter, the other three black pythons also began to disintegrate as the black clothed male let out a miserable cry, the disintegration of the black pythons was akin to ripping his flesh off.

A single thumb had shattered the four black pythons of the black clothed male, the Rending Storm was activated on his left hand as it forcefully struck the arm sword of the black clothed male, an explosive sound rang out as the Rending Storm clashed with the arm sword, causing dazzling sparks to fly.

Although the Rending Storm was strong, the black clothed male was also an expert of the fourth tier, his arm sword was also exceptionally sturdy and this clash was actually even.

The black clothed male howled as he thought of retaliating, Su Yu frowned as his right golden thumb suddenly pressed, pressing onto the arm sword that could evenly match his Rending Storm.

The sturdy arm sword was immediately disintegrated like tofu without a single sound.

The black clothed male was wide-eyed as he cried in terror: “What is that power?!”

Su Yu was calm as he continued to press the golden thumb towards the forehead of the black clothed male.

“Burst!”

All noise from the black clothed male abruptly ended, his head had suddenly blown apart, as though there were a small bomb held within which had detonated.

Su Yu frowned as he retracted his hand to wipe his face, there was plenty of blood and pieces of flesh that had splattered onto him making him feel uncomfortable.

The black clothed male’s corpse which had lost its left arm and head fell silently to the ground, the strange energy contained within his body began to flow out emitting ‘Chi’ ‘Chi’ noises, the higher a person’s tier when they died the more obvious the loss of strange energy.

Su Yu stopped circulating his strange energy as the scales and golden thumb claw retracted, within his mind, information continually flowed reminding him to choose a new ability.

Having reached the fourth tier, Su Yu could once again choose whether to upgrade a pre-existing ability or to learn a new one.

The new ability that he could learn was the 'Protective Bulwark' which was a defensive ability, the four abilities he currently had could be upgraded, the Eye of Perception could be upgraded to become the Eye of Divinity, the Lizard's Arm could be upgraded to become Lizard's Bestial Morph, the Fang Bullet Burst could be upgraded to the more powerful and longer ranged Fang Bullet Cannon, as for the Rending Storm that was once upgraded it could be further advanced to become the Cataclysmic Storm.

Su Yu began to fall into deep thought, he currently had the Rending Storm together with the ten odd hidden holes within his body which could suck strange energy, together with the ability to utilise the Golden Blood, it could be said that his offensive capabilities had already reached a frightening level, even the black clothed male who was at the fourth tier could not withstand a single blow from him.

Compared to his offensive capabilities, his defense was comparably weaker, he had thus decided to go with the Protective Bulwark.

As though there were a supernatural presence that exceeded one's imagination, at the moment Su Yu decided on the Protective Bulwark, a stream of information immediately flooded through his mind, all the rules and usage regarding the Protective Bulwark flooded into his mind, firmly imprinting itself without any possibility of him forgetting it. Although he had just comprehended it and could not use it effectively, he could already use a simple shield.

With a single thought, Su Yu's left hand stretched forth as his five fingers extended outwards, thereafter, a thin translucent shield that had strands of metal-like texture appeared within his hands.

The Protective Bulwark was a unique form of utilising the strange energy in the form of qi, utilising it to form a shield which could block extremely fierce attacks, it could be considered a very powerful defensive ability.

There was a deeper reason why Su Yu had chosen the Protective Bulwark, he still remembered the first time he met with the third tier expert Chu Xiang.

Chu Xiang was definitely not weak but had died in an instant due to his Earth Spike Assault. At that time she was caught off guard, but even then if she was prepared for it, the power of these types of magical spells was simply too frightening, if Chu Xiang had a defensive ability it was not definite that she would be able to preserve her life.

Although Su Yu's current offensive power was phenomenal, if he met an enemy who had a similar magical spell as his Earth Spikes Assault, he would have no defensive abilities to handle it and would fall to a similar fate as Chu Xiang.

Su Yu tested the Protective Bulwark but was unsatisfied, he needed to study it further, improvise to better utilise it, such as allowing it to appear at any part of his body, in this manner he would be able to better protect himself.

For example, if the Protective Bulwark could appear below his feet, this would be able to defend him against an attack like the Earth Spikes Assault, Su Yu believed that if he was able to block such an attack, he would definitely be able to kill the other party.

After killing the black clothed male and entering tier four, the wounds which had been pierced by the black pythons were swiftly recovering, his two arms and upper body could enter into a transformed state, together with his ability to utilise the Golden Blood, his strength had been greatly increased. His strange energy could freely flow between his two arms and chest, there were currently only three doors remaining in his body preventing the strange energy from entering his legs and head region, Su Yu could guess that there was likely three more chances to advance.

On the ground, Zhou Birong had stood up as she brought the little girl to her feet. The little girl was still dazed as she saw how Su Yu had killed the black clothed male, this only lasted for a moment before she recovered and shouted: “Uncle!” As she ran towards the middle aged man.

“Ha, Haha.....” The middle aged man had lost too much blood and was laying on the ground, his face was extremely pale, following the death of the black clothed male, the strange power that was acting on him had disappeared, his wounds had stopped bleeding and were beginning to heal, being at the fourth tier, it would only take half a day before he fully recovered.

“Little lass..... I’m alright.” The middle aged man coughed, placing the big wok behind his back again as he slowly stood up.

“Uncle, thank you, thank you.....” The little girl rubbed her eyes.

Chapter 151: Super Chef

The middle aged man laughed: “You should be thanking these people..... anyways, I don’t need the gratitude of a little kid, I hate little kids with innocent looks like you the most.” As he said this, he began walking towards Su Yu and the others.

The little girl did not listen to the words of the middled aged man, she knew that the mouth of the middle aged man was stubborn, although he said he hated little kids, he had risked his life to save her.

“Many thanks everyone, my name is Fang Jiong, 32, I’m a Super chef, before coming to this forest I was one, even now I’m still one.” The middle aged man smiled as he looked at Su Yu, introducing himself. As he spoke of his super chef status, this Fang Jiong had an expression of pride on his face.

Fang Jiong’s eyes were sharp, he could already tell that Su Yu was the strongest within the group, he immediately surmised that he was the leader, thus speaking directly to him.

This Fang Jiong was also an expert of the fourth tier, Su Yu did not dare to be discourteous as he respectfully replied: “My name is Su Yu, I’m a student, these people are my comrades.” Thereafter, Qin Jiagui and the others began to introduce themselves.

At the back, the little girl walked forward as she said in a sweet voice: “My name is Kou Xiaowei, everyone can call me Xiao Wei, thank you big brothers and sisters.” As she said this, she also

bowed down before the group, thereafter, she smiled affectionately at Zhou Birong.

Back then, it was Zhou Birong who had rushed forward to save her.

Zhou Birong stretched her hand forward as she gently tousled Xiao Wei's silky hair, her face filled with a motherly affection that was once again released, the blow of Ding Shan's death was very immense, when faced with Xiao Wei who was roughly Ding Shan's age, all the regret and feelings she had towards Ding Shan were slowly being transferred to Xiao Wei.

Zhang Zhongmou was by the side searching the headless corpse of the black clothed male. This black clothed male was an expert of the fourth tier, his background was mysterious and had mentioned something about a White Tiger, Zhang Zhongmou wanted to see if there was anything on his body that was of use, something like a precious treasure would be great.

Having searched his entire body, he did not manage to find anything exception six to seven smooth little stones, these stones were exceptionally smooth, four sided and flat, like four sided coins with a strange small 'Time' carved on their surface.

Zhang Zhongmou curiously asked: "What is this thing?" Inspecting them piece by piece, they had all been carved with the 'Time' word.

The others frowned, they were unsure what it was when the little

girl Xiao Wei suddenly spoke up: “This is a ‘Time Coin’, this fellow is really pathetic, so poor.”

“Time Coin?” The group were dazed for a moment, even Fang Jiong reacted in the same manner, it was clear that he had no idea as well.

Xiao Wei strangely asked: “Don’t you guys know? This is time money, each piece represents an hour of time, they can be used to buy various items.”

“Buy stuff? What stuff can be bought with this?” The group were very curious, Xiao Wei seemed to understand something as she covered her mouth, hurriedly shaking her head: “There’s actually nothing.....” before curiously measuring Su Yu and the others, thereafter she seemed to understand something else as she continued: “Xiao Wei understand, you guys are like uncle, you were chosen and sent in here..... That means you guys will be required to buy time, Xiao Wei won’t need them.”

The group were befuddled as Su Yu interjected: “Xiao Wei, why was the black clothed fellow trying to kill you? What is the White Tiger he spoke of?”

His question had just been asked when Xiao Wei suddenly covered her ears as she shrilly cried: “Don’t..... Don’t talk about it.....” Her entire body was trembling as she suddenly fell to the ground, her face was filled with terror.

Su Yu immediately stopped talking.

Zhou Birong hurried forward to support Xiao Wei, gently patting her back as she whispered: “Don’t be scared, it’s alright, everything’s alright.”

Xiao Wei continued to sob spasmodically as she stood up, her entire body was still trembling and her initially clear eyes currently held fear in them.

Su Yu and the others began to exchange glances, they did not understand what the White Tiger represented, how could it incite such fear in Xiao Wei?

The group certainly knew that in ancient times, the White Tiger represented one of the four sacred beasts, however, this was a different world and they were unsure what the black clothed male meant by White Tiger, or was he merely indicating something? Was it a form to signalling?

Fang Jiong suddenly said in a solemn voice: “Let’s bury him.” as he pointed at the corpse of the black clothed male.

After Xiao Wei’s strange performance, the mysterious time money and the White Tiger left a strange feeling within them, there were even hints of fear. Fang Jiong’s words resounded with the group as they swiftly buried the corpse before breathing a sigh of relief.

Qin Jiagui began to ask about Fang Jiong’s journey, Fang Jiong briefly explained his story and the group finally got a rough

understanding of him.

He was actually from a seven star hotel's super restaurant, his culinary skills were superb but his character was rather strange, especially his attachment to the culinary arts, it was simply unfathomable, after earning sufficient money, he had left his job as a chef to travel the world. His goal was to learn all the different unique methods of cooking within the world, it could be said that he was a person who lived for the culinary arts.

He was in the Sichuan province taking part in a gourmet food competition when a Sky Hole had suddenly appeared, Fang Jiong together with his half prepared food and kitchen utensils had been dropped into this forest, thereafter he had been assaulted by the Lesser Goblins.

o

Due to long years of toil, Fang Jiong's knife skills were exceptionally, he was bear waisted and tiger backed, his strength was immense and coupled with his butcher's knife, he was actually stronger than a Lesser Goblin. After killing the first Lesser Goblin, he had gained strength and steadily grew stronger, he began to explore the forest alone, he wanted to find an exit and came into contact with Xiao Wei who was lost.

Although he constantly said that he hated little kids, Xiao Wei had constantly followed him without being rejected, he had instead saved Xiao Wei several times, the two had been travelling within the forest for several days, when Fang Jiong was bored, he would take the meat of the Lesser Goblins and Gnomes to test, using his culinary prowess, the taste was actually quite decent.

Fang Jiong had never asked about the background of Xiao Wei, in his words, she was merely a little kid, who cared what her background was, since she wanted to follow him, he would just let it be.

Their short exchange together with Fang Jiong's selflessness in using his life to protect Xiao Wei had caused him to secretly accept him, they knew that this was a man worth befriending, most importantly, he was also an expert of the fourth tier and an impressive chef, adding such a person to the group was full of benefits.

Qin Jiagui wanted to befriend him and also began to simply explain their backgrounds, explaining how their school had fallen into a Sky Hole, their group had explored the forest, finding a map which indicated a location which could possibly be the exit.

Elation could be seen on Fang Jiong's face, this news made him grin from ear to ear, over the past few days of exploring the forest, it was simply without any purpose and he finally heard the hope of leaving this place, causing him to feel excited.

The other girls surrounded Xiao Wei, wanting to ask about her background. However, when they spoke of anything related to this, her face would fill with terror as she shook her head, not saying anything more. Finally, everyone could only helplessly give up, they had a feeling that the girl was definitely not simple and clearly had many secrets.

Fang Jiong and Xiao Wei were willing to join their group, forming a group of sixteen as they proceeded on.

Su Yu had become extremely powerful, he could not help but think of Ning Yan, wondering how she fared and whether he had the ability to help her, with the exit so near, he would find the exit before deciding on the next course of action.

Nothing peculiar occurred this afternoon, they met with a small pack of Lesser Goblins which ran at the sight of them, these monsters could sense that their group was not easily trifled with.

An hour later, the group came to a sheer cliff that was seemed to be bottomless, Qin Jiagui looked at the map as he frowned, the map did not indicate any sheer cliff and the road ahead was blocked off. Qin jiagui could only rely on estimation to point the group in a direction to bypass it, the forest around them was on undulating ground and the road became harder to traverse, the speed of the group greatly fell as a result.

By the time the sky turned dark, the group had not managed to bypass the cliffs, Qin Jiagui unfurled the map as he began to search for a suitable place to spend the night.

In no time, he found an area that was empty and littered to rubble: “How about this area? We can rest the night there and continue tomorrow to look for the exit.”

Su Yu nodded, Zhang Zhongmou also agreed with Su Yu as he raised his voice: “Then let’s rest here, your grandnanny, why is it that the closer we are to the exit, the more restless I feel.” as he said this, he began to place the large bags of food on the ground.

The others swiftly began to place the bags of food on the ground before looking in all directions, checking if there were any hidden dangers.

Fang Jiong began to remove the kitchen utensils from his back as Xiao Wei curiously asked: “Uncle, what do they mean by the exit of the forest?”

Fang Jiong replied: “Why’s a little kid like you asking so much? Really naggy.”

Xiao Wei pouted as Zhou Birong smiled: “That is the exit to this forest, by then we won’t have to be afraid of all these frightening monsters.”

Xiao Wei was stunned for a moment before answering: “Leave the forest? This..... that’s impossible.”

Zhou Birong pointed at Qin Jiagui before whispering: “We inadvertently found a map, the map indicates where the exit of the forest is. Don’t ask too much, you will understand tomorrow.”

Xiao Wei had an indescribable expression on her face as she obediently kept quiet, no longer asking.

Chapter 152: Reaching The Exit

Su Yu was continually thinking of how to improve the Protective Bulwark, after pondering for a while, he went to Zhang Zhongmou: “Old Mou, take out your Red Lotus Sword to exchange pointers with me.”

Zhang Zhongmou retrieved the Red Lotus Sword: “How do you wish to do this?”

Su Yu’s right hand moved as a semi translucent black gold shield appeared before his hand: “Take your sword and chop down, remember to be accurate.”

Zhang Zhongmou laughed: “Good fellow, what’s this? Is this your new ability?”

Su Yu nodded as Fang Jiong spoke up: “This is a defensive ability, after the battle yesterday, I realise the importance of having one. If I had chosen a defensive ability, I wouldn’t have suffered so much yesterday.”

As their tiers increased, the abilities of the other party would become more and more frightening, having a defensive ability was becoming very important.

Zhang Zhongmou’s face immediately transformed as he howled: “Careful! I’m coming!” wielding the Red Lotus Sword as he chopped towards Su Yu’s Protective Bulwark.

“Keng!”

The Protective Bulwark was unharmed and it was actually Zhang Zhongmou who exclaimed, the Red Lotus Sword had been bounced out of his hand.

“Ahhhh! Damn that’s painful!” Zhang Zhongmou had used too much strength, the rebound was immense and the webbing between his thumb and index finger had actually torn.

Su Yu was stunned for a moment, he did not expect the Protective Bulwark to be so sturdy, he was immediately elated but Fang Jiong who was by the side shook his head: “This brother has his strange energy concentrated mostly within his face, he doesn’t have much strength. Although the sword is sharp, it cannot break through your Protective Bulwark. If it were a tier four expert together with this sword, that would be a different story.”

Su Yu swiftly calmed down, his Protective Bulwark was to be used against experts, Zhang Zhongmou was only at tier two and his hands did not contain any strange energy, asking him to try was not getting a very good representation of the strength of the Protective Bulwark. Being able to block the Red Lotus Sword in his hands did not mean that it could defend against the powerful attacks of other tier four dark iron warriors.

“Brother Fang, why don’t you assist me to test it.” Su Yu recalled that Fang Jiong was also a tier four expert.

Fang Jiong laughed as he stood up, he was 1.92 metres tall, when he stood up he gave one a feeling of pressure.

The opponent had switched to Fang Jiong and Su Yu did not dare to be careless, his two arms immediately straightened as black scales covered them, protecting his arms and chest within the black scales.

“Brother Fang, bring it.” Su Yu’s right hand extended as the Protective Bulwark appeared.

Fang Jiong flexed his arms before picking up the butcher’s knife from the ground: “My ability is to allow any object I use to become a part of my body, turning it into a weapon.” As he said this, his right hand seemed to emit a black coloured fluctuation, this light spread to the butcher’s knife, immediately shrouding it within.

“Careful, this butcher’s knife which has been strengthened by my strange energy isn’t some ordinary butcher’s knife!” Fang Jiong howled as he suddenly moved forward, the butcher’s knife within his hand chopping heavily towards Su Yu.

“Hua la!”

An explosive noise rang out, this noise was extremely piercing, a moment later, Fang Jiong and Su Yu were groaning as the butcher’s knife bounced out of Fang Jiong’s hand while Su Yu’s Protective Bulwark was shattered.

Su Yu took a step back, he was dazed as he looked at his right hand, his face a mask of concentration.

Fang Jiong's blow had not been done with all his strength, however, the blow had been able to shatter the Protective Bulwark. The Protective Bulwark was an ability that was solely used for defense, if it were to shatter so easily against an opponent of the same tier, then this defensive ability was really too frail.

"This Protective Bulwark doesn't seem to be all that....." Fang Jiong lamented.

Su Yu nodded, his mind swiftly replaying the butcher's knife chopping down on his Protective Bulwark, thinking back as to how his strange energy was distributed and which portion of it had started to shatter first, thereafter he would try to improve it.

Fang Jiong noticed that Su Yu had fallen into deep thought and did not disturb him, rescinding his strange energy as he sat back down.

Zhang Zhongmou threw him a bag of food as Fang Jiong took out a piece of bread, biting into it as he sighed: "It's a pity that the conditions here aren't suitable, otherwise, I can let all of you have a taste of my culinary skills." Speaking about the culinary arts, the eyes of this person who was a super chef immediately began to shine.

Suddenly, Su Yu who was by the side jumped up: "Brother Fang, let's go at it again."

Fang Jiong laughed: “Alright.” wielding his butcher’s knife as he stood up, chopping down once again.

Su Yu’s right hand extended as the Protective Bulwark appeared.

“Keng!”

This time, the butcher’s knife was repelled but Su Yu’s Protective Bulwark was left unharmed.

Su Yu was beginning to feel elated but the Protective Bulwark suddenly began to shatter.

“Still not good enough, that’s weird.” Su Yu hugged his head as he sat down, falling into deep contemplation once again.

A short while later, Su Yu found Fang Jiong to test once again, each time he would understand a little more of the technique and would find a way to make it even stronger. After several improvements, Fang Jiong chopped down four to five times but was repelled each time, leaving no damage on the Protective Bulwark.

“Success! So impressive master Yu!” Zhang Zhongmou who was by the side shouted.

Fang Jiong also lifted his thumb at Su Yu before laughing: “Not bad, I can’t shatter your shield with a normal chop. Let me try to use my abilities now, if you are still able to guard it, it can then be

considered a perfect defense.” Fang Jiong’s competitive spirit had been aroused.

Su Yu nodded, his left hand pressing on his right shoulder as the Protective Bulwark appeared once again, a jet black light was swirling above it.

The butcher’s knife was dangling within Fang Jiong’s hands as he slowly lifted it up, his left hand moved to grab the knife, wielding it with his two hands before suddenly roaring out. With his chest as the source, streaks of black undulations began to extend outwards, shrouding his arms and chest within, the butcher’s knife within his hand extended rapidly to about a two foot long blade that was radiating with black ripples.

“Steel Shattering Cleave!” Fang Jiang stomped as he roared, his figure that was 1.92 metres tall was covered in black undulations as it heavily smashed onto Su Yu’s Protective Bulwark.

“Chi!”

Su Yu groaned as he retreated just in the nick of time, the Protective Bulwark within his hands had been shattered like tofu, if he had been slightly slower, it was likely that he would have been injured.

Who knew that the reworked Protective Bulwark would also fall in a single blow, Su Yu could not help but depressedly sigh, being able to change the Protective Bulwark to such a level was already his current limit, wanting to further improve it was already an

extremely difficult matter because he felt that the Protective Bulwark was already at a near perfect state, why couldn't it defend against the attack?

“Hahaha!” Fang Jiong noticed Su Yu's forlorn expression as he laughed: “Don't be depressed, that was my strongest ability, I had to gather all my energy before barely breaking your shield, if it were a real battle, I may not have the time to prepare such a blow.”

Su Yu shook his head as he kept silent for a moment, he seemed to think of something as he smiled: “One more time, use the Steel Shattering Cleave again.” thereafter, he immediately activated the Protective Bulwark again.

“Even if we go at it one more time, the result will be the same.” Fang Jiong was extremely confident in his Steel Shattering Cleave, although the defensive prowess of Su Yu's upgraded Protective Bulwark was astonishing, he was the same tier as Su Yu and if a blow that contained all his might was unable to break the shield, that would be too ridiculous.

Fang Jiong did not hesitate as he immediately gathered all his energy, activating the Steel Shattering Cleave once again as ripples of black light started to converge and formed a blade shape that chopped towards Su Yu's shield.

Almost at the same time, Su Yu secretly used the drop of Golden Blood contained within his right thumb, inserting a portion of the energy into the shield.

This was an idea that had just filled his mind, he wanted to try using the Golden Blood to aid the Protective Bulwark, using a portion of its energy to supplement it.

The outcome was swiftly decided, the Protective Bulwark which had a layer of black light above it suddenly had streaks of golden meshed within, thereafter, Fang Jiong groaned as the black coloured blade form immediately shattered upon contact, he seemed as though he had been struck by lightning, swaying as he almost fell to the ground.

“What happened?” Fang Jiong was shocked, earlier he had suddenly felt a frightening energy fluctuation from the Protective Bulwark which had instantly shattered his blade form, directly shocking his body causing him to feel as though he had been shocked by lightning, he could not help but sway as he backed away, like as if he was drunk on alcohol.

Su Yu smiled as he rescinded the energy from the Golden Blood, the black scales on his body disappeared, returning back to normal.

Fang Jiong was suspicious as he looked at Su Yu before bitterly laughing: “You are really impressive, really.” Su Yu had just reached the tier four stage but had already improvised his ability, causing Fang Jiong’s strongest blow to be bounced back, such a shocking performance made Fang Jiong really respect him, it was no wonder the black clothed male had died in Su Yu’s hands.

The newcomers to the group like Liu Zheng, Xie Zhiming, Xue Shan and the others noticed this, they were sure that Su Yu who

did not often stand out was definitely the real expert.

This night was calm without any incidents, when the sky became bright again the group kept their belongings before continuing on their journey. Qin Jiagui held the map as he constantly compared it to the terrain, his brows were in a constant frown because the map seemed to have slight changes after a night had passed.

Following the undulating mountain road, the group managed to finally bypass the sheer cliff, finally seeing a mountain.

The mountain peak was not high, like a short fat person, but it encompassed an extremely large area of land. Upon seeing this mountain, Qin Jiagui breathed out: “This is the place, based on the map, the exit is somewhere on this mountain.

The group felt their hearts shiver for a moment before becoming suspicious, how could the exit be on a mountain? They felt that this was rather strange, however, they were happy at a change of scenery after being cooped up in the forest for so long. Although it was merely a small mountain, it still gave one a refreshing feeling, at least they did not need to see the numbing vision of green anymore.

“Since we’re here what are we waiting for? Qin Jiagui, let’s go!” Zhang Zhongmou shouted.

Qin Jiagui nodded before checking the directions again and muttering irresolutely to himself. Thereafter they winded around a mound where they saw an odd, short and stout tree. On both

sides there were inclined surface of the mountain, and on the mountain wall itself there was various kinds of plants and vines. It appears that no one has ever traversed across this area before.

“It should be here, let’s go.” Qin Jiagui walked past the strange short and thick tree as the group of sixteen began to slowly walk towards the mountain.

The mountain road was extremely tough, the group struggled to move forward, it was fortunate that everyone had strange energy within their bodies, Zhao Shichang and Zhang Zhongmou continued to open a path forward while Qin Jiagui continually inspected the terrain, pointing a direction for them to move in. This mountain road undulated and constantly twisted and turned, finally, the group stopped because there was no path ahead of them.

Qin Jiagui looked at the map before inspecting the terrain, his expression seemed rather rigid.

A valley was in front of them, the valley was filled with all sorts of green vines and shrubs, there were also the strange short and thick trees earlier. Atop these strange trees were vines, one simply could not see any exit and the reason for Qin Jiagui’s rigid expression was because, based on the map, the exit was supposed to be here.

“Qin Jiagui, where’s the exit? There isn’t any path to continue on.” Zhang Zhongmou stabbed the Red Lotus Sword into the ground beside him as he looked at him with a puzzled expression.

The area ahead was a dead end, there was simply no path forward, however, why did the map indicate that the exit was here? Qin Jiagui was puzzled as he muttered: “How could it be like this..... The map clearly indicates that the exit is here..... even if it isn’t an exit, there should at least be something else here..... how could..... It be a dead end.....”

The expressions of the others immediately became forlorn and disappointed.

The exit on the map was their only driving force and hope that they had held onto throughout the journey in the forest, suddenly losing this, this blow was simply unimaginable.

Lei Rui suddenly interjected: “Maybe the exit is hidden, so many trees and vines are before us, if there really is an exit, could it be blocked by the vegetation?”

“That’s right.” Qin Jiagui’s spirit was raised: “It could be that the exit is blocked, everyone, let’s first clear up the vegetation.

“Okay!” Zhao Shichang was the first to act, waving his right hand as the bone blade went forward. Actually, everyone had a bad feeling in their hearts, however, this was already their last hope and they could only assure themselves that the exit must have been hidden.

Zhao Shichang was the first to rush forward, Zhang Zhongmou followed closely with his Red Lotus Sword, Ma Ziye used the Star

Blade, the entire group went forward to clear up the vegetation, hoping to find an exit.

Qin Jiagui stared at the map as he muttered: “It’s clearly here..... It should be here..... exit, where’s the exit.....”

Chapter 153: Skeleton Army

Qin Jiagui muttered to himself with creased brows, Zhao Shichang and the others continued to clear the vegetation in the area, the strange trees were chopped down one after another as the entire forest was cleared. Su Yu was looking at the forest before them that was devoid of vegetation, revealing the brown dirt beneath, he was already beginning to consider what they should do if there really was not any exit here.

The 666 on the back of Ning Yan's neck, the number 8 on Lei Rui's chest, the mysterious background of Xiao Wei, White Tiger, Time Coins, the giant foot, all this pointed to something that far exceeded their imaginations within the forest world.

Su Yu was unsure what these matters hid, but he could guess that if he continued to grow stronger, he would be able to encounter more and more things and one day find out the truth. For example, why did their school come to this world and how did the Sky Holes occur? All this seemed as though there were a large indistinct hand that was at work. Even the strange energy that they obtained and the transformations that came with it were mysteries to be solved.

Once all these matters came together, one simply could not use coincidence to explain it off. There were definitely many secrets on the little girl Xiao Wei's body, she seemed to know something but when the group asked, she simply would not talk. Seeing that she was merely a young child, the group did not interrogate her.

Thinking of the people who had died during this journey, Su Yu promised that if he managed to find the truth behind everything

that had happened and gained sufficient power, he would definitely destroy the thing that played with the lives of humans so frivolously.

Su Yu silently promised to himself while on the other side, Zhao Shichang suddenly exclaimed: “Look here!” In his voice, excitement could be heard.

The others felt their hearts tighten as they hurriedly looked over. Zhao Shichang had cleared a large patch of forest that was near a rock wall, he had accidentally sliced at the rock wall causing a hole to suddenly appear.

Suddenly seeing a hole here, it was no wonder that Zhao Shichang felt excitement and elation. After all, this was the area indicated on the map that held the exit.

The others began to trickle forward as Zhang Zhongmou aided Zhao Shichang in clearing the remaining vegetation. In no time, the natural hole that had been covered by green vines appeared before the group.

This stone cave was approximately two metres tall and two metres wide, the entrance to the cave was covered with sharp rocks that were likely not manmade but rather naturally. Thinking of the thick vegetation that covered this place, even if it were a man made hole, it was likely that no one had come here in tens of years, otherwise, how could the vegetation overgrow and cover the entire hole.

“So how is it? Could it be..... Could it be that this stone cave is the exit?” Zhao Shichang cleared up the area as he asked in excitement and nervousness.

Zhang Zhongmou answered: “It’s very possible that after going through this cave, we can return to the world that we are familiar with. Since we fell through a Sky Hole to enter this forest, it could be that this cave is the exit of the forest, that doesn’t sound too ludicrous.”

Qin Jiagui kept the map as he said seriously: “Whether it is the exit or not, this place is currently our only hope, let’s go in and take a look.”

At this moment, the vegetation in the other areas had also been cleared, within this valley, there was only the natural stone cave that remained and with it the possibility of an exit. The group had no other choice, they also felt that Zhang Zhongmou’s words had a good chance of being true and the chance of this being an exit was quite high.

Since they could fall from a Sky Hole into this forest, it was also possible that they could exit through a mysterious stone cave.

Thinking of this, the group began to grow excited as Qin Jiagui spoke up: “I wonder if there are any dangers within the stone cave, everyone increase your awareness, if we meet with any danger, don’t be flustered.”

Thereafter they began to form up, Su Yu led the group with Ma

Ziye closely behind, thereafter Qin Jiagui and Zhang Zhongmou followed. These experts were placed at the front of the group, the weaker ones were in the middle while Zhao Shichang, Fang Jiong and the others were placed at the back.

Everyone maintained a fix distance with each other, if there was any danger, they would then have sufficient time to react.

The stone cave was extremely dark without any lighting, Qin Jiagui took out a couple of torchlights as Su Yu, Qin Jiagui and Zhou Birong each took a torchlight to ensure that they could maintain visibility.

Su Yu's right hand held a torchlight, black scales appeared on the back of his left hand as he entered the stone cave.

This stone cave had been covered by vegetation but was not a sealed area, they would not suffer from problems of lack of oxygen. Su Yu carried his torch as he illuminated the path ahead. The stone cave actually curved as it progressed, thus allowing him to see only ten odd metres away, the surroundings were jagged rock that were covered with moss, there was also a dank and putrid stench in the air.

Su Yu walked slowly as he carefully perused the surroundings, the torchlight was continually shone in all directions. After crossing the ten odd metres, they reached the curve in the stone cave, Su Yu waved his torchlight in that direction and did not see anything strange as he continued forward. The ground was still undulating, no one spoke as the sound of breathing and footsteps echoed.

They continued deeper, after approximately fifty metres, the gradient began to gradually increase, it was also becoming darker and Liu Zheng could not help but speak: “Is there really an exit in this place? Why does it feel more and more eerie, I’m afraid we are almost in the belly of the mountain.....”

His words were barely spoken when Su Yu’s expression suddenly changed, lifting his head as he shined the torchlight upwards, he was shocked to discover a white humanoid skeleton that was lying on the ceiling, as Su Yu shone the torchlight, a green fire suddenly lit up within the eyes of the lifeless skeleton, thereafter, one skeleton after another began to descend.

“Careful!” Su Yu exclaimed. In the blink of an eye, the entire frontal area of the group was filled with skeletons, numerous and densely packed, there were clearly over one hundred of these white skeletons.

Things had occurred suddenly as the group immediately acted.

Su Yu, Zhang Zhongmou, Ma Ziyue, Qin Jiagui, Zhao Shichang, Fang Jiong and the others could be considered to be veterans who had faced many life and death situations, although the assault was sudden, their reactions were very swift. As for Huo Shan, Liu Zheng, Xie Zhiming and the other newcomers, they were confused and filled with fear, only Xu Ruyun managed to keep his cool, his two hands already had many surgical knives within them as he began to throw them at a skeleton that was moving towards him.

These humanoid skeletons began to move in an inconceivable manner, this was something that greatly exceeded their understanding of living things.

Su Yu's right hand held the torchlight while his left hand was instantly covered in scales, a fist was sent flying forth as a skeleton that was attacking was immediately shattered, the Eye of Perception was activated as the information regarding the white skeletons entered his mind.

Name: Skeletal Soldier

Information:

Low ranking member of the Departed Spirits race.

After animals or plants die and are affected by the life energies in the surroundings, with the passing of time these skeletons will absorb sufficient life energies and evolve into a different form of being, as they continue to advance, they can even gain flesh, becoming a newly awakened being.

The confusion and panic of the group swiftly disappeared, following the attacks of Su Yu, Zhang Zhongmou, Ma Ziye, Qin Jiagui, Fang Jiong and the others, the skeletons were swiftly decimated. The group were beginning to realise that these skeletal soldiers were very weak, not much stronger than a Gnome.

Over hundred skeletal soldiers were swiftly dealt with, the

ground was littered with white bones painting an extremely gruesome scene, the balls of green fire illuminated the stone cave making it seem exceptionally eerie.

Having taken care of the hundred odd skeletal soldiers, the group did not relax, the floor was littered with balls of green ghostly fire which started to merge, swallowing each other as the green fire grew brighter and larger, in no time, the skeletons on the ground emitted cracking noises as they began to move again.

“What’s going on?” Zhang Zhongmou could not help but yell as he wielded his Red Lotus Sword, shocked as he watched this scene that was unexplainable.

Su Yu said in a heavy voice: “Everyone be careful, let’s back away first. These things are called skeletal soldiers, they belong to the Departed Souls race, it could be that we are only able to cause them to crumble without truly killing them, all of you back away first.”

The group began to swiftly retreat, giving up space as the skeletons began to gather, swiftly forming ten large humanoid skeletons, these ten skeletons were extremely large, it was similar to the size of the T-rex fossils often seen in shows or books.

The green fire that had gathered together formed ten different balls, entering into each skeleton. Once the green fire entered, these monsters would immediately begin to move, emitting loud roars as they rushed towards the group.

Su Yu’s Eye of Perception activated as streams of information

entered his mind.

Name: Super Skeletal Soldier

Information:

Formed from a group of skeletal soldiers, combat prowess is more than ten times that of an ordinary skeletal soldier, cannot be harmed and does not feel pain, can be described as having an immortal body. Only by extinguishing the green fire within it will one be able to stop a Super Skeletal Soldier.

Su Yu received this information as he immediately exclaimed: “Everyone! These are called Super Skeletal Soldiers, only by extinguishing the fire in them will we be able to stop them!” As he said this, his left hand had already activated the Rending Storm, smashing it towards one of the monsters.

Chapter 154: Black Flames

At the back Fang Jiong howled as he took the large wok off his back, streaks of black undulations began to extend outwards as they gathered on the wok before he tossed it.

“Bang!”

The power of the Cyclone Wok was phenomenal, a Super Skeletal Soldier was immediately smashed apart after being hit, the green fire within it falling to the ground.

Fang Jiong swiftly followed as he rushed forward, black undulations covered his hands as he roared, pressing down on the ball of green fire.

“Undulation Overload!” Fang Jiong roared as the streaks of black fluctuations began to expand, immediately encapsulating the ball of green fire as Fang Jiong then flipped his palm, the ball of green fire immediately shattered together with the undulations, covering the floor with green sparks before slowly dissipating.

Barely two seconds had passed but Fang Jiong had already taken care of a Super Skeletal Soldier, Su Yu was not any slower and his Rending Storm had also smashed into one.

The white bone claws of the skeletal soldier collided with the Rending Storm, immediately shattering as Su Yu continued forward, piercing through everything without any difficulty as his fist finally landed onto the ball of green fire within the Super

Skeletal Soldier's body.

“Pa!”

The green ball of fire seemed to explode, turning into sparks that filled the sky before disappearing.

Ma Ziyue stomped as she activated Heaven's Net, her hands wielded the Star Blade as she slashed down.

A streak of starry light could be seen as crisp cracking sounds could be heard from the Super Skeletal Soldier, its ribs began to shatter as its chest was thoroughly perforated, the Heaven's Net had also taken effect as black ropes trapped its feet before moving upwards and binding its entire body, causing it to be locked in place.

Ma Ziyue's second blade followed closely, this time, it had accurately landed on the ball of fire within its chest, when the Star Blade pierced through the ball of fire, it immediately dissipated, the third skeletal soldier had been killed by Ma Ziyue.

At the back, Qin Jiagui's used the Steel Missile and Demolishing Iron Fist, Zhang Zhongmou utilised the Red Lotus Sword together with his Eye of Petrification, Zhao Shichang used his bone knife, they were each able to block one Super Skeletal Soldier, although they were unable to swiftly kill them like Su Yu, they did not lose out against the skeletal soldier.

Su Yu, Fang Jiong and Ma Ziyue were clearly much stronger than a Super Skeletal Soldier, in no time, the ten Super Skeletal Soldiers were taken care of, these Super Skeletal Soldiers did not have any black crystals within them, the group did not receive any energy from killing them and it was clear that these skeleton monsters were a different kind of lifeform.

Having taken care of the ten monsters, Zhang Zhongmou whined: “This stone cave seems rather strange, there are even moving skeletons, damn, will there even be mummies here?”

Su Yu replied: “This is the Departed Spirits race, they are a life form that is evolved from other monsters, we’ll get used to it after a while.”

Zhang Zhongmou laughed as Xiao Wei suddenly spoke: “Departed Spirits race, energy of life? I’ve recalled it..... it could be that we may get some good stuff.”

“Good stuff? Xiao Wei, what’s the good stuff?” Zhang Zhongmou heard that they could get something good as his eyes immediately lit up.

Qin Jiagui frowned as he slowly measured Xiao Wei, Xiao Wei’s age was not large but she seemed to know many things. Also, even though they were suddenly attacked by the skeletal soldiers, she did not seem scared and also knew about several things that they did not know, could it be that she was not someone who had fallen through a Sky Hole to enter into this world?

Qin Jiagui suddenly thought of this possibility.

Xiao Wei continued: “This is only my guess, I’m not sure if it’s that thing, if it is, then that would definitely be awesome.”

Zhang Zhongmou groaned: “Little lass, what on earth is it? You’ve spoken for so long but haven’t touched on the most important part.”

Xiao Wei shook her head: “I’m not sure if I’m right or wrong, everyone just continue forward, once everything is clear I’ll say it.”

Zhang Zhongmou’s face turned dark.

Ma Ziyue immediately spoke: “I’m not wishing for anything good, I just wish the exit is inside and we can finally leave this world.”

Xiao Wei mysteriously smiled: “If it really is what I’m guessing, we may really have a chance to leave this world.”

As she said this, the spirits of the group were immediately excited, they were initially feeling rather disappointed after seeing this cave, it seemed more and more unlikely that this contained the exit to their world, who would think that Xiao Wei would actually say that this could possibly allow them to leave this world, this instantly caused their spirits to rise.

Su Yu smiled: “Alright, let’s continue forward to see if there’s

that thing that Xiao Wei is talking about.” as he continued walking forward.

As the tunnel grew deeper, the surroundings became more and more spacious, the group could feel an aura, this aura was filled with vitality, it was the vast feeling of the aura of life.

Su Yu, Qin Jiagui, Fang Jiong and the others had expressions of shock, only Xiao Wei had an expression of excitement as though she had guessed correctly.

When they finally reached the end, the group felt as though they were in the innermost belly of the mountain. In these depths, there was an boundlessly wide space, in the centre of this area was a fissure that was impossibly deep, within the fissure came blazing black flames, these black flames could be said to cover a majority of the spacious area.

The strange black flames did not seem to emit any heat, rather, it seemed to be giving off a sort of aura of life, causing them to feel as though they should jump into its embrace, like infants wanting to embrace their mother.

“This..... This is.....” Su Yu was dumbstruck as he lifted his head.

Qin Jiagui cried out: “Look there!” as he pointed his finger, the group finally noticed that above the blazing black flames was actually an colossal white skeletal spider.

This white skeletal spider was lazily prone on the ceiling above the black flames, the movements of the flame would occasionally reveal it, eight spider legs which were close to ten metres long dangled lazily above the fire. Unexpectedly on its face, there seemed to be gigantic human skull, the two cavities of the opening for eyes had no light in the darkness.

It seemed that because of Qin Jiagui's exclamation, the white skeletal spider which was previously sleeping had been rudely awakened, within its empty eye sockets two balls of dark green ghostly fire lit up.

The ghostly fire lit up with a "peng!", the white skeletal spider which was prone above the black flames began to move as crisp creaking noises could be heard.

"Everyone careful!" Su Yu shouted as he moved forward, the Eye of Perception on his left hand immediately activating.

At the back, Xiao Wei still excitedly pulled at Fang Jiong as she shouted: "Uncle, uncle, I guessed correctly. It really is that thing, it's exactly as my dad said, this is simply too amazing, the fifth type of life form is really too amazing."

Xiao Wei's excitement seemed out of place, however, these words could be said to leave the group feeling dazed. Su Yu's Eye of Perception had already transmitted the information regarding the immense spider to him.

Name: Skeleton King

Information:

A high grade life form within the Departed Souls race evolved from a skeletal soldier, its form may differ, from spiders to pythons to scorpions or even beasts or human.

It has already advanced to the stage of having its own crystal source and has the possibility of regrowing flesh and blood and also has extremely powerful combat abilities.

“Extremely powerful combat ability?” Su Yu frowned as he yelled: “Those below tier two, back away now!”

His words had barely been spoken when the legs of the Skeleton King began to rise one by one. It was as if a huge carcass that was resting on a small hill was getting up and that a huge web that was high in the sky was crashing down, encompassing everyone below. The other legs also swept towards the group.

With Su Yu’s loud reminder, Jade, Lei Rui, Yuan Niping, Li Dong and the others swiftly retreated, they understood Su Yu and since he had already called for those below tier two to retreat, the monster before them was definitely frightening.

Actually, at first glance of this immense skeletal spider, if one was not dumb they would be able to tell that this monster was frightening.

Qin Jiagui's right arm instantly transformed to metal, his right shoulder raised up as a metallic cylinder appeared, 'Chi!', the Steel Missile had already been sent flying forward.

Zhang Zhongmou and Ma Ziyue acted at the same time, lifting the Red Lotus Sword and Star Blade to block the spider legs that were chopping towards them.

Fang Jiong took out his butcher's knife as black undulations extended from his body, covering the butcher's knife as he chopped towards one of the spider's legs while shouting: "Little lass, run quickly! Why are kids so troublesome."

Su Yu's left arm stretched forward as black scales appeared, large amounts of white mist was spat out as he leapt into the air, smashing towards the head of the descending spider.

He had gathered strange energy within the Rending Storm hoping to shatter the head of the spider in a single blow.

Within the body of the Skeleton King, an indistinct roar could be heard as a rippling wind visible to the naked eye came gushing forth.

A strange sound reverberated as the heads of everyone in the vicinity immediately hurt, each person felt as though their heads had been hit by an massive blow, Su Yu groaned as he fell from the sky while a spider's claw pierced towards his chest.

It was fortunate that Su Yu's chest was protected by a layer of black scales, the spider's claw was unable to break through the protection but it still managed to break off seven to eight pieces while sending Su Yu's body flying far away like a ragdoll.

Fang Jiong had suffered from a similar attack, his hands lost their strength as the butcher's knife fell away, his body was struck by a spider's leg as though he had been struck by a steel mace.

Chapter 155: A Flash Of Realization Before The Battle

Fang Jiong groaned as the black undulations on his body dissipated, a deep gouge could be seen on his waist as fresh blood gushed out.

As the spider monster landed in the midst of the people, a frightening rumbling noise echoed from the ground, Zhang Zhongmou yelled as he was sent flying away, knocking into the stone wall by the side as he spat out a mouthful of blood, the Red Lotus Sword in his hand flying away.

Ma Ziyue fared slightly better, she had a martial arts background and was extremely nimble, she had noticed the situation and immediately kept her Star Blade, rolling on the ground as she barely avoided a terrifying blow from one of the spider's legs.

This spider could be said to have landed right beside Ma Ziyue's prone body, sand and rock was dislodged as they swept into her face, it could be seen how terrifying the force contained in this landing.

Qin Jiagui's Steel Missile had exploded on the body of the spider monster, although its might was astonishing, the spider monster did not seem to take any damage, not even a scratch was left behind. Qin Jiagui was shocked as he swiftly retreated while yelling: "Retreat! Quick, retreat!"

The spider monster before them was simply too horrifying.

The people at the back were running haphazardly about, they were confused after the spider monster had suddenly released its sound wave attack causing them to feel an intense pain in their heads, their strength was weak and their ability to defend themselves was even more pathetic. The tier zeroes amongst them like Liu Zheng and Xie Zhiming had actually fallen to the ground, Liu Zheng could be considered quick witted as he remained prone on the ground, as for Xie Zhiming, he had immediately climbed back up in his panic as an incredibly fast black figure suddenly flashed by.

Xie Zhiming suddenly shrieked as large amounts of blood began to spurt out, his chest had immediately been perforated by an object, it was the enormous white skeletal leg of the spider.

Xie Zhiming continued to shriek as his legs flailed, his hands grabbed onto the spider's claw which was pierced into him as he yelled: "I don't want to die, I still want to go back and see grandpa and grandma! I don't want to die!!!!" as he continued to struggle.

It was possible that because he was the fattest, he was the first to be attacked after the spider monster had landed on the ground, in the eyes of the spider, Xie Zhiming was probably the most delicious morsel.

By the side, Su Yu turned as he stood back up, he quickly rushed over to save him but it was simply too late, the spider monster's legs moved as its maw opened before suddenly swallowing half of Xie Zhiming's body.

This was supposed to be a huge skeletal frame without any stomach or intestines, why would it consume food? The group were shocked and curious at the same time, they heard the gnashing of the spider's teeth as Xie Zhiming's voice abruptly halted, his body seemed to have been tossed into a meat grinder as it was swiftly minced apart, falling into the stomach region formed of white bone before a lump of black crystal appeared, absorbing the meat juice like a black hole till nothing was left.

As for the spider monster, it was already emitting sounds of pleasure as though ingesting a human being was causing it to feel excited, thereafter its huge body began to sway before it moved towards Jade, Yuan Niping and the others who were frantically running away.

The spider could tell that these people were weak and had chosen to attack these people who were merely at tier one.

A living person had suddenly disappeared into the body of the spider, Xie Zhiming who was once alive had suddenly died, this caused a strange feeling to well up in their hearts.

Xie Zhiming was an honest fellow, he did not talk much but was a rather decent person. He would often assist with more bags of food without any complaint, he was brought up by his grandfather and grandmother and was very close with them, he had been sitting on a bus, hoping to celebrate his grandparents birthday but had inadvertently fallen into this world, eventually resulting in his death.

The spider monster had swallowed Xie Zhiming before its eight

limbs moved, pouncing towards Jade, Yuan Niping, Lei Rui and the others. At the back, Su Yu roared as his arms, chest and back were covered in black scales, his legs kicked as his body swiftly moved forward, large amounts of white mist could be seen shooting out from his left arm creating a propulsion that caused him to move even faster, his arms suddenly moved together before the Rending Storm was activated.

In this instant, Su Yu had actually comprehended the method of using his right arm to execute the Rending Storm allowing him to use both arms to activate the Rending Storm together, white mist was emitted from both arms like two white snakes, his body continued to fly forward before landing on the body of the spider monster, his hands raised before heavily smashing downwards.

“Bang! Crack!”

An ear-piercing sound rang out as the two arms which had activated the Rending Storm smashed into the back of the monster, pieces of black scale continued to scrape as sparks filled the air, in the blink of an eye, black fissures appeared on the white back bone of the spider.

The powerful Rending Storm was only resulted in some cracked areas on the monster’s white skeletal frame without instantly shattering it, this spider monster was terrifying beyond belief.

“Howl!”

The spider monster roared as it emitted another omni-directional

sound wave attack. Su Yu who was on the monster's back felt a great shock towards his head and groaned before falling down.

Su Yu had just landed when the spider monster rotated its body sending two of its spider legs to wildly pierce towards Su Yu.

Su Yu was able to crack the bones on its back, angering the spider as it immediately gave up on its previous targets to focus on Su Yu.

Although Su Yu's head was aching, his combat prowess allowed him to hold on, his body rolled on the ground as his right hand pressed towards the ground, activating the Earth Spikes Assault.

Thick earthen spears rose from the ground below the spider's stomach, the spider monster's entire body was formed of white bone, these spikes pierced into the gaps between the white bone and did not harm it but was able to snare it within, causing its eight claws to no longer be able to move.

An incredible opportunity had just presented itself, Fang Jiong did not speak as he picked up his butcher's knife, Su Yu's Rending Storm was unable to shatter the bones of the monster clearly demonstrating how tough the bones were, Fang Jiong did not aim for the bones but rather the joints between them.

As a super chef, Fang Jiong's ability to dismember animals could be said to be able to do whatever his heart desired, this was extremely useful against the spider monster as his butcher's knife was able to easily slip into a joint, twisting and slicing as the spider monster which was still trapped within the earth spikes roared like

thunder when one of its eight legs actually fell.

What was most surprising was Xu Ruyun's performance, as the other tier ones were panicking and running away, he was able to calmly wait for a chance. Seeing the chance arrive, he silently appeared as he acted familiarly, not in any way weaker than Fang Jiong as his surgical knives pierced into the joints of the spider monster, moving with ease as he caused another leg to fall off.

Suddenly losing two of its legs, the spider monster began emit out thunderous roars, the group immediately realised that although its bones were tougher than steel, the joints between them were a weakness, it was too nimble previously and they did not have a chance to target its joints, now that it was trapped by the Earth Spikes Assault, Fang Jiong and Xu Ruyun had managed to take advantage of it.

Besides Fang Jiong and Xu Ruyun, the third person to act was Ma Ziyue.

Ma Ziyue was extremely nimble, she had tumbled to the ground to dodge the attack from the spider monster, at this moment she had noticed Su Yu using the Earth Spikes Assault to trap the spider monster as she immediately acted, her legs kicked off as she rose into the air, both hands grasping the Star Blade as she instantly pierced it through the holes between the bones directly into the stomach region of the monster, kicking again on the monster's body as she somersaulted and retreated before activating the Starlight.

Ma Ziyue had used Starlight within the hospital the previous day,

it was fortunate that twenty four hours had already passed and her blade ability could be activated once more.

The frightening Starlight exploded within the body of the monster, in an instant, a dazzling light expanded as starry lights seemed to shoot from the blade, exploding from the gaps between the bones making the spider seem to become a bug that could emit light.

Ma Ziyue landed as she swiftly retreated several metres away before activating the Heaven's Net, at the same time, the effect of the Earth Spikes Assault wore off and the spider monster regained its freedom.

Ma Ziyue used everything she had to activate the Heaven's Net, strands of black steel rope extended forth like pythons, slithering past the ground as they swiftly climbed up the spider monster's body, firmly trapping it in place.

“Howl!”

The spider monster suddenly let out a frightening roar as a soundwave visible to the naked eye spread in all directions, its remaining six legs began to shake as its entire body trembled, ‘Pa! Pa! Pa!’ continued to resound as Ma Ziyue violently shook, her cherry red lips parted as fresh blood was spat out before she fell heavily to the ground.

The Heaven's Net was actually rent apart by the spider monster, the strands of black steel rope began to fall apart as Ma Ziyue was

hit by the backlash of strange energy and was gravely wounded, the spider had managed to escape its confines as its six enormous legs began to flail like steel whips.

Fang Jiong groaned as the Cyclone Wok was sent flying back, 'Keng!' as the wok and man were both sent flying. As for Xu Ruyun, he had been slightly late in dodging and his chest had been hit, there was an inch deep gouge there and blood was spurting forth, he groaned as he flew away, tumbling over twenty metres away before he fell to the ground, remaining motionless.

The spider monster seemed crazed as starry lights burst from within its body, the Starlight ability had exploded causing lights to shoot from within it, its legs suddenly shivered as it leapt into the air, its immense body turned as the Star Blade which was pierced into its body was sent flying away. Once the Star Blade left the body, the starry lights immediately dimmed.

Starlight had actually been forcefully broken by it.

Ma Ziyue who had spat blood struggled to lift her head, noticing this, she was extremely shocked, the spider monster before them was many times stronger than even the tier three Single Eyed Zombie King.

All this happened in a matter of two breaths, Xie Zhiming had died, Ma Ziyue, Qin Jiagui and Zhang Zhongmou were heavily injured, Xu Ruyun was lying motionless, Zhao Shichang was swiftly retreating, cold sweat drenched his back and he did not dare to move forward, Fang Jiong was also injured but he was a fourth tier dark iron warrior, he barely managed to stand up as

streaks of black undulations expanded, gathering on the butcher's knife as a blade was formed from the black ripples, the Steel Shattering Cleave was about to be sent forward but alas, he had already lost all confidence.

This spider monster was not something that he could deal with.

The spider monster had turned in the air to get rid of the Star Blade, thereafter it had landed on the ground before roaring, its six humongous legs began to slap the ground causing explosive noises as it once again rose into the air, pouncing towards Ma Ziyue, Zhang Zhongmou and the others who were still fallen on the ground. Fang Jiong grit his teeth and was prepared to rush forward when a figure suddenly appeared, standing in front of the group as he faced the crazed and terrifying spider monster.

This back seemed dependable like a mountain, in this moment, there was an indescribable feeling of safety that everyone could feel.

This person, was Su Yu.

Su Yu had activated the Earth Spikes Assault before Ma Ziyue activated her Starlight, he had initially thought that Ma Ziyue's Starlight would have been enough to deal with the monster, who knew that the monster would be so strong as to forcefully break through the Starlight. It was only now that Su Yu realised how frightening the monster was, he did not speak as he stood before the group, his right hand clenched as he raised a single thumb.

A dazzling golden light could be seen shining forth as the Golden Blood was activated.

Even the Rending Storm had only caused cracks to appear on the bones without shattering them, it could be imagined how sturdy the bones of the monster was, as for attacking the joints of the monster, the difficulty and finesse required for this was simply too high, Su Yu did not have such a precise combat ability and under the circumstances had chosen to use the power of the Golden Blood.

With the activation of the Golden Blood, a wisp of terrifying aura was released, the spider monster seemed to sense something as its frightening roars stopped, its six legs retracted as it stopped its advancement, opening its mouth as it prepared to attack with sound waves again.

Su Yu obviously would not give it such a chance as he kicked, swiftly pouncing like an eagle hunting a rabbit as he appeared before the spider monster.

A single golden thumb had actually been able to scare this monster, the spider monster flailed its giant legs in an attempt to sweep Su Yu as it opened its mouth to use the soundwave attack.

Su Yu's golden thumb accurately pressed against a leg that was sweeping forward, instantly shattering the incredibly sturdy leg, Su Yu then moved like a gust of wind as he appeared before the spider, his left hand stretching forth as he struck right into the gaping maw of the spider monster.

The sound wave attack had not occurred as Su Yu's left hand blocked it off, thereafter, "wu wu" could be heard as large amounts of white mist shot from the mouth of the spider, the spider monster seemed to have become a steam engine as all the gaps between its bones began to release dense amounts of white mist, the Rending Storm had been activated at its full power within the spider monster's mouth.

Chapter 156: The Fifth Lifeform

A frightening sound rang out as the entire spider monster trembled, dragging Su Yu along as it tumbled to the ground. Su Yu's left hand was still inside the monster's mouth, his right thumb continued to press down on the monster's body.

The power of the Golden Blood was able to soundlessly shatter every bone it came into contact with, the sturdy bones when faced with this golden thumb was like paste, simply unable to withstand a single blow. The group could see the spider monster drag Su Yu to the ground as they tumbled, the bones on its body were slowly disintegrating, its six legs were the first to go before its body and eventually the head.....

Finally, Su Yu landed as he stretched his left arm, large amounts of white mist filled the air as the final two bones were shattered.

A humongous Skeleton King spider monster had suddenly vanished without a trace, leaving only the two huge legs that had first been removed by Xu Ruyun and Fang Jiong, the rest of its body had been turned to dust under the power of the golden thumb.

Countless numbers of tiny black crystals exploded out from the dead spider monster, it was unknown what tier the spider monster was at but it was clearly much stronger than a tier three Single Eyed Zombie King. With its death, a large amount of energy crystals had actually exploded forth before actually spreading and moving towards the bodies of the group.

Most of the crystals flew towards Su Yu, then Ma Ziyue, Fang Jiong, Xu Ruyun who was motionless on the ground, Qin Jiagui and Zhang Zhongmou. It seemed as though it was divided based on their contributions in killing the spider monster.

Such a scene was a first, Su Yu was shocked as he saw large amounts of energy crystals fly into his body, thereafter, the strange energy within him surged as the powerful strange energy rammed against the remaining three doors, however, they were stopped as they swiftly receded, it was clear that even though he had absorbed a large amount of energy crystals, he was still far from advancing.

Ma Ziyue and Fang Jiong had also absorbed a decent amount of energy crystals but were far from advancing, only Xu Ruyun was different.

Xu Ruyun was merely a tier one dark iron warrior, he had risked his life to injure a monster that was stronger than tier three, although the energy he absorbed was far inferior to Su Yu, he was only tier one and the amount he absorbed was sufficient to allow him to advance.

As the crystals entered his body, Xu Ruyun who was heavily injured and lying motionless on the ground began to twitch violently, slowly pushing himself up as he groaned, the frightening wound at his chest area was beginning to heal as the flesh at his chest area twitched, the strange energy within him continually changed to qi. Due to his strange energy being concentrated within his chest, his circumstance was different from the others, after advancing to tier two, five doors appeared within his body

preventing the strange energy from entering his arms, legs and head, forcing the strange energy to circulate only within his upper body.

Su Yu had absorbed a large amount of energy crystals, although he did not advance, the strange energy within him flowed into the origin force necklace that was around his neck. As the strange energy continued to surge, the origin force necklace suddenly began to violently shiver, thereafter, a ball of bluish white light was shot forth.

Su Yu was shocked as his eyes widened, looking at the necklace on his chest as it floated on its own, streaks of bluish white light continued to shoot forth, swiftly creating small balls of bluish white light, thereafter, streams of information began to appear within Su Yu's mind.

Name: Ball Lightning

Information:

Initial form of origin beast, Thunder affinity.

Others: Unknown.

“This..... this is.....” Su Yu was stunned as he carefully observed the floating balls of bluish white light before him, Ball Lightning? Origin beast? What did this mean?

Su Yu was still dazed when a young and tender sound rang out from the balls of lightning, thereafter they began to move up and down causing Su Yu to be even more amazed.

By the side, Fang Jiong was curious as he shouted: “What is that thing? It seems to have come out from your necklace?”

Fang Jiong’s words reminded Su Yu as he hurriedly used the Eye of Perception, the information he received about the balls of lightning were identical but he realised that the information regarding the necklace had changed.

Its name had changed from origin force necklace to Ball Lightning Necklace, it could summon the initial form of the origin beast ‘Ball Lightning’, there was a cooldown of twenty four hours and no further information.

Ma Ziyue’s injuries were not light, as she absorbed the energy crystals, she swiftly recovered as she stood up and asked curiously: “Su Yu, what is that thing? There seems to be sounds coming from it as well?” She could not help but stretch a hand forward, wishing to touch one of the bluish white balls when Xiao Wei suddenly exclaimed: “Big sister, don’t touch it!”

Ma Ziyue retracted her hand: “What’s the matter?”

Xiao Wei earnestly replied: “This is a origin beast, although it has just been born, it is extremely powerful. Big brother Su Yu, the type of your origin beast is very good, it’s actually lightning.”

Su Yu was stunned: “You know what this thing is?”

Xiao Wei laughed: “The people I mixed with in the past all had origin beasts, all influential people usually have origin beasts. Big brother Su Yu is powerful and thus managed to allow it to be born.”

Su Yu still wanted to question but Liu Zheng had already spoke up: “I know, it’s a pet, isn’t it? This origin beast is a pet right?”

Xiao Wei twirled her fingers as she contemplated: “Somewhat like that, but then again different. Big brother Su Yu, use your heart to feel the mysterious treasure necklace, you will then understand.”

Su Yu nodded as he grabbed the necklace, closing his eyes to feel it. Gradually, he was able to sense a young and immature soul aura, this soul aura was extremely vigorous, as though it was filled with excitement, in no time, Su Yu seemed to have understood something as he willed it, the balls of lightning by his side began to spin before they suddenly lit up, a thin bolt of lightning was then shot forth.

“Pa!”

A soft sound rang out as it struck the boulders by the side causing a few wisps of bluish smoke to rise up.

Su Yu opened his eyes as he felt the small black burnt mark on

the boulder before looking at the floating balls of lightning, they seemed to have become smaller.

“So that’s how it works.” Su Yu muttered as he pointed, a soft “eyy” could be heard from the balls of lightning before streaks of bluish white lightning shot forth from them.

“Pa! Pa! Pa!”

Crisp sounds resounded out as six to seven streaks of lightning shot forth from the balls of lightning causing them to reduce in size before they disappeared.

Su Yu realised that the soul within the necklace had stopped its fluctuations, the speed with which the necklace was absorbing strange energy suddenly increased as though it were trying to recover.

“I understand now, this necklace can be used to summon ‘Ball Lightning’ the origin beast, the balls of lightning can attack and send approximately seven bolts of lightning before its energy is used up. One can only summon them every 24 hours, similar to the Earth Spikes Assault. Why is the power of the lightning so weak..... If I use it suddenly, I should still be able to harass my opponent.....”

Su Yu felt the few burnt marks left on the boulder as he muttered, he finally understood what the Ball Lightning was about.

Xiao Wei spoke up: “Big brother Su, origin beasts aren’t weak, they have just been born but can continue to advance, it is possible for them to become even stronger than their master.”

Su Yu looked over at Xiao Wei as he smiled: “Xiao Wei, you seem to know a lot of things, how do you know about the secrets of the origin beast?”

Xiao Wei had a mysterious smile as she carefully retrieved an item from from bosom, it was a faint red coloured necklace: “Because Xiao Wei also has a treasure that is capable of summoning a origin beast, but Xiao Wei is too weak and hasn’t been able to allow it to be born.” having said this, her face had a dismayed expression.

“Each origin beast possess unusual origin forces, that are divided into several types, this is an amazing and extremely important thing. A person can only have a single one in their lifetime. Big brother Su Yu, you have to treat your origin beast well.” Xiao Wei kept her necklace as her dismayed expression swiftly receded.

Su Yu smiled as he nodded, he could tell that there were many secrets on Xiao Wei’s person, however, Su Yu would not force her to expose them. He then pointed towards the black flames which were still burning in the area: “Xiao Wei, what are these black flames? Could this be the thing that will allow us to leave this world?”

The group had already noticed these black flames, the black flames did not emit heat but rather gave one a feeling of the energy of life, this stone cave was already the end and the only thing that

could possibly allow them to leave were these black flames.

Xiao Wei nodded: “That’s right, if everyone is lucky, there really is a possibly to rely on it to leave this place, even attaining immortal life..... This is something my father told me, he definitely wouldn’t lie to me..... However..... it’s extremely difficult, this is an extremely precious thing, we are so lucky to find it so easily.”

Su Yu had already used the Eye of Perception on these black flames but did not acquire any information. Seeing Xiao Wei’s earnest expression, she did not seem to be lying as he asked: “What are these black flames? They are actually so powerful? It is possible to attain immortal life? We can also leave this world?”

Qin Jiagui spoke slowly: “Xiao Wei, who is your father? How does he know about these things?”

Xiao Wei glanced over at him before continuing: “My father.....” She had merely spoken but suddenly halted, an alarmed expression appeared on her face as she slowly continued: “Anyways, I didn’t lie to all of you, these black flames before us are a type of lifeform, termed as the fifth form of life, totally different from the usual animals, plants or even departed spirits.

Chapter 157: Soul Companion

“Fifth lifeform? What’s that?” Zhao Shichang could not help but butt in, the things Xiao Wei said were difficult for him to understand.

Xiao Wei slowly replied: “I’m not sure how to explain, for example plants are the first form of life, humans and other animals belong to the third form of life, those that are half plant and half animal belong to the second form of life, as for the black flames, they are the fifth form of life. Does everyone understand now?”

Su Yu nodded, although it was difficult to imagine what a fifth form a life was, he could roughly understand what Xiao Wei was trying to explain, the black flames should be a form of life that existed in a different way from how plants or animals existed, however, they were really alive.

Like the ‘mother goddess’, it was likely the second form of life that Xiao Wei spoke of.

“Xiao Wei, what now? You mentioned that these black flames were a fifth form of life, how can they help us leave this planet?”

Su Yu contemplated as he asked, his eyes were looking at the blazing black flames, he could feel the frightening life energy from it and could sense that this was a being that had exceeded their level of understanding, something completely different from plants or animals.

Xiao Wei seemed to be in deep thought, as though she were figuring out how to explain it to the group. At this moment, the people within the group were either watching the black flames or Xiao Wei, they knew that Xiao Wei was clearly not ordinary, although she seemed to be a frail person at tier one, her knowledge of this world had reached a frightening level, who was she? Did she arrive in this world through a Sky Hole like everyone else? Or..... was she a native of this world? This was only possible if this world originally contained humans.

Xiao Wei contemplated for a moment longer before finally continuing: “This is what my father told me, the fifth form of life can form contracts with the souls of animals or other forms of life. The fifth lifeform is extremely unique, they require a companion in order to grow..... it could also be said that in order to truly have life, they must have a companion, otherwise, they would merely be like objects without true life.”

These words were extremely profound, Su Yu and the others were befuddled as Lei Rui could not help but speak up: “A companion? Does that mean it can merge with the soul of a human? Xiao Wei, you need to be more detailed.”

Xiao Wei bitterly said: “I also don’t know how to explain it, anyways, the fifth lifeform can grow together with other lifeforms as companions, thereafter they can evolve and advance becoming stronger and stronger. Finally, when the fifth lifeform fully matures, it will allow its companion to become as powerful as it, to the extent of gaining eternal life. Also..... By that time, utilising the mature fifth lifeform, one will be able to traverse through this world, travelling to any place one desires. Big brother Su, that’s what I was talking about earlier, by then you can use it to leave this

world, returning to any world that you desire, at least that's what my father told me."

Su Yu and the others were stunned, remaining silent for a long time.

A good while later, Su Yu finally spoke up: "Xiao Wei, what you mean to say is..... We have to help these black flames..... No, this fifth lifeform to mature, thereafter use it to leave this world?"

"That's right, big brother Su you finally understand." Xiao Wei immediately became happy as she continued: "Actually there are many of these fifth lifeforms within this world but they have already been taken by others, if everyone wishes to use its powers, this is something that must occur through happenstance, my dad also got lucky and managed to acquire one so I'm quite clear on this."

Zhao Birong spoke up: "Your father also acquired it? Where did he acquire it?"

Xiao Wei fell into deep thought for a long while before shaking her head: "Not here..... He's not here anymore....." the expression on her face immediately fell, she had constantly mentioned her father, it was clear that she was proud of him. As she said that he was no longer present, the dismayed expression on her face made it difficult for the group to carry on looking.

Although Xiao Wei was young, it seemed she carried many heavy burdens.

Although Xiao Wei was not explicit with her words, the group could roughly understand what she meant by the fifth lifeform and it needing a soul companion, it was simply too inconceivable and made the group hesitate, their only thoughts were leaving this forest to return to their own world, Xiao Wei's explanation of how they could do this was simply too unbelievable.

After pondering for a moment, Su Yu continued: "Xiao Wei, since you know so much, I wish to ask you a few questions. What is up with this forest? Also, are there any other methods to leave this forest besides the method you have just stated?"

Hearing Su Yu's questions, the dismayed expression on Xiao Wei's face lessened as she shook her head: "Actually, I also don't know what's the matter with this forest, since I was born, I've always been in this forest. Even my father has never finished exploring it, wait..... father has said that no one in this world has finished exploring this forest, unless it's the Golden Race of legends..... Big brother Su, if you wish to find the exit of this forest, it isn't impossible but the only method is by borrowing the power of the fifth lifeform.

As they heard these words, they exchanged glances before Fang Jiong suddenly spoke up: "Although I hate little kids..... I believe her."

He had known Xiao Wei for a decent amount of time, he knew that Xiao Wei did not say nonsense and the stuff she was saying was simply too far-fetched to be something created by the mind of a child, it could be said that she was merely stating facts.

Qin Jiagui took out the map as he muttered: “So the area indicated on the map was actually where the fifth lifeform was located?” the map suddenly began to blur as all the markings on it disappeared.

“This map..... The fifth lifeform.....” Qin Jiagui continued to mutter as he felt the energy fluctuations from the black flames, in this moment, he had lost all direction, what should they do now? He suddenly felt very lost.

The others were similar to Qin Jiagui because they had placed their hopes on this being the exit, this thought had kept their hopes alive and kept them going but upon reaching the destination, they were actually faced with such an outcome. Some in the group believed in Xiao Wei’s words while others did not, she said that the forest was endlessly big and this made them feel stunned, some were simply unwilling to believe this.

Finally, everyone turned to look at Su Yu, they were waiting for his decision.

Su Yu was currently frowning, he did not speak for a long while.

“Su Yu, what do you think? What should we do now? Should we just choose an area to continue walking?” Ma Ziyue could not help but ask, they had already walked for so many days within this forest, they were physically and mentally exhausted. Hearing her words, Li Dong was the first to speak: “Not walking anymore..... I really can’t go on, it seems that we have no hope anymore.....”

After experiencing the event within the hospital, Li Dong's character seemed to have changed, he was silent and morose, at this moment as he spoke, the group felt as though his voice had become sharper, it sounded quite strange.

Hearing Ma Ziyue, Su Yu was silent for a moment before lifting his head to look at her before turning to Jade, then Zhang Zhongmou and the others. Suddenly, he felt his vexed heart calm down as he turned to Xiao Wei: "Xiao Wei, what you mentioned about the soul contract and companion, how do we go about doing it?"

Xiao Wei replied: "A soul contract is a type of recognition process, it will allow a fifth lifeform to recognise you as its master, thereafter, you will be able to grow together as companions. This process is very simple, you only need to gain the recognition of the fifth lifeform. However, the first person to attempt a soul contract will face great risk, the others behind will find it much more difficult."

Su Yu sucked in a deep breath as he looked at the helpless, uneasy and confused expressions of the group, thinking of Ning Yan who still remained trapped within this forest, in this instant, he steeled his heart as he made a decision: "Xiao Wei, how can I gain its recognition?"

Xiao Wei replied: "Walk into the flames, as long as big brother Su's will is firm, you will be able to pass its test and form a soul contract."

Su Yu nodded, he actually walked into the blazing black flames without the slightest hesitation.

Ma Ziyue asked hurriedly: “Su Yu, wait up.” before turning to Xiao Wei: “What happens if he fails?”

Xiao Wei replied: “If he fails, he will be swallowed by the fifth lifeform and die.”

Ma Ziyue was dazed as she said in a raspy voice: “Su Yu, you.....”

He did not speak as he turned around, looking at the group with a faint smile as he stepped forward without the slightest hesitation.

The group exchanged glances as Zhang Zhongmou, Jade and the others could not help but go forward.

“Su Yu!” Jade shouted as she saw his body disappear into the black flames, at the same time, a frightening sound rang out as a terrifying energy expanded outwards forcing everyone back, they could only feel the powerful fluctuations but were simply unable to go any closer.

Chapter 158: Five Death Omens Of An Angel

Once Su Yu entered the black flames, he was immediately swallowed by it, he did not feel a burning heat but rather a frightening will that directly rushed at his mind, a formidable pressure that wanted to make him submit.

Su Yu immediately understood, this immense will that was being exerted on his mind was the sentience of the black flames acting on him, thinking back to the lost gazes of the group and also Ning Yan who was currently missing, Su Yu roared: “I won’t lose to you!” black scales began to appear on his body as the eighteen holes began to wildly suck in strange energy, the Rending Storm was activated as he smashed forward.

The frightening will wanted to force Su Yu to his knees but Su Yu’s capabilities was even more vigorous than it, he had sucked in strange energy and smashed, seeming to want to smash the immense will to bits.

Su Yu’s vigorous response caused the black flames to release an even more frightening aura and energy fluctuation, suddenly, black flames began to coalesce and press in from all directions, Su Yu was immediately unable to move, it felt as though he were being pressed by tens of thousands of jin, this force continued to press inwards making him feel as though his body could explode at any moment.

“Roar!” Su Yu howled, in the jaws of death, his vitality blazed as his spirit rose to an unprecedented level, the Protective Bulwark was activated as both arms also activated the Rending Storm,

utilising the ten odd holes within his body to absorb strange energy as he continually funneled it into his arms, powering the Rending Storm as frightening amounts of white mist shot out like a steam engine.

Jade, Ma Ziyue and the others who were outside were extremely anxious, although they could not see the actual situation, they could see the roaring black flames and could guess that it would be incredibly dangerous within.

Fang Jiong muttered: "If Su Yu is also unable to succeed, who amongst us has a chance to do so....." Fang Jiong and Su Yu were both tier four experts and he could clearly tell how powerful Su Yu was.

Xiao Wei was filled with confidence: "I believe that big brother Su can succeed, Xiao Wei is the best at seeing through a person. For this fifth lifeform to recognise a master, strength is secondary, a strong will is the most important. Big brother Su has a very firm will, I can see that much."

Qin Jiagui clenched his fist as it became covered in metal: "The fifth lifeform..... this damned world....."

Within the blazing black flames, a dazzling golden light suddenly erupted, at the same time, the people outside could hear the clear roars of Su Yu, this dazzling golden light was like a beam of light within the darkness, it was incomparably steady, the raging black flames gradually receded before thoroughly disappearing, leaving Su Yu who was half kneeled on the ground, sweat covered his brows as he continued to pant.

“Su Yu!” Ma Ziyue, Jade and the others rushed forward.

Suddenly, Su Yu waved his hands telling them not to come closer, at the same time, he crossed his legs to sit on the floor, closing his eyes as large amounts of black flames began to swirl around his body like a mist, shrouding him within.

“Everyone, don’t disturb him. Big brother Su Yu has successfully gained the recognition of the fifth lifeform, he should be connecting with it right now!” Xiao Wei shouted.

Ma Ziyue and the others swiftly came to a halt as they looked at the black flames which swallowed Su Yu, they did not dare to get any closer.

Su Yu closed his eyes as the black flames surged out of his body, shrouding his entire form. Within his mind, an extremely large space filled with white mist appeared, within this space, Su Yu was naked and covered in a gentle glow as he floated within, facing him was a ball of fluctuating black flames, within the black flames, two fissures that seemed like eyes appeared, at the same time, a stream of information also appeared within his head.

This sound was in a language that Su Yu understood, indistinct and seemingly ancient yet also young and tender like an infant, like the roar of a dragon or the ramblings of an old man.

The sound was indescribably strange, it was something that simply could not be explained with words.

“Human, your courage has gained my recognition, from this moment forth..... thou wilt form a soul companion contract with me..... If I perish..... So will you.....”

Su Yu who was naked and shrouded in a light said in a heavy voice: “Does that mean that our lives will be one? As companions, whoever dies the other party will die as well?”

“No..... My death will be your death, your death might not result in my death.”

Su Yu was stunned: “The contract only works one way?”

“Before going through the soul companion contract, I don’t have something that is called a life..... I am an immortal existence, after becoming soul companions, I will then gain what is known as life, since I would have gained life, then there would possibly be an ending..... Life can evolve, but the price of evolution is that there is a chance of death.....”

Su Yu now understood as he nodded: “After becoming soul companions with you, you will have the chance to evolve into an entirely new lifeform but what’s the benefit for me?”

The immense will sighed: “No matter what life form, their evolutionary goal is the same, that is perfection..... Causing one’s being to transform into a perfect form, that sort of perfection is the pinnacle of all life..... using the words of you humans, this sort of perfect life form could be called..... God!”

Su Yu's entire body trembled: "God?"

"Regardless of the form of life, they have their own strengths and weaknesses. Within this world, there isn't anything that is completely perfect. As the fifth form of life, we are incomparably close to that sort of perfection, we are unbelievably close to the aptitude of a god, however..... we have an extremely critical weakness, that is..... We cannot rely on ourselves to ignite our capabilities to grow....." The immense will sighed.

"The so called perfect life form..... Is actually the sixth form of life..... as the fifth form of life, we are incomparably close to that divine existence, as for you humans..... You belong to the third form of life....."

As Su Yu heard the immense will talk about the perfect sixth lifeform, his mind trembled as he suddenly thought of the '666', the sixth lifeform was a form of life, they were both '6'..... Was there any connection?

Thinking of this, Su Yu could not help but question: "Then, what about 666? Do you know what that is?"

The immense will was silent for a moment before it continued: "That way of growth is totally different from other lifeforms, it belongs to another evolutionary track. Of course, there is also another meaning, that is the beast of catastrophe..... 666..... represents annihilation and destruction.

Su Yu thought of Ning Yan as he sighed before continuing: “Your meaning is that after we become companions, we can cover the weaknesses of each other and evolve together, finally becoming a perfect form of life?”

“That’s right, you must help me to evolve and the more perfect I become, the amount of strength and abilities you gain will be that much more. Finally, we will advance to become an eternal perfect existence, that is the goal of all soul companions..... Right now, you should make a decision, if you are willing, release your soul and enter into the soul contract.”

Su Yu took a deep breath, thinking back to the endless forest and his companions with their lost looks then Ning Yan whose whereabouts were unknown, he firmly clenched his fists: “I have no other options, I’m willing to become a soul companion with you.”

Once Su Yu was done talking, his naked body was suddenly swallowed by the black flames, thereafter, they began to mix as both parties gradually combined to become one, becoming a new naked Su Yu, at this moment there was black flames covering his body.

Their souls had fused and the soul contract was completed.

Within the large space, Su Yu who was sitting on the ground suddenly groaned as he opened his eyes, the black flames surrounding his body gradually dissipated as a torrent of information filled his mind.

The fifth form of life was impossibly close to the perfect god, at this moment after fusing into one, it gave all sorts of experience to Su Yu, the amount of information was incredibly dense, far exceeding one's imagination.

The people in the surroundings were nervous as they looked at Su Yu, only Xiao Wei was smiling, she knew that Su Yu had already succeeded.

A while later, Su Yu finally breathed out as he wiped the cold sweat on his face before slowly standing back up.

“How is it? How do you feel?” Ma Ziyue, Jade, Zhang Zhongmou and the others rushed forward, surrounding Su Yu as they questioned him.

“I'm alright, there's no problem, I succeeded.” Su Yu said this as he frowned, he could clearly feel that after the black flames receded, they actually became an enormous cocoon like that of a black egg, thereafter, streams of information continued to flow into his mind.

“Soul companion acquired, the form of the fifth lifeform has changed, a black cocoon has appeared and is currently incubating. The conditions for incubating are a supply of twenty living organisms.”

Su Yu was befuddled and could not help but question: “Fifth lifeform, what is the meaning of this? What does it mean that

incubation requires twenty living organisms?”

In no time, the strange voice that sounded ancient and young at the same time resounded: “With regards to you, you can only gain one soul companion for life. As for us of a higher life form, we can form an endless number of companions, of course, you are the first and the main companion, your will shall be the first to be adhered to, besides you, I can also form a soul contract with other humans. Their thoughts will be unable to control me.”

Su Yu did not understand as he continued; “Why do you need to form contracts with so many humans?”

“Because I require nourishment, your souls are my nourishment, the more human companions I have, the faster my evolutionary speed, when the number of soul contracts I form reaches twenty..... I will be able to complete my incubation and be birthed, becoming a true living organism.

Su Yu bitterly smiled: “Then what are the benefits for becoming a soul companion with you? At least..... I feel that I haven’t gained a single benefit?”

“Hmph.....” The strange voice replied in a strangely human manner: “There are simply too many benefits, after becoming soul companions, as long as it is within a specific region..... I will prevent the loss of life force, otherwise, all of you won’t live past two months in this world.

Su Yu was shocked: “What do you mean?”

The voice replied: “You humans belong to the lower tier third lifeform, only slightly higher than that of the first and second lifeforms, if you wish to evolve, the price you must pay is extremely large, that is the usage of your life force to exchange for the power of evolution, to be even clearer, from the day that all of you gained the ability to evolve, the life force within your bodies has been continually diminishing at a high speed, for approximation, a single day of life force usage is similar to slightly over a year of time before evolution, human, do you understand?”

Su Yu sucked in a breath of cold air: “You’re talking about the power of evolution, could that be strange energy? Your meaning is that for humans who have gained strange energy, a single day is equal to living over a year?”

“That’s right, after a month, you would have lost thirty years, I have already checked the remainder of your life force, the current you may seem young but the life force within you is like that of a middle aged man in his thirties, if you did not form a soul contract with me, in another month, you would have felt the old age..... Thereafter, you would have slowly died due to your life force drying up.”

The information from the voice was earth-shattering, Su Yu was extremely shocked but because of his connection to the flames, he could feel that everything the voice said was actually true.

“This..... How could this be..... I remember meeting with a couple named York and Jennifer, they had already lived in this place for nearly a month, based on what you just told me, they

should be old people of sixty to seventy years of age, why did they still seem to be in their thirties?”

“I’ve said it already..... After acquiring the power of evolution, the burden of this immense power is simply inconceivable, the price is that your life force is expended at several hundred times the normal speed, a single day is akin to a year, however, the power of evolution will also shock your body into showing its potential, allowing you to reach ten to even several hundred times your previous stretch, the liveliness of your cells will make it such that you will not easily show your age, allowing you to keep your original appearance, only when you are nearing death, during the last five days will your body suddenly age at a rapid pace, within five days, you will become decrepit and finally die. All the tens of years would suddenly hit you in the five days, you humans have a saying ‘five death omens of an angel’. Even though this saying is now slightly distorted, the true meaning was that humans who obtained the celestial ability to evolve would eventually experience a hellish torment during the last five days of your life.”

Chapter 159: Limit Of Ten Days

Su Yu felt that his mouth was dry and only replied after a while: “What you mean to say is, after forming a soul contract with you, I can stop this process of ageing?”

“At least based on your current condition, it could be construed as such. The vitality of you humans is simply too frail, however, we of the fifth lifeform have an almost inexhaustible amount of life force, the amount of life force you use up each day is merely a drop within an ocean to me, of course, there are still limitations to this..... I will need to be fully incubated and pass the period of weakness from being recently birthed. Of course, if you exceed the area within my power, my ability will not have its effect and won't be able to prevent the loss of your life force.”

Su Yu forced himself to calm down: “Besides this, are there any other methods to prevent the loss of life force?”

“There is a way, you have to absorb crystals containing life force, it can replenish the vitality within you that has been lost, such crystals are known as ‘Time Coins’.

“Time coins.....” Su Yu sucked in a breath of cold air as he thought of the black clothed male Situ Wuya, he had found several black copper money-like objects, back then Xiao Wei had called them ‘Time Coins’ but Su Yu finally understood what Xiao Wei meant by buying time.

Absorbing ‘Time coins’ to extend one's life, could this not be

considered 'buying time'?

It was clear that Xiao Wei had already known about the loss of life force as well as the existence of time money, all this was a reality and what the voice said was all true.

"I understand." Su Yu seemed to become weak in the knees, he now realised that there was actually a price for the strange energy, this price was terrifying and one was actually using up their life force in order to gain it. It was fortunate that they met with the fifth lifeform, otherwise, they would have died without even knowing why.

This sort of exchange via thoughts might seem like a lot but it merely took a few seconds, Su Yu opened his eyes as he looked at the people surrounding him with faces of concern.

"Xiao Wei, after acquiring strange energy, are we speeding up the process of using up our life force?" Su Yu immediately looked at Xiao Wei as he asked.

The group were stunned as they looked in shock at Xiao Wei, Zhang Zhongmou could not help but speak up: "Su Yu, are you having a fever? Why are you talking about the loss of life force?"

Hearing Su Yu's question, Xiao Wei was unflustered as she nodded: "That's right, it will speed up the loss of life force by a huge amount, a normal person who acquires strange energy will die from old age in two to three months."

The group were aghast as they exchanged glances, Su Yu said in a solemn voice: “Why didn’t you say so earlier?”

Xiao Wei scrunched her cute little nose: “Big brother Su, even if I said it earlier, you wouldn’t necessarily believe it right? Remember me mentioning about Time Money? Time Money is used to deal with that situation, by absorbing Time Money, one can live for a longer time.”

Su Yu retrieved the six time coins which he had acquired from Situ Wuya: “Are these the ones?”

Xiao Wei continued: “This is the most inferior kind, each one can extend a person’s lifespan by one hour, also, each person can only absorb one piece a day, absorbing this type is really quite useless, only by exchanging thirty of these will one be able to obtain a piece with ‘Heaven’ written on it, those would be useful, one can live for a full day more, that is why I said that Situ Wuya was very poor.”

Su Yu bitterly smiled.

Ma Ziyue asked: “Su Yu, what’s going on?”

Su Yu continued: “I’ve only just learnt of this, it was the fifth lifeform which informed me. Our strange energy can also be termed as the power of evolution, from the moment of acquiring strange energy, we could be said to have unlocked the key to evolution, allowing us to continually evolve but the price of this is immense, for each day that passes, we use up one year of our life force, that means under normal circumstances, after two to three

months we will all die from old age. As for the Time Money which Xiao Wei mentioned, it contains life force which we require, absorbing it will allow us to live for a slightly longer period of time..... Xiao Wei said that this item could buy time, it was actually real..... Ha..... Time Money? Buying time? Really such apt naming.”

Su Yu had a bitter smile as he lamented.

The bodies of the others began to violently tremble, at this moment, everyone clearly understood what he was talking about as they exchanged shocked glances, Zhang Zhongmou said in a raspy voice: “Then what should we do? Where can we go to acquire Time Money? That’s right, Xiao Wei, you should definitely know.”

Su Yu said in a heavy voice: “Besides Time Money, there is another method, that is forming a soul contract with the fifth lifeform. The fifth lifeform can provide us with large amounts of life force, preventing us from ageing any further, to the extent that those who have already aged can actually regain their youth.”

As he said this, a voice rang out within his mind: “That’s wrong, one needs to be by my side to allow me to supply you with the vitality needed each day, you cannot regain your youth, this means that if you are already thirty, by staying by my side, you can constantly remain at thirty but you cannot return to how you were at twenty. You can’t mess this up, however, if I advance to a higher state, that would be a different story. Also, Time Money is definitely useful, it can allow a person’s outer appearance to recover to when they first acquired strange energy.”

Su Yu grunted before turning to the group: “Everyone, do not be nervous, as long as everyone forms a soul contract with the fifth lifeform, you can temporarily stop worrying about the loss of life force.”

Zhang Zhongmou trusted Su Yu as he immediately questioned: “How do we form a soul contract with it?”

A voice immediately sounded within his mind as he nodded: “Relax your bodies and release your mind, do not resist.”

“Okay.” Zhang Zhongmou closed his eyes as his entire body relaxed, Su Yu willed it as small balls of black flames flew forward, directly entering the forehead of Zhang Zhongmou before disappearing.

“Alright, it’s done.” Su Yu said this as he felt the black cocoon within him make a noise filled with satisfaction, it seemed that acquiring a second soul companion gave it a relatively large nourishment.

Zhang Zhongmou opened his eyes as he began to move his body: “That’s it? It doesn’t feel like anything?”

Su Yu replied: “It hasn’t been fully incubated yet, once it’s birthed, soul companions can gain unique abilities, who else is willing?”

Ma Ziyue and Jade hurriedly stood out, they trusted Su Yu as they

immediately formed soul contracts. The others were also left without a choice, Qin Jiagui, Zhao Shichang, Lei Rui and Zhou Birong were quite trusting of Su Yu as well and they formed soul contracts without any complications.

When Li Dong attempted to form a soul contract, it actually failed several times, Li Dong was extremely nervous when faced with Su Yu and his heart had set up a guard, causing it to be unsuccessful. Su Yu began to frown but Li Dong finally calmed down as he said in a shrill voice: “It will work now, it will definitely succeed.” before he closed his eyes to relax.

Su Yu sent a ball of black flames flying forward, this time it successfully entered Li Dong’s forehead as the soul contract was established.

At this moment, including Fang Jiong and Xiao Wei, another fifteen people had successfully formed soul contracts, together with the addition of Li Dong, the voice of the fifth lifeform rang in everyone’s minds: “Within ten days, the number of people with soul contracts must reach twenty, if this goal isn’t reached, I would die from the lack of nourishment and fail to hatch and die. When I die, all those who have formed soul contracts with me will die as well.”

“F***!”

“Ehh?!”

“What?!”

“What’s going on?!”

As this voice resounded, the reactions of the group were mixed as they began to shout, Su Yu could not help but angrily reply: “What’s going on? You didn’t mention this earlier, why must there be twenty people who form soul contracts with you within ten days? You will actually die after ten days if the quota isn’t reached?”

“Once the road of evolution has been activated, there is no backing away. If one fails to evolve, one will die. Although our fifth lifeform is the closest existence to the perfect existence, our criteria for living is also the most stringent, once we form a soul contract with other lifeforms and begin our path of evolution, we have no retreat, either successfully evolve or die trying, there is no third option. The most frightening thing about evolution is this restraint of time.”

As the voice resounded within Su Yu’s mind, only Su Yu could communicate with it, the others were merely secondary companions and did not have such abilities.

“However, you can rest your mind, once the number of companions reaches twenty, my requirement for incubation would have been reached. Once successful, there aren’t too many restrictions.”

Su Yu was silent for a moment, things had already reached this state and lamenting was useless, there was still time and they

needed to find five more people to form soul contracts with 'it', it should not be that difficult.

Thinking of this, Su Yu's heart calmed down as he bitterly looked towards Xiao Wei: "Little lass, you've really sabotaged us, within ten days we have to find five people to form soul contracts with this fellow otherwise we will all die."

Xiao Wei earnestly replied: "Big brother Su, I didn't harm any of you, I've also formed a soul contract with it. I'm not afraid, father has said that within this world, we need to have a challenging spirit, if one constantly retreats they won't live for long."

Su Yu's heart trembled: "Xiao Wei, it seems your dad was quite an impressive person."

Chapter 160: Plans For The Future

“Yup.” An expression of longing appeared on Xiao Wei’s face as she slowly continued: “In my heart, father is the most impressive person in the entire world. He had also formed a soul contract with a fifth lifeform and evolved it to an extremely high tier..... Just a bit more..... A bit more and he would have reached perfection..... Xiao Wei believes that big brother Su can do it.”

Su Yu was stunned as he scratched his head: “Why? Little lass, why do you have so much faith in me?”

“Because..... Because..... big brother Su’s power of evolution is very similar to father..... Each time I see big brother Su, I can feel a bit of dad’s aura..... That’s why I believe that big brother Su can do it.” Xiao Wei said this as she looked at Su Yu, her voice was soft and Su Yu was speechless as he heard this.

Suddenly, the voice of the fifth lifeform rang within Su Yu’s mind: “I’ll be kind and inform you, due to me leaving the area, this place will soon collapse.”

As the voice rang out, the surroundings began to rumble as signs of crumbling began to appear.

Su Yu immediately raged: “Why didn’t you tell me earlier?”

“I forgot, it isn’t too late to inform you, it’s better than not informing at all.” The voice of the fifth lifeform seemed indignant.

Su Yu was incensed but helpless, he could only hold Xiao Wei's hand while carrying a bag of food as he exclaimed: "The place is collapsing, let's go!" before rushing out.

The others could see the surroundings tremble and did not need a further reminder as they swiftly followed.

"Rumble!"

Sound continually rang out as rocks began to collapse, the entire cave was trembling violently and seemed like it would completely collapse at any moment.

When Su Yu and the others finally made it out of the cave panting, it completely caved in, they were stunned, if they were slightly slower, they would have been buried alive.

After exiting the cave, Su Yu led the way as he climbed to the peak of the small mountain, there were trees here and after placing the bags of food on the ground, Su Yu did not speak as he climbed up one of the trees to look into the distance.

There was a gentle rustle beside him, Qin Jiagui had also climbed up and was also looking into the distance.

As far as the eye could see, an endless sprawling forest expanded, it seemed without end, this was really an ocean of trees.

A feeling of hopelessness welled up within Qin Jiagui's heart as he muttered: "It is indeed as Xiao Wei said, this forest is simply without end, we actually thought that we could find an exit, we were really too naive..... Su Yu, it may be that we will never be able to return....."

As he said this, he looked down towards Yuan Niping, thinking of her accompanying him, if he really continued to live within this forest, it was not necessarily a bad thing. His only regret was that he would never see his mother again, with her son gone, she must be extremely worried.

Su Yu was silent, there was only one thing that was certain now, in a short period of time, there was no way to leave this world and return to their original world.

Since they could not return in a short period of time, they would have to make many preparations.

The problems of food, water and other important necessities needed to be answered, they did not have much food and water remaining, originally they had hoped to find the exit but suddenly discovered that there was no exit, they would even be required to live within the forest for a long period of time, consumables had become a big problem.

The problem of food was still alright, based on what Fang Jiong had said, he had used the meat of Lesser Goblins before, water was a greater problem because humans could not last for long without it, however this was not the most urgent problem, they needed to find five people willing to go through a soul contract within ten

days or they would all perish.

“Xiao Wei, what else do you know? Say everything now, you’ve made us all suspicious and wary, we’re really lost right now.” Below a tree, Zhang Zhongmou pestered as he attempted to make Xiao Wei speak, however, Xiao Wei only shook her head: “I’ve already said everything I know, as long as we are able to help the fifth lifeform evolve, successfully, we can all leave this world.”

Fang Jiong found a large boulder before sitting down, slowly sharpening his butcher’s knife, a mask of concentration could be seen on his face, he was not in a hurry to leave the forest, in his heart there was only the culinary arts.

Su Yu was on the tree as he looked down at Jade, Ma Ziyue and the others who were looking at him, they were clearly waiting for his decision.

Su Yu crouched before leaping down.

Qin Jiagui followed Su Yu as he spoke up: “Everyone, this forest is extremely vast, far larger than our wildest imaginations, with just our two feet, without a few months of time it is simply impossible to get out, it can be said that within this short period, we can forget about leaving this forest.”

Yuan Niping could not help but forward as she grasped Qin Jiagui’s arm while speaking in a worried tone: “Jiagui, then what should we do? We’re running out of food already.”

Qin Jiagui gently patted her hand to comfort her before looking towards Su Yu: “Su Yu, what should we do now? Should we continue pressing on or look for a place to stay? Or should we listen to the fifth lifeform and start looking for five others to form soul contracts?”

Su Yu sighed: “Within ten days, we have to find five people to form soul contracts with, otherwise..... we will all die. The other matters are not as pressing.”

Qin Jiagui thought for a moment before continuing: “Finding five other humans..... should we continue forward to head back? Ten days isn’t a short period of time but it isn’t very long either, if our luck is good, we may be able to find some within the first day, if it’s bad.....”

Su Yu calmly smiled: “Just incase, we should head back to the school. As you’ve said, what if we’re unlucky and unable to find anyone? Only by heading back to the school would our chance of meeting someone be higher. Over this period of time, I also wish to see what has happened to our other schoolmates.”

Hearing Su Yu’s suggestion of returning back to the school, Jade, Lei Rui, Ma Ziye, Zhao Shichang and the others exchanged glances as they immediately became silent. Scenes of them abandoning their schoolmates floated through their minds, who knew that they would actually have to turn back for a greater chance at finding other humans.

As for Xu Ruyun, Liu Zheng and the other newcomers, they did not have such feelings. Their thoughts were inconsequential to the

final decision and they merely remained silent, the fifth lifeform had tied their lives together and Su Yu's suggestion had the highest likelihood of them finding other humans.

Zhang Zhongmou muttered: "Your grandnanny, we have to go back towards the school? Damn, should have just remained there if we knew this would happen..... Sigh..... Wonder what happened to Lin Shi, Meng Bo and the other teachers, are they still within the school? Or have they already left the school to find another path?"

The group were all feeling guilty, as Su Yu talked about returning to the school, Ma Ziyue and the others felt a strange feeling well up within them, thinking of returning back and facing the schoolmates who had been tossed aside by them, they felt awkward and did not look forward to facing it.

Zhao Shichang could not help but mutter: "Do we really have to go back?" He thought back to when he had personally killed off two classmates, that chaotic scene flashed before his eyes.

Su Yu said coldly: "Living is most important, that is the plan, we will immediately head towards the school. We should take advantage of the fact that we still have food and find five people to form soul contracts with, all other matters can be put on hold."

Su Yu had never wanted to stand out, he had merely wanted to stick with the group to protect all those who were precious to him, he had been fully focused on finding an exit without caring about the matters of others because he had thought that it would only be a couple of days before they left the forest. Everything had

changed, they would definitely be unable to leave the forest within a short period of time, due to the soul contract requirements of the fifth lifeform, their lives were tied together and if the fifth lifeform died, they would all perish with it.

Under these circumstances, whoever did anything detrimental to the group would actually be threatening the lives of Su Yu and his precious friends, Su Yu would not hesitate to get rid of them.

This was the first time that Su Yu had spoken with such a firm tone and the others felt strange, they could tell that the current Su Yu was not to be trifled with, no one spoke up and the matter was concluded, they would head back to the school and it was also clearly the best option they had. They had also left markings along the way and could follow the way back without fear of getting lost.

“Understood, Su Yu, we will head back to the school immediately.” Zhao Shichang immediately changed his tone as he clenched his fists while saying in a solemn voice: “I believe in your decision.”

Su Yu glanced over at Zhao Shichang before nodding, he felt strange at Zhao Shichang’s sudden change of attitude, since saving Zhao Shichang’s life within the hospital, Zhao Shichang seemed to be filled with an immense trust and gratitude, it was clear that Zhao Shichang was voicing his support of Su Yu.

Towards Su Yu’s decision, Jade, Ma Ziye, Zhang Zhongmou, Lei Rui, Zhou Birong and the others did not have any suggestions to make. As for the newcomers like Xu Ruyun, they spoke little and did not voice their opinions, as for Liu Zheng, he was merely tier

one and did not have much of a say, Fang Jiong was tier four but concentrated mostly on his culinary arts, he did not really have anything against the plan.

Qin Jiagui saw that no one had any other suggestions before continuing: “Since nobody objects, that will be the plan. We have to think of what to do once we’ve reached the school and gathered another five companions, we have to think about our needs like food and water.”

Chapter 161: Terrifying, Su Yu's Broken Leg

Ma Ziyue spoke up: "Since we won't be able to leave the forest within a short period of time, we have to plan for the long term. Everyone should consume the food sparingly, no one knows what will happen in the future."

Fang Jiong patted his chest: "You can leave matters regarding food to me, within this forest, we definitely won't starve to death. Although the little kid isn't cute..... her words shouldn't be lies, she's already said that the fifth lifeform will be able to help us leave this world, in that case, we just need to help that thing mature, isn't that the plan?"

Fang Jiong's words made the group nod their heads, under the current circumstances, this was the only course of action. Qin Jiagui then continued: "Besides helping the fifth lifeform to mature, we can also look for other methods. I feel that this place has too many things that we are unclear of, like the time money, where do we find more? Also, the black clothed male who was chasing Xiao Wei, Xiao Wei, are you still unwilling to talk about it? Like the 'White Tiger' which he mentioned....."

Xiao Wei was questioned by Qin Jiagui and she immediately covered her face as a painful struggling expression appeared on it, it seemed like she had recalled something frightful in nature.

Fang Jiong immediately stood up: "Don't force her, she's merely a child." Although he said he hated little kids, Fang Jiong was extremely protective of Xiao Wei.

Qin Jiagui noticed this and could only sigh, there were too many doubts and uncertainties and Xiao Wei seemed to be the key, she seemed to know a lot regarding this world but she simply did not speak.

Xiao Wei's head was drooping down as she slowly lifted it back up before speaking: "It's not that I don't want to say..... I really don't know where to start..... Also, the things I know are limited, I only know this matter about the fifth lifeform and that time money can be used to buy various items which you want....."

Qin Jiagui's heart trembled as he hurriedly asked: "Use the time money to buy various items? Can we buy food and water as well? Or perhaps..... precious weapons?" Ma Ziyue and Zhang Zhongmou's precious weapons were extremely powerful, Qin Jiagui was actually very envious.

Xiao Wei slowly nodded her head.

Seeing her nod her head, the spirits of the group were roused as they crowded over, even Fang Jiong could not help but ask: "Are you for real? There is a place to buy items?"

Li Dong's sharp voice spoke up: "Little lass, where can we go to buy those items? Although we don't have much time money, we can go steal, your grandnanny, since there's such a good place, why didn't you tell us earlier? Are you looking to cause our deaths?"

Xiao Wei looked as the entire group crowded over when she

suddenly covered her ears and began to scream: “We can’t go! If we go..... we will all die! I don’t know! I don’t know anything! We can’t!” She pushed aside the group as she swiftly ran to the side.

The group were stunned as Fang Jiong exclaimed: “Little girl!”

Su Yu swiftly acted as he pounced forward, grabbing Xiao Wei in the blink of an eye.

“No, don’t force me!” Xiao Wei continued to cry.

Su Yu held her hands as he spoke gently: “No one is forcing you, don’t worry, with me here, no one will be able to force you.”

Xiao Wei slowly began to calm down upon hearing these words.

Su Yu could tell that Xiao Wei seemed to have suffered from some traumatic event thus causing her to have such a vigorous response, under the current circumstances, he could only slowly guide her, forcing her would have negative results.

“Xiao Wei, it’s okay, don’t think of those frightening memories anymore, we won’t ask anymore questions.” Su Yu rubbed Xiao Wei’s head to soothe her, his heart was in a turbulent storm of emotions as he thought of Xiao Wei’s words, there seemed to be a place within this forest that actually sold food and water as well as other goods, where was this place? Was it a city? Or could the humans who came to this world actually advance to such a point?

From the scenery he had seen earlier, it was endless forest all

around, there did not seem to be any large city, could it be some small village or merely a small barracks? Even if that was the case, it seemed like it was incredibly distant, something that could not be reached in one or two days. They had travelled for so many days since leaving the school but had not encountered such a place.

Xiao Wei's words were likely to be real, just from the name 'time money' one could tell that this was a form of currency, it should be something like money which could be traded but not merely for time, was there really a place to do such an exchange?

Su Yu continued to remain silent, he had already decided on returning to the school and find five others who were willing to form soul contracts, allowing the fifth lifeform to hatch. He would then decide on what to do after seeing what inconceivable abilities the hatched fifth lifeform had, if it did not have any abilities, he would try to slowly persuade Xiao Wei, she was a young child and gaining information from her would not be too difficult.

Su Yu smiled as he tousled Xiao Wei's hair, Xiao Wei's emotions had finally calmed down and an attached expression appeared on her face as she looked at Su Yu.

Su Yu noticed this and could not help but bitterly smile, he remember that Xiao Wei had mentioned he was very similar to her father, right now her look of attachment seemed to mean that she had already regarded him as a substitute father.

Suddenly, Su Yu seemed to realise something: "Xiao Wei had previously mentioned that her father was extremely powerful, he had also formed a soul contract and had nearly succeeded in his

evolution..... Nearly..... could it be that something had happened to her father? That's right..... that's why she was wandering in the forest alone till she met up with Fang Jiong, this makes sense, she could have been traumatised by whatever happened to her father, then what was the 'White Tiger' that Situ Wuya mentioned? If I'm not guessing wrongly, it probably has something to do with her parents.....”

Su Yu continued to remain silent as Zhou Birong walked over: “Xiao Wei, don't act like that in the future, it was our mistake earlier, we won't force you in the future, don't worry, only when you're willing to talk then you can do so.”

“Okay.....” Xiao Wei's head dropped as she muttered softly, her emotions had already calmed down.

Qin Jiagui lifted his head to look at the sky: “The sky is fast becoming black, should we all rest here for the night? Tomorrow we can begin our journey back to the school, so many things have transpired today, I'm afraid that we're all quite tired already right?”

Fang Jiong lifted his butcher's knife: “I'll take a look at our surroundings to see if there are any Lesser Goblins or Gnomes that I can catch to cook, although there may be a lack of seasoning and the flavour might not be superb, a change of taste once in awhile can't be bad.”

Zhang Zhongmou had a strange expression on his face: “That thing can actually be eaten? Especially those goblins..... they are so green..... just thinking of it is disgusting.”

Fang Jiong laughed: "I'll let you try it out later, culinary skills deemed as the work of the gods." He observed the surroundings before suddenly grunting, not far away on the slope of a hill, there were three figures who were swiftly moving like pellets there.

In no time, Su Yu also noticed this as he took two steps forward, his brow was furrowed, three people had suddenly appeared in this dangerous forest, it was difficult to tell if they were friend or foe and caution welled up within him.

"There are people there?" A person among the three figures spoke.

"Indeed, this feeling can't be wrong, it should be there, let's go." A cold female voice could be heard, there were two males and one female amongst them, their figures moved exceptionally fast and continued to move swiftly through the dense forest, they swiftly neared the top of the hill as they stopped ten metres away, sizing up Su Yu and the others.

Su Yu and the others swiftly acted, their seemingly random movements were actually coordinated, those with weaker combat prowess at tier one or zero retreated to the back while Su Yu, Fang Jiong, Ma Ziyue, Qin Jiagui and the others went forward, they were also measuring the three who had suddenly appeared.

These three were dressed in tight fitted black clothing that seem nimble, and the difference between them and Su Yu's group was stark, their clothes were fresh and not tattered and sorry looking

like that of Su Yu's group.

Looking at the three people before them, Su Yu and the others could not help but think of Mo Tian and Xue Tong who had chased after the '666' monster as well as Situ Wuya who had chased Xiao Wei, these people were all immaculately clean, completely different from their sorry states, where did these people come from?

Thinking back to Xiao Wei's words about utilising the time money to buy products, could it be that these people actually gathered in some place within this forest?

Su Yu was silent as he measured the three people, the three people were also measuring their group, suddenly, their gaze centered onto Xiao Wei.

These three people were all rather young, looking to be in their twenties, the girl's face was snow white and exceptionally beautiful but her face was cold and seemed to exude a cold aura, her eyes were sharp and a speckled white necklace hung around her neck, this neck was extremely unique and constantly moved on its own, as though it were a living thing.

As for the two males, the one on the left had a long and narrow face and was wearing a pair of shades, the one on the right was extremely small and seemed to only be slightly taller than Xiao Wei who was eleven or twelve.

As their gazes focused onto Xiao Wei, the male of short stature

laughed: “She’s really here, Wuqing, your nose is really sharp.”

The beautiful lady seemed even more agitated as her entire body trembled, her gaze slowly shifted from Xiao Wei to Su Yu as her face grew more and more ugly while she slowly enunciated every word: “Your body..... why does it have..... my brother Situ Wuya’s..... Aura..... Stench of blood..... could it be that you..... That you.....”

Su Yu’s heart trembled, he had killed Situ Wuya that night, was he actually the brother of this beautiful lady?

The short male said in a soft voice: “Situ Wuqing, you said that his body has the smell of Situ Wuya? How could it be possible? Could Situ Wuya have been.....”

Situ Wuqing’s face was pale, her brow was lifted as she said in a shrill voice: “My nose can’t be wrong, go catch that little brat, I will personally kill this man!”

“Brother..... I had already felt that something was amiss..... Why did you pretend to be capable.....” Situ Wuqing’s body continued to tremble as the necklace on her neck violently shook, suddenly, a strange cold wind rose up, Su Yu realised that the situation was grim and did not speak, he acted immediately as he shot forward, the Rending Storm punching towards Situ Wuqing.

“Okay!” By the side, the male of short stature shot forward towards Xiao Wei with a smile on his face: “Little brat, you are really so lucky, you were actually able to flee to this place, you

created plenty of trouble for us!”

Fang Jiong exclaimed: “Little lass, run!” black undulations exploded from his chest as the butcher’s knife struck forward to block the short male.

The other party had acted and the group knew that it was pointless to talk, in such a world, strength was everything. Ma Ziyue and Zhang Zhongmou wielded their Star Blade and Red Lotus Sword respectively while Qin Jiagui’s right hand transformed into metal.

Su Yu had acted first, it could be considered a sneak attack as he immediately struck the face of Situ Wuqing.

“Peng!”

The Rending Storm exploded forth and the girl actually shattered like glass.

“What?!” Su Yu was stunned, how could a person shatter like glass? A bad feeling welled up within his heart as he felt a strong force smash into his back, he groaned as he fell forward before tumbling, he could see that Situ Wuqing had suddenly appeared behind him, her face was filled with killing intent as she glared at him before pouncing.

“What happened just now?!” Su Yu shouted as he turned, his right hand stretched forth as he summoned the protective

bulwark, he could see Situ Wuqing's hands stretch forth with foot long blades within them striking on his Protective Bulwark as sparks flew out. Immediately afterwards, Su Yu's left hand struck out into the open as the compressed rending storm caused an explosion in the air.

“Piang!”

Situ Wuqing once again shattered like glass, at the same time, Su Yu suddenly screamed as his left leg felt cold, the flash of a blade could be seen as his left leg was chopped off as he collapsed on the floor.

Chapter 162: Frightening Ability

Situ Wuqing had been shattered by Su Yu's Rending Storm but a new Situ Wuqing had appeared behind Su Yu, her blade struck forward as it chopped off Su Yu's left leg.

Su Yu roared as he fell to the ground while Situ Wuqing said in a cold voice: "Just relax, I won't kill you off right away, I will slowly dissect you and let you taste something worse than death."

If her blade had been aimed at Su Yu's head, Su Yu would have already been a dead man.

"Su Yu!" Jade screamed from the back.

Su Yu's left leg had actually been instantly chopped off by an enemy, this was the first time such a scenario had occurred since they arrived in this forest.

By the side, Ma Ziyue was also shocked and could not be bothered to activate the Heaven's Net, both hands wielded the Star Blade as she rushed over.

Su Yu had fallen to the ground, he was currently looking at Situ Wuqing, large beads of sweat covered his face and the area where his leg was chopped off, blood gushed out like a fountain, a shocked expression on his face.

He was not shocked by his leg being chopped off, rather, it was

the frightening ability of Situ Wuqing, why had she shattered each time he hit her but a new her would form immediately thereafter? It seemed almost impossible to defend against, what was going on?

Being unable to see through the ability of this lady, he would definitely die in this battle without any chance at victory.

By the side, Fang Jiong had already obstructed the short male, his butcher's knife waved as streaks of black undulations followed, with Fang Jiong's ability, a single blade would be sufficient to rend the short male in two.

Qin Jiagui backed away as he relaxed his right shoulder, a metal cylinder appeared atop it as he prepared to use the Steel Missile, his brow was furrowed as he glanced at Xiao Wei, where did this child come from? Why were there so many people chasing after her? Where did these people come from? He was still in deep thought as he activated the Steel Missile, the missile left behind a stream of white smoke in the air as it flew directly towards Situ Wuqing.

Sutu Wuqing's blade had sliced off Su Yu's left leg, this was a shocking scene and even Qin Jiagui had been given a fright, he instinctively fired a Steel Missile towards Situ Wuqing.

Fang Jiong's blade slashed down as the short male smiled at him: "I am Gui Fantian, remember the name of the person who killed you when you report to King Yama, don't become a wandering ghost."

He laughed as he crouched lower, crisp cracking noises could suddenly be heard from his back as white bones began to protrude from his back, instantly becoming two immense white skeletal wings, these wings flapped before suddenly smashing forward.

Things had occurred too suddenly as Fang Jiong roared, kicking backwards as the short male laughed, the white skeletal wings seemed like living things as they dragged his small frame, lifting him up as he was spun before smashing down.

Fang Jiong barely managed to twist his body to avoid them when the skeletal wings suddenly sent white bones exploding forward.

Fang Jiong shouted in crazed manner, it was simply too late to dodge and ten odd holes appeared on his body, explosive 'papapa' sounds resounded out as he was struck by the ten odd white bones.

Qin Jiagui's Steel Missile flew forward, colliding into Situ Wuqing as it exploded, in this instant, Su Yu's eyes were wide open as he stared at her, he could see that she was beginning to shatter once again, his left hand immediately activated the Eye of Perception in an attempt to capture any information.

"Protective Bulwark!" Su Yu shouted in his heart as the Protective Bulwark shimmered into existence, by his side, a newly formed Situ Wuqing had silently appeared and her blades had once again chopped down, slicing down on his Protective Bulwark. If he had not summoned it, the blades would have already struck his body.

“I kind of understand this woman’s ability now.....” Su Yu had summoned the Protective Bulwark to block while his left hand activated the Rending Storm to smash heavily towards Situ Wuqing, almost at the same time, Ma Ziyue also pounced forward as she shouted delicately, the Star Blade chopping forward.

“Piang!”

Situ Wuqing shattered once again as Su Yu exclaimed: “Use the Heaven’s Net!” his right leg supported his body as he rolled on the ground.

The short male Gui Fantian had suddenly acted, his strength was certainly outstanding to be able to injure Fang Jiong in a single exchange. As for the long faced male who wore shades, he was also moving directly towards Xiao Wei.

Zhao Shichang and Xu Ruyun attacked from the left and right, Zhao Shichang howled as his Bone Blade went forward while Xu Ruyun remained silent, his two hands extending forward as several surgical knives appeared, piercing towards the man who was rushing over.

Further back, Jade’s left hand was continually drawing in the air and was almost done with activating her Runewords, charcoal briquettes had appeared from Huo Shan’s right hand, Li Dong had summoned his poisonous wasps, Zhou Birong’s right hand had transformed into a three hooked claw as they all defended Xiao Wei’s little frame.

It was merely a single exchange but the most powerful in the group, Su Yu and Fang Jiong, had been severely injured, the others were in states of shock as they combined to act, at this moment, hiding would only be a burden and they would all die if they did not work together.

Having experienced so many days of slaughter, everyone understood this logic and no one retreated.

The male with shades grunted as he suddenly stopped, reaching his hands to remove his shades.

With his shades removed, the group noticed that his left eye was red while his right eye was purple, he actually had two pupils of red and purple in colour.

The group stared blankly as a purple light began to emanate from the purple eye, suddenly, the surgical knives thrown by Xu Ruyun began to disintegrate, the space in front of him was actually beginning to twist, Zhao Shichang's bone blade had also begun to twist as it suddenly chopped towards Zhou Birong's three clawed hook.

Zhou Birong was shocked as she hurriedly pierced forward, a crisp 'ding!' rang out as the Bone Blade collided with it causing an explosion of sparks.

Zhou Birong was still tier one, her strength was far from that of Zhao Shichang, this blade from Zhao Shichang had immediately caused one of the claws to snap.

Closely thereafter, the long faced male's left red eye began to emanate a red light as Zhao Shichang suddenly began to shout crazily, his left hand was shielding his eyes as he staggered backwards while exclaiming in panic: "What's going on? Why can't I see anymore?!"

He slowly retracted his left hand as his two eyes were exposed, they were stark red as though he had sore eyes, a thin indistinct film of red mist was covering his eyeballs, blocking his vision and preventing him from seeing anything.

Zhao Shichang was clueless, although his eyes were not in pain, he could not see anything and his Bone Blade flailed about wildly, his face an expression of panic.

Xu Ruyun noticed everything that had happened to Zhao Shichang, his expression grew solemn as he silently moved to the side, wielding surgical knives in both his hands as he began to swiftly advance towards the back of the long faced male, if he managed to get close, he would be able to slice the throat of the man.

At this moment, Ma Ziyue and Zhang Zhongmou had pounced towards Situ Wuqing from the left and right, they were extremely concerned for Su Yu and were still reeling in shock from his serious injury.

Gui Fantian's single blow had injured Fang Jiong, the white skeletal wings had retracted and he was currently laughing

boisterously, their group of three did not have anyone who was weaker than the fourth tier, their abilities were also extremely bizarre causing someone as strong as Su Yu to be injured.

Fang Jiong had ten odd holes on his body as he roared, this middle aged uncle was extremely hardy and did not relent, raising his left hand to take the wok from his back as streaks of black undulation overload covered it: "Cyclone Wok!"

The large wok was flung towards Gui Fantian while his right hand continued wielding the butcher's knife, black undulations had gathered on the blade as he used his most powerful Steel Shattering Cleave.

Fang Jiong was also a tier four expert, when he exploded forth with his real strength, it was extremely frightening and the ten odd holes did not hinder him in the slightest, his current performance made Gui Fantian sigh.

Su Yu roared as he instructed Ma Ziyue to use the Heaven's Net.

Ma Ziyue fully trusted in Su Yu as she kept her Star Blade, her right foot stomped the ground as she immediately activated the Heaven's Net, Situ Wuqing did not dodge and was swiftly snared by the Heaven's Net, Zhang Zhongmou who was by the other side was already rushing over with his Red Lotus Sword.

Su Yu was on the ground but he actually managed to sit up, his ears twitched as the thumb on his right hand raised but did not make any other movements, he was watching Zhang Zhongmou

and his Red Lotus Sword which had smashed into Situ Wuqing again, it was no surprise that she once again shattered like glass, thereafter, Su Yu suddenly raised his thumb upwards.

“Pop!”

The right thumb had already turned gold as the energy of the Golden Blood was activated, at the same time, a blade sliced past Su Yu’s face, causing a line to be cut on his face, if the blade was slightly more accurate it would have cut off his ear.

Su Yu’s Golden Thumb had actually managed to press onto an arm, following the ‘pop!”, Situ Wuqing who was by his side groaned, Situ Wuqing’s figure suddenly appeared from the void, her expression was one of shock as she held her hand and retreated, the blade which was used to harm Su Yu’s face had already fallen to the ground and her right hand had already turned into a bloody mess.

The power of the Golden Blood was indeed frightening.

“How did you.....” Situ Wuqing was shocked but Su Yu had already kicked off with his right leg as he pounced forward.

Chapter 163: Curing Powder – Destroy The Invisible

Earlier, Su Yu had been sitting on the ground with his upper body covered in a thick layer of black scales, he guessed that Situ Wuqing would definitely attack him and could only aim at his exposed head, his thumb had been stretched forward as it suddenly shot towards Situ Wuqing, he had still been hurt and it was an extremely dangerous exchange for the two parties.

At this moment, Su Yu had already confirmed his guess with regards to Situ Wuqing's ability.

This Situ Wuqing could become invisible for a short period of time, but the condition for doing so would be to leave behind a mirage, this mirage would not be able to attack and would shatter after suffering an attack, only when the mirage ended would she then be able to attack.

It was fortunate that this ability had so many restrictions, without these restrictions, such an ability could be considered peerless, although it had so many conditions, Su Yu still could not come up with a good way to deal with it.

Seeing Ma Ziyue's Heaven's Net activate, it was clear that it was also unable to snare Situ Wuqing while she was invisible, the Heaven's Net required a target and needed Ma Ziyue to be looking at the other party, willing it to snare rather than it naturally selecting a target on its own. This was rather similar to the Eye of Perception, with the Heaven's Net rendered ineffective, this was certainly troublesome.

Situ Wuqing's right hand had already been crippled, her left hand was still holding a steel blade as she retreated, watching as Su Yu advanced, a cold smile appeared, although she was shocked, she swiftly recovered and allowed Su Yu to come towards her.

Su Yu noticed this and immediately understood that she had once again used her invisibility, she had left her mirage behind and her real body was currently hidden somewhere, once he pierced the mirage, the real body would then immediately attack.

It was fortunate that Situ Wuqing had already determined that Su Yu had killed her brother and only wanted to gun for him, if it were someone else, faced with Situ Wuqing's sudden attack, they would simply be unable to resist, likely to die after several similar attacks.

Ma Ziyue and Zhang Zhongmou noticed the strangeness of Situ Wuqing's ability and had ugly expressions, they were as sharp as Su Yu and had already guessed what her ability was, they felt fear at the unknown, it was as though Situ Wuqing could suddenly appear at any moment and end their lives.

Su Yu's left leg had been lopped off, his face had also endured a slash and it seemed like there was an additional mouth on his face, fresh blood covered half his face, painting a rather gruesome picture. As he watched Situ Wuqing suddenly stop, he immediately looked to the ground, based on his conjecture, even if Situ Wuqing was able to become invisible, the blood from her wound should still stain the ground thus allowing him to follow her movements. He was disappointed to find out that even her bloodstains were

invisible, there was simply no way to tell and no one knew where Situ Wuqing was or when her next life threatening blow would come.

At this moment, Xiao Wei suddenly delicately shouted: “Curing Powder!” As she threw an item that looked like a glass bottle, it shattered in the air as large amounts of faint red powder began to float, Su Yu immediately heard ‘Chi Chi’ sounds emitting from his leg and face region as the faint red powder seemed to actually increase the effective healing speed of his wounds.

“Big brother Su Yu, quick!”

Su Yu heard Xiao Wei’s anxious voice and seemed to understand something as he suddenly pounced towards Ma Ziyue who was by the side, his right leg kicked as his two hands also pressed against the ground, sending him flying forward while he shouted: “Old Mou, attack that woman!”

“Understood!” Although Zhang Zhongmou did not understand the reason, he wholeheartedly believed in Su Yu as he immediately wielded his Red Lotus Sword, slashing towards Situ Wuqing who was still stopped in her tracks.

All this occurred in an instant, Zhang Zhongmou yelled as the Red Lotus Sword struck Situ Wuqing, Situ Wuqing immediately shattered like a piece of glass.

As Situ Wuqing shattered, the real Situ Wuqing appeared standing right beside Ma Ziyue, wielding her steel blade as she sliced

towards Ma Ziyue's throat.

Earlier, Situ Wuqing's attack on Su Yu had failed, she had realised how fearsome Su Yu was and instantly made a change of plans, she would deal with Ma Ziyue and the others first before joining up with Gui Fantian and the long faced male to slowly torture Su Yu.

Situ Wuqing's plan was indeed quite good, in reality Ma Ziyue had not thought that Situ Wuqing would actually aim for her, with Su Yu's abilities, he was barely able to cope with Situ Wuqing's invisibility, the others like Ma Ziyue and Qin Jiagui would definitely be killed in a single strike.

This time, Su Yu seemed as though he had managed to accurately pinpoint Situ Wuqing's location, as the blade within her left hand went forward, Su Yu had already pounced over like a ferocious panther, his speed was phenomenal as he heavily smashed into her.

Situ Wuqing was shocked as the two people immediately flew away, Su Yu roared as his hands hugged her, no longer allowing her to turn invisible once more.

This pair of transformed arms contained incredible strength, simply hugging Situ Wuqing like a lover as he squeezed, fresh blood spurted out as cracking noises could be heard, a miserable shriek could be heard from Situ Wuqing's mouth as her waist was crushed by Su Yu into a pulp, the lower half of her body fell heavily to the ground, Su Yu's strength was simply too immense and had rent her body in two. Even so, Situ Wuqing made her

move and her blade had left a large wound at his stomach region.

Both of them fell to the ground severely injured, Situ Wuqing was rent apart at the waist and would definitely die as she wildly shouted: “How did you..... know about my position.....” Without knowing the reason, she would die with regrets.

Su Yu pointed as he smiled: “It’s all thanks to Xiao Wei, she tossed out some curing powder which sped up the healing of our injuries, your right hand was injured.....”

Hearing these words, Situ Wuqing’s remaining body relaxed as she muttered: “I see..... I see..... This lass..... It’s no wonder..... She’s really the spawn of ‘him’.....” her head fell down as she died, large amounts of strange energy began to escape from her body with ‘Chi Chi’ noises.

The Curing Powder which Xiao Wei had thrown healed everyone in the vicinity, Situ Wuqing’s right arm was injured and although she was invisible, the powder still took effect, landing on her wound as faint ‘Chi Chi’ noises and a faint red light could be seen. The outcome was obvious, although Su Yu was unable to see her, hearing the sounds together with the faint red light allowed him to easily pinpoint her location, as Zhang Zhongmou destroyed Situ Wuqing’s mirage, he had landed a killing blow on the lady with that frightening ability.

The ability of this woman was extremely strange and terrifying, if it were not for Xiao Wei’s quick wits together with the miraculous effect of the Curing Powder, this woman would have been enough to kill their entire group.

Following Situ Wuqing's death, the necklace on her neck shattered with a 'Pa!' as it dissipated in the wind, it seemed to have contained some sort of power but it had shattered and returned to the natural world.

Situ Wuqing had died, Su Yu was heavily injured, as for Fang Jiong and Gui Fantian, their battle was also extremely cruel.

Fang Jiong who had exploded forth with all his power had used the steel shattering cleave, cyclone wok and the undulation overload, the combination of these frightening abilities was not something that Gui Fantian could take lightly.

Following Situ Wuqing's miserable cry, Gui Fantian's heart trembled.

Situ Wuqing's ability was the most frightening amongst them, she could even kill people who were much stronger than her, she was where their confidence lay in, with her sudden gruesome death, Gui Fantian's heart was trembling as he howled, the white wings on his back expanded as frightening whooshing noises rang out, he actually gave up on Fang Jiong as he hurriedly attempted to flee.

Xiao Wei saw this and immediately screamed: "He can't escape!" her face was filled with terror, as though once Gui Fantian escaped, the outcome would be annihilation.

"Quick!" Su Yu exclaimed.

Ma Ziye, Zhang Zhongmou and the others did not know what

frightening outcome would occur if Gui Fantian ran, but it would definitely be disastrous, they could guess that all the people who had chased after Xiao Wei thus far must have come from some immense and frightening organisation, they would be able to bring a force that was impossible for them to deal with.

Zhang Zhongmou activated the Eye of Petrification as he shot one of the bone wings of Gui Fantian who was flying in the air, Gui Fantian's bone wings did not enable him to fly but were able to give him a swift boost of speed when they flapped, Fang Jiong wanted to chase but was simply too slow.

The light from the Eye of Petrification caused the bone wing to immediately stiffen, Gui Fantian lost his balance as Ma Ziyue swiftly activated the Heaven's Net, steel ropes wildly extended as they wrapped towards Gui Fantian.

The long faced male by the side had also seen Situ Wuqing's gruesome death and his heart was trembling, Huo Shan had already thrown the charcoal briquette towards him, there were also poisonous wasps that were buzzing in the air flying towards him, Xu Ruyun had silently struck and Jade's Runewords had also activated, a streak of white shot through the air towards him.

Although they were not strong individually, when they worked together, they had a frightening killing potential.

The long faced male was still shocked as his purple eye flashed with a purple light, the air before him twisted as the charcoal briquette as well as Jade's attack vanished before him, his body was already rushing to Xiao Wei who was by the side.

This long faced male had a different idea from Gui Fantian, one wanted to run immediately upon seeing Situ Wuqing's death while the other wanted to kill off Xiao Wei before leaving because he noticed that Su Yu was also heavily injured.

Killing Xiao Wei would gain him immense credit, he did not wish to give up so easily.

Chapter 164: “White Tiger”

Xiao Wei seemed to be able to guess what the long faced male was thinking as she hurriedly ran towards Su Yu after throwing the Curing Powder.

Despite Su Yu being seriously injured, she felt that he was the most reliable person within the group.

Although Xiao Wei was young, she was quick witted and seemed to be even more adaptive than the others.

The long faced male roared as his purple and red eyes simultaneously shot out lights, he could not be bothered about Xu Ruyun and the others who were attacking him as he singlemindedly headed for Xiao Wei.

Su Yu had killed Situ Wuqing and was currently on the ground, the entire field was within his vision as he swiftly reminded the others to stop Gui Fantian as he attempted to flee, the actions of Xiao Wei and the long faced man naturally did not escape his eyes as the ten odd hidden holes within his body began to swiftly gather energy, converting it into strange energy which immediately filled his hands, waiting for the opportunity to strike.

Xiao Wei quickly reached Su Yu as she exclaimed: “Big brother Su Yu!” she was reminding Su Yu to watch out.

Su Yu smiled: “Crouch down now!”

Xiao Wei immediately reacted as she crouched, the long faced male was almost upon Xiao Wei when she suddenly crouched causing him to be faced with Su Yu who was on the ground instead.

“Hmph!” The long faced male knew that Su Yu was severely injured, looking as Xiao Wei crouched down exposing Su Yu, he did not panic as light was released from his eyes, he wanted to kill two birds with one stone, getting rid of Su Yu in the process as well.

The purple eyes could twist space and the red eyes could cause the enemy to become blind, as this purple and red light combined, an even more frightening ‘Light of Destruction’ that contained an explosive effect was sent forward, it was shot toward Su Yu and if he was hit by it, even a large boulder would be shattered.

Although Su Yu did not know what the combination of the Red and Purple lights did, he could guess that it would definitely be fearsome, it was an ability of a tier four expert and he swiftly lifted his right thumb, using the effect of the Golden Blood as he pressed against the light, the Rending Storm was activated on his left hand as the strange energy that he had stored within him finally surged forth, reaching a peak as he roared and flung his hand up.

The Golden Thumb came into contact with the Light of Destruction, an explosion rang out as an intense pain immediately filled the eyes of the long faced male as he howled, the frightening Golden Blood had allowed his thumb to not only break through the Light of Destruction but also send the energy rebounding backwards, immediately causing his two eyes to bleed, blinding

him.

The long faced male had an expression of panic as he howled, Su Yu had already activated the Rending Storm as he pressed forward, smashing it into the other party's chest as it instantly exploded.

“Haooo!” The long faced male howled as he was sent flying backwards, the flesh at his chest area was meshed up, his bones and innards had been sent flying out his back as he continued to tumble while shrieking, only stopping ten odd metres away.

As an expert of the fourth tier, although his chest had been destroyed, he did not immediately die, his eyes were burning as he continued to flail with his two hands while yelled: “Huang Jingting will not die here! You cannot kill me! If you kill me you won't live either!”

He continued to wildly yell when suddenly his throat felt cold as his yells became gurgling noises, Xu Ruyun had lightly slit his throat with a surgical knife, instantly causing blood to gush out like a fountain, large amounts of blood continued to splatter out from the area of his throat which already resembled the mouth of a human.

Huang Jingting was like a trapped beast in its last throes as he continued to flail his four limbs, his throat, mouth, nose, eyes and ears had large amounts of blood surging out, the strange energy within his body was emitting ‘Chi Chi’ noises as they escaped through the wound in his chest, his body was like a balloon that was deflating as it slowly collapsed.

The sounds and struggling gradually grew weaker and weaker before he finally stopped, and at last he was dead.

By the side, Gui Fantian's left wing had already been hit by the Eye of Petrification, although the difference in strength between the two sides caused only half of the wing to petrify, it still managed to affect him as he shook, his balance had been disrupted as he fell from the sky, thereafter, Ma Ziyue's Heaven's Net was activated as the steel threads extended forward, instantly locking Gui Fantian in place.

Qin Jiagui did not speak as the Steel Missile was sent flying forward, a trail of white mist could be seen as it struck Gui Fantian.

Gui Fantian roared as his wings retracted to protect his body, the Steel Missile exploded but actually failed to injure him in the slightest.

Zhang Zhongmou wielded the Red Lotus Sword as he wordlessly struck at Gui Fantian who was still trapped by the Heaven's Net.

“Chi!”

The Red Lotus Sword seemed as though it were slicing through tofu as it easily pierced into Gui Fantian.

Gui Fantian roared as his wings expanded, immediately striking

at Zhang Zhongmou.

Zhang Zhongmou groaned as he tumbled away, there were actually seven to eight bloody holes on his chest and it was a bloody mess.

“Cyclone Wok!” At the back, a frightening roar rang out as Fang Jiong threw his wok.

The might of this ability was extremely frightening as it smashed into Gui Fantian, Gui Fantian had just expanded his wings to attack Zhang Zhongmou, he did not have any protection as seven to eight bones within his body were immediately shattered.

By this time, the effect of the Heaven’s Net had finally worn off as Gui Fantian was also sent flying away by the Cyclone Wok.

Fang Jiong rushed forward with big strides, Ma Ziyue went forward with her Star Blade, Qin Jiagui activated his Demolishing Iron Fist as the three swiftly moved.

Su Yu was able to capture all this, seeing Fang Jiong’s Cyclone Wok strike Gui Fantian, he knew that the other party was finished as he laid back down before instructing Xiao Wei: “Little lass, help me bring my leg here.”

One of Su Yu’s legs had been chopped off, there was a large gash at his abdomen, blood was dripping from his face, he cut a sorry figure as he laid there but he was still somehow able to be alive, he

was extremely calm as he instructed, it seemed as though everything that was currently occurring was well within his grasp.

This feeling caused Xiao Wei to be dazed for a moment before she recovered, hurriedly rushing over to the other side to bring Su Yu's dismembered leg.

Su Yu grit his teeth as he reattached his leg, qi flowed from his two hands into his leg, he had previously assisted Ma Ziye in mending her foot back when he was still only at tier two, he was currently a tier four expert and mending his own dismembered leg was not difficult.

Su Yu's estimate was correct, Fang Jiong's Cyclone Wok was extremely powerful, Gui Fantian had not seen it coming and the bones in his body were shattered, he was currently on the ground unable to move as his bone wings feebly attempted to move, Fang Jiong was already roaring as he used the Steel Shattering Cleave.

The Steel Shattering Cleave was terrifying, even Su Yu's Protective Bulwark was unable to completely defend against it unless he used the power of the Golden Blood.

Gui Fantian did not have the power of the Golden Blood or such a defensive ability, following the Steel Shattering Cleave, a bone wing was lopped off as a frightening roar could be heard from Gui Fantian, Ma Ziye was only slower by a step as she chopped with the Star Blade, a dazzling light could be seen as before the blade pierced into Gui Fantian's face that was filled with indignation.

Being able to become a tier four expert, one had to experience countless life and death trials to advance, each of them had been through so much, not any less than Su Yu, these experts had extreme confidence in themselves and were looking forward to achieving the perfect form, towering over all other existences.

However, this dream was suddenly dashed, they were not killed by any powerful and mighty monsters but rather by one of their kind, they had died under the hands of humans.

These humans before them whom they had regarded as nothing more than ants.

‘Chi!’

The sound was extremely crisp, like a sharp blade slicing through bone, Gui Fantian’s face was immediately sliced in two, blood and brain matter splattered out as the Star Blade was coated in it.

Gui Fantian instantly lost his life, Ma Ziyue kept the Star Blade but no excitement could be seen on her face, although they had been forced to do so, killing a human was something that did not incite much excitement, as Ma Ziyue kept her blade, a strange thought welled up within her mind: “One day, will someone also use a similar method to chop off my head, at that moment, will my expression be one of hopelessness and regret like Gui Fantian?”

Having these strange thoughts, Ma Ziyue could not help but look back at Su Yu, as she saw his figure, her emotions slowly calmed down.

“If I really die in the future, I hope that I will be able to die before him..... at the very least..... if I’m alive, he won’t die before me.....” Ma Ziyue thought to herself as she slowly walked towards Su Yu.

With the help of Xiao Wei’s mysterious Curing Powder together with his qi, Su Yu’s dismembered leg was slowly connected, as for the wound on his face and abdomen, they were not that serious and would swiftly heal on their own.

“Little lass, you’ve really done us a great service this time.” Su Yu’s leg had finally been reattached as he wiggled it, there did not seem to be any problems as he looked over at Xiao Wei, stretching his hand forward as he rubbed her head.

“Big brother, stop messing up Xiao Wei’s hair.” Xiao Wei had an indignant expression on her face.

“Little lass, you’re really wily, amongst these women..... Besides Ma Ziyue, you’ll probably be the strongest.” As Su Yu said this, he was thinking back to Situ Wuqing’s ability, although he was much stronger than her, this strange ability had almost allowed her to kill him, this made Su Yu realise that he needed to exercise even more caution.

Strength was clearly not everything, he wondered what the Eye of Perception would be like after advancing to Eye of Divinity, would it have been able to get the information regarding Situ Wuqing’s ability? Otherwise, if they met with another powerful enemy with an ability like Situ Wuqing, they would all be in grave danger.

“Little lass, what’s this Curing Powder? Is it your ability?” Su Yu asked as he saw Ma Ziyue walk to his side, an expression of concern was on her face as she seemed to want to say something as her lips gently quivered but she continued to remain silent.

Su Yu nodded to her: “Gui Fantian is dead?”

“Mmmmm.” Ma Ziyue acquiesced with a noise as the image of Gui Fantian’s sliced head appeared within her mind.

Xiao Wei replied: “The Curing Powder isn’t my ability, it is a type of medicine that can speed up the healing of wounds, one can buy it and it is very cheap, a single time coin will be sufficient to buy several bottles.

Su Yu nodded as he continued: “This thing seems rather useful, buying a few bottles seems quite worth it, it is also able to be used in a myriad of ways, if I wish to buy it, where should I go?”

“So many places sell it, but I haven’t been to those places, I only know ‘White Tiger’.....” As she said this, Xiao Wei seemed to suddenly wake up as she said indignantly: “Big Brother Su, you’re trying to trick me into speaking.....”

A look of fear slowly crept up onto her face as she said softly: “Big Brother Su, it isn’t that Xiao Wei isn’t willing to speak..... I’m just afraid that if I say it..... I will be harming all of you..... once I say it, you will definitely go there but currently we are not strong enough, we can’t go there..... No matter what, Xiao Wei will not

talk.” Having said this, Xiao Wei’s face suddenly became rigid.

Su Yu was stunned for a moment before asking: “Those people that were chasing after you, did they come from this ‘White Tiger’?”

Xiao Wei gently nodded: “Big brother Su, do you know that they are actually the weakest there? No, they can’t even be considered to be officially a part of White Tiger..... Do you understand now?”

Su Yu sucked in a breath of cold air but a smile appeared on his face: “I understand, it’s alright, when you feel that we’re ready, you can tell me.” His hand went forward to rub Xiao Wei’s head before standing up, moving his leg, he felt that it was already completely healed.

“Eh? What is this thing?” By the side, Zhang Zhongmou and the others were taking the items from the three corpses, Li Dong had even taken the clothes off Gui Fantian to wear, his original clothes were already tattered and torn in many places.

They did not find anything much on Gui Fantian and the long faced male, only a number of Time Money, however, on Situ Wuqing’s body, they found a strange metal medal and Zhang Zhongmou could not help but exclaim.

Seeing it, all colour instantly drained from Xiao Wei’s face.

Chapter 165: Evading Crisis

Zhang Zhongmou found a metal plaque on Situ Wuqing's corpse and could not help but grab it: "Eh? What is this thing?"

Zhao Shichang followed up: "Isn't that just a plaque?"

"Damn, captain obvious, who doesn't know it's a plaque, I'm asking if there are any uses for this thing."

The others began to crowd around to take a look at the metal plaque within Zhang Zhongmou's hand, Xiao Wei who was beside Su Yu heard the commotion as she turned to look, upon seeing the small metal plaque, all the colour seemed to drain from her cute little face as she said in a shrill voice: "It's over!"

Xiao Wei's reaction made the others jump in fright, as for Xiao Wei she had already swiftly run over as she snatched the plaque from Zhang Zhongmou, this black plaque had the image of a tiger carved on it, the tiger seemed to have been dyed white by some substance and the white tiger seemed very life-like, extremely majestic yet in Xiao Wei's eyes, it was like seeing a ghost as she swiftly threw it aside.

"It really is..... It really is the 'White Tiger's Symbol', it's over..... it's over..... we are all done for." Xiao Wei's face was a pasty white as she continued to mutter, her face was filled with panic and anxiety.

The others exchanged glances as Su Yu walked over to gently rub

her head: “Xiao Wei, calm down, what happened? What is the White Tiger’s Symbol?”

Zhou Birong also hurried over: “That’s right, Xiao Wei, don’t be afraid, we’re all on your side. If there’s anything, let us know and we can help you.”

Fang Jiong said in a heavy voice: “Little kids are really annoying, even if the sky falls we adults will hold it up, what’s there to be so panicked about little kid?”

Su Yu and the others continued to console as Xiao Wei’s emotions were slowly stabilised before she replied: “This ‘White Tiger Symbol’ is a form of identification, this dead woman was actually an actual member..... These ‘White Tiger Symbol’s have a special function..... Once the person who owns it dies, the other party will immediately be able to detect it, also, based on the ‘White Tiger Symbol’ they will be able to find this place..... This time..... this time I’m afraid..... Many frightening people will appear..... We..... we’re finished, none of us can escape.”

Xiao Wei suddenly was speaking shrilly, it was clear that she was being immensely pressured by the frightening implications behind the ‘White Tiger Symbol’.

Su Yu absorbed this information as he picked up the White Tiger Symbol: “The other party will be able to find this place because of this thing?”

“That’s right.” Xiao Wei said with a face full of terror: “And it

will be very swift.”

“Then immediately break it!” Qin Jiagui urged.

Xiao Wei shook her head: “It’s useless, this White Tiger Symbol can’t be destroyed, even if it is, as long as there is even a sliver of it remaining, the other party will be able to find this place.”

Hearing this, Su Yu’s mind churned as he swiftly commanded: “Everyone, let’s bury the two corpses and clear all traces in this area leaving only the corpse of Situ Wuqing behind.” As he said this, his body sprang into the air as he swiftly reached the top of a rather large tree.

“Alright.” Zhang Zhongmou immediately replied as he retrieved the Red Lotus Sword, he did not know what Su Yu was planning to do with Situ Wuqing’s corpse but did not think any further as he immediately did as he was told.

Zhao Shichang wielded his bone blade to dig while the others began to clear up the traces of blood and any signs of battle, Zhou Birong was quite experienced in this area and under her guidance, the scene was swiftly returned to its original appearance.

“Su Yu, what are you doing up there?” Jade lifted her head as she shouted.

Lei Rui gently pulled at her sleeves before softly whispering: “He must be planning to toss the White Tiger Symbol away, the further

the better.”

Jade gasped as she suddenly realised what he was up to.

The reason why Su YU had scaled this tall tree was precisely as what Lei Rui had said, he was planning to toss the White Tiger Symbol far away.

Since the other party could find the location of the White Tiger Symbol, Su Yu was prepared to make use of this to hoodwink the other party, after scaling the tallest tree he could find and stabilising his body, he took a deep breath as he calmly gathered his wits about him, they had walked towards the north in search of the exit and needed to walk south back to the school, in that case.....

Su Yu grunted as his right arm flexed, black scales appeared as the Golden Blood was activated, the strength within his right arm reached a peak as he suddenly tossed the White Tiger Symbol to the west.

They were originally planning to remain atop a mountain and Su Yu had also scaled to the top of the tallest tree, from this height with his full force, the White Tiger Symbol became a streak of black light that swiftly flew in the direction of the west forest, swiftly moving away with no way to keep track of it, with the frightening force contained in the toss, it would definitely be far from this region of the forest.

Su Yu was silently estimating, even if the other party was able to

find the White Tiger Symbol, there would not be any traces in that area, the other party would be hard pressed to find traces of them unless they were able to track them via smell like Situ Wuqing, in that case, it would be problematic but he could only take things one step at a time.

Su Yu leapt from the large tree as he saw the group work together, swiftly burying the two corpses and clearly any traces of blood or battle, from an initial glance, it was difficult to see any traces of combat.

Su Yu lifted the two portions of Situ Wuqing's corpse before looking to the sky, it was already becoming dark as he spoke: "Let's go." as he began to rush forward.

They had initially planned to spend the night here, however, with Xiao Wei's reaction as well as the unique effect of the White Tiger Symbol, the group were alarmed as they did not know who was behind the White Tiger Symbol but based on Xiao Wei's reaction, they were definitely frightening and naturally wanted to leave this place as soon as possible.

"Su Yu, what are you bringing that woman's corpse for?" Jade could not help but curiously ask.

Su Yu waved his hand, indicating that she should not ask so much, he was too lazy to explain himself as he carried the corpse of Situ Wuqing. They moved swiftly, in no time, Su Yu had already reached the hole within the mountain that was currently caved in as he placed the corpse down before beginning to move the large boulders aside, dumping her remains within before closing it back

up.

The others began to exchange glances as Su Yu looked back while smiling: “I’m not sure if this will work but it should delay the other party quite a bit right? Alright, everyone let’s move out, don’t leave any traces behind.”

Qin Jiagui nodded: “Everyone be careful, let’s go.”

Right now there were two tier four experts within the group, the strength of the entire group was already extremely powerful as they rushed through the night, they had not met monsters above tier three within this region before and were not feeling threatened at all.

The group increased their speed, they had six to seven days worth of food remaining as they continued to rush towards the southern region of this forest.

Qin Jiagui and Su Yu led the way while Fang Jiong remained at the back of the group, the fifteen of them proceeded to move speedily through the forest.

Su Yu looked back at the few tier ones within the group as he frowned, if Su Yu was to go at his full speed, he would be able to travel ten times faster than an ordinary person, however, these people within the group were slowing them down causing their speed to only be two times that of ordinary humans.

Thinking of this, Su Yu suddenly realised a problem, if there was a group that consisted of tier four or higher, the amount of distance they could cover within a single night was phenomenal, it would be terrifying and it was no wonder Xiao Wei had been afraid that the other party would arrive at any moment.

If it were a group of experts and they moved at their fastest pace, it would simply be too frightening, this vast forest would be easily traversed and they would likely be able to easily catch up.

Carrying these complicated emotions, Su Yu realised that they had already unintentionally provoked a frightening force, they had already entered into a difficult quagmire with the other party, he alone had already killed two people from the other party.

He did not have a single idea as to what this power consisted of, thinking of this, he could not help but glance towards Xiao Wei as he sighed.

What was so special about this lass that caused the other party to so urgently want to kill her?

The sky was gradually becoming darker, Qin Jiagui and a few others had already grabbed their torchlights to shine a path. Although they had come to the forest for ten odd days, they had all been rather conservative and there was still enough battery for the torchlights to work, using the light from these torchlights, the group could move in the night but their speed was greatly reduced.

They had left markings along the way allowing them to easily

find the path back to the school. These markings were also a slight problem, it would be easy for anyone else to follow these markings towards them, even if they were to destroy the markings, some traces would definitely be left behind.

It was only deep into the night when the group finally came to a halt, the few tier zeroes were already panting and could run no longer as they began to rest.

Liu Zheng panted as he gulped two mouthfuls of water while muttering: “Damn, have we really come to a strange new world? Why does it feel so different from the storybooks, this is really too tiring..... Huff..... Huff..... nothing invigorating about this experience at all.....”

“Everyone let’s rest here for now before continuing.” Qin Jiagui looked up at the sky, it was already extremely dark and his emotions were also very grim, he could faintly sense an inauspicious feeling as though the terrifying evil experts could descend on them at any moment.

Chapter 166: Karmic Wheel

Within the group, Xiao Wei could not help but constantly look towards the north, fear could be clearly seen on her face.

The group had merely rested for a short moment when a frightening rumbling noise could be heard from the west.

Things had occurred too suddenly and everyone was shocked as they swiftly stood up, borrowing the faint light from the night sky to look into the distance at an immense construction that was extending upwards as the rumbling continued.

The group exchanged glances as several shouted out at the same time: “Sky Hole!”

At the northern region of the forest that was quite a distance from Su Yu and the others, the ground of the mountain that they had been on had been dug up, the corpses of the two great tier four experts of Gui Fantian and Huang Jingting had already been lifted from the holes and were lying on the ground.

Beside these two corpses were three black figures.

From the illumination of the moon, one could faintly see three figures dressed in black clothing that was similar to that of Gui Fantian and Huang Jingting, the only difference was that the three people had white stripes at their sleeves, seeming to indicate that they were of a different status.

One of the three black figures held a White Tiger Symbol within his hand as he said in a heavy voice: “This White Tiger Symbol belongs to Situ Wuqing but her corpse isn’t here..... Master said that she has already died though.....”

“Although Situ Wuqing was only a tier four dark iron warrior, her ability was very unique and even if she was matched with tier five experts like ourselves, she would not necessarily lose. What kind of opponent would actually be able to kill her?” By the side, a person’s voice rang out filled with disbelief and anger.

“Within this region of forest, it is extremely difficult for an expert over tier four to emerge..... with Situ Wuqing’s ability, it should allow her to be invincible here..... Could it be the ‘666’?”

“No.....” The person who held Situ Wuqing’s White Tiger Symbol within his hand said in a hoarse voice: “Looking at their injuries, this should have been done by dark iron warriors, also..... the aura of this mysterious weapon.....” The black figure stooped down as he gently brushed past the sound on Gui Fantian’s head before placing his finger into his mouth as he gently sucked, his face seemed especially frightening in the darkness.

“Master is going to be really furious..... In order to deal with the brat from the Xiao family, he has already lost so many men..... Due to that special reason, us fifth tier dark iron warriors have a restriction after entering this region of forest, we must absolutely not cause any more bloodshed, none of the beast soldiers should be killed, do you understand? Our objective is only the brat of the Xiao family as well as those fellows who killed Situ Wuqing.”

The dark figure in the centre chose this moment to speak: “Relax, we also understand the restriction, if we are to skip too many tiers..... The consequences could be dire..... Ai!” One of them suddenly raised his head and sighed helplessly: “With these rules, we are all like ants..... The only people who are able to go against these rules are the Golden race of legends..... Besides them, even master cannot do so.....”

“Don’t be overly worried, master has already made preparations, although it can only be used once, once we find our target and I use the item which master has given to me, we will be able to ignore the restriction for a full minute..... within this minute, we must make sure that we complete our task. If the minute passes and we continue to act, it would mean our deaths, do you understand me?”

“Yup, but that little brat of the Xiao family is quite skilled, actually splitting their corpses and burying them to waste our time, however, in front of my Karmic Wheel, all this is merely a joke.”

One of the three had a mocking smile on his face as his left hand turned, a crisp sound like that of a bell rang out as his right hand waved, atop his palm appeared a strange wheel that was roughly two inches tall.

This wheel seemed similar to the Buddhist’s eternal wheel of life but in its centre were several pointers which protruded outwards, this person took the White Tiger Symbol: “Karmic cycle..... If there is a cause there will be effect..... With cause and effect

existing, one cannot escape from the control of the Karmic Wheel, this White Tiger Symbol has a karmic link with Situ Wuqing, as long as we find Situ Wuqing's corpse, we will be able to use her corpse to find the location of her killers..... Situ Wuqing died in their hands, a karmic link has been formed between them..... This karma will have to be returned.....”

This person continued to mutter before suddenly groaning, the pointers in the centre of the wheel began to wildly spin before the three pointers stopped, pointing towards three separate directions.

One of the directions was where the White Tiger Symbol was placed, as for the other two, it was still a mystery as to where they were pointed towards.

This person continued to slowly move the White Tiger Symbol as the pointer slowly moved along with it, the pointer in the centre did not move while the other pointer began to gently tremble.

“I understand now, this is pointing to the location of Situ Wuqing's corpse, this pointer that is gently trembling..... It should be pointing to where the culprits are located..... the southern region of the forest.”

“Boss, should we head to the culprits location or look for the corpse of Situ Wuqing first?” Another person asked.

“We'll first find Situ Wuqing's corpse, we should find out how she was killed. I think understanding the abilities of the culprits will be important, the other party was able to kill her, they aren't

some random ruffians, we cannot be complacent.” The black figure in the middle said in a hoarse voice as the three swiftly moved out, arriving at the collapsed stone cave in mere moments.”

Looking at the collapsed stone cave, the three had expressions of confusion as one said hesitantly: “Situ Wuqing’s corpse is here, could it be that she wasn’t killed by a person and was actually buried inside?”

“Why would she choose to enter such a stone cave?”

“Maybe there’s something inside, who knows…….”

“Stop talking nonsense, look for her corpse and everything will be revealed.”

The three people began to move as they swiftly dug out Situ Wuqing’s corpse.

Looking at Situ Wuqing’s corpse which had been rent in two, the expressions on the three were extremely ugly.

“She was killed, also…… it was done by quite a frightening force…… Situ Wuqing’s invisibility technique, how could it lose it’s effect? Could it be that the other party managed to gain some information regarding her ability?”

The black figure who was in the centre fell into contemplation before suddenly stretching a hand to the wound at Situ Wuqing’s right palm, taking a swab before licking his finger as his expression

changed: “I understand, this is the taste of Curing Powder, the reason why the culprit was able to find her must be this injury..... This culprit isn’t simple, he is at least tier four..... he could possibly even be tier five.”

“If that’s really the case then there would actually be some challenge, boss, you are known as invincible within the fifth tiers, even if the culprit was also tier five, he wouldn’t be your match. Boss, are you feeling excited?”

“Hmph..... I’m definitely interested, a person who is able to think of using Curing Powder to locate Situ Wuqing’s real body..... Able to injure her right from the start..... that explosive power..... Not bad, he should be a real opponent, let’s go, I’m really looking forward to our encounter.”

After a brief pause, the three figures moved off from the mountain towards the southern region of the forest.

Su Yu and the others were currently resting within the forest when frightening rumbling noises suddenly rang out, following the sounds, the group were shocked to see an immense construction that was slowly appearing as the rumbling continued. From the top of a skyscraper-like tree, a flickering multicoloured neon light slowly revealed itself. In the backdrop, one could see four large words, “The Affluent Guest Lodge”. Simply conspicuous and eye-catching in the night.

Su Yu and the others exchanged glances before shouting together: “Sky Hole?”

It was without question that the new construction had fallen into a Sky Hole before appearing within the forest, looking at the four big characters “The Affluent Guest Lodge”, it seemed that a hotel had been transported here.

“Let’s go over and take a look.” Su Yu immediately thought of the possibility of forming soul contracts with five suitable people, they would then be able to save the trip to the school.

As the group drew nearer, they noticed that the building was at least thirty stories or higher, although the multicoloured dazzling lights were gradually fading, they could still see that resplendent sign, this was definitely a top tier hotel.

At this moment, within the hotel, a loud commotion could be heard as the rumbling had awakened several people, due to the dark night, the people inside had not realised that they had come to another world, the panic they felt was not too great.

Su Yu walked twenty odd metres to stand before the building before suddenly stopping.

The group following behind him swiftly noticed that an accompanying group of Lesser Goblins had also appeared as soon as the hotel had fully landed.

There were roughly fifteen of them that were currently rushing towards the large doors of the hotel.

“Go!” Zhao Shichang and the others wanted to rush forward but Su Yu stretched his hand to block the way as he said softly: “Everyone, calm down, don’t be reckless, don’t you remember the outcome of us interfering?”

The group immediately thought of the last time they had met with Xu Ruyun, Liuzheng and the others on the tourist bus, although they had assisted them initially, the result was that the people who were meant to die had still died while those with the ability to live had continued forward. They had almost been dragged into the danger, it could be said that whether they helped or not was no difference.

Su Yu’s thinking went even further, with the appearance of the Lesser Goblins, they would help him weed out the humans and those that managed to live would definitely be the capable few, these Lesser Goblins were aiding him in choosing his future partners.

Chapter 167: The Enemy Is Here

Su Yu quietly hid his body as he said softly: “Everyone let’s watch first, don’t act recklessly.”

Qin Jiagui spoke softly: “If there are people who manage to live, it would be perfect for us to invite them to join us as companions, we are currently lacking five people and there may be suitable people within.”

The group immediately understood what they two meant, they had considered both the repercussions of recklessly helping the others while also taking the chance to find five soul companions, this group of Lesser Goblins was clearly the best method to do so.

At this moment, the group of Lesser Goblins were already letting out frightening roars as they broke through the glass doors of the hotel, there seemed to be two people who were just off their shifts and they yelled in fear upon seeing this group of green skinned monsters.

Two miserable cries rang out as the group of Lesser Goblins rushed into the hotel.

Su Yu and the others silently waited by the side, such a large building definitely contained many people but who knew how many would be left in the aftermath?

In no time, the screams of terror could be heard from the first level of the hotel, as these screams reverberated, noises could be

heard from the other floors as people were startled from their stupor, they had just experienced seconds of violent trembling and were still confused when the electricity was suddenly cut, miserable cries could suddenly be heard as well. With so many sudden changes, anyone would panic and many ran out of their rooms to check out the situation, several people also wanted to head down but realised that the elevator was not working as they went for the stairs, the entire building was a hubbub of activity.

Su Yu and the others continued to silently wait outside, although it was kind of unbearable, they did not have any other method to deal with the situation. Even if they acted to kill the ten odd Lesser Goblins, they would suffer frightening consequences for doing so, their previous experience was still deeply etched in their memories.

Xiao Wei continued to glance at their surroundings, it was clear that she was extremely restless as she quietly shifted to Su Yu's side, tugging at his shirt as she whispered: "Big brother Su, I..... I keep feeling that something isn't quite right..... if we continue to remain here, it will be very dangerous."

"Hm? What do you mean?" Su Yu was stunned as Lei Rui continued: "That's right, I also feel that something terrifying is about to happen."

Xiao Wei said softly: "Half a day..... That is sufficient for those people to find us..... If we continue to remain here..... I fear it will be very dangerous."

Su Yu heard her words as his brow frowned, looking at the

sinister forest in the surroundings as he felt a strange feeling of fear and danger.

Xiao Wei's fears were not without basis, White Tiger was apparently an extremely powerful organisation and the people sent by them would likely be able to find them within half a day, if they continued to remain here, the danger was definitely present.

Qin Jiagui continued: "Should we enter the hotel? Let's find the five humans first to form soul contracts before leaving? If we continue waiting here, who knows how much time we will waste, that really does increase the danger."

Su Yu acquiesced: "That's all that we can do now I suppose."

Li Dong could not help but speak up: "All of you really believe her words? Isn't it too exaggerated? Will there really be people gunning for our lives?" suspicion could be seen written on his face, he had felt that Xiao Wei was an eyesore, she was merely a little brat but pretended to be mysterious, hiding so much information causing him to be extremely unhappy.

Fang Jiong smiled: "If you don't believe her, you can remain here." as he continued to take big strides towards the hotel.

Li Dong was stunned for a moment as he watched the group head towards the hotel as he hurriedly followed.

Although the safest option was to immediately leave, when Su Yu

and the others thought of the distance to the school as well as the requirement to find five soul companions, with such a convenient place right before them with tons of people coupled with the fact that the school might have even been vacated, the temptation was simply too great to remain.

The fifth lifeform had already informed them that the deadline was ten days, within this period of time, they had to find five more soul companions or it would die causing all companions with it to die as well. Although the validity of this statement was not confirmed, in such a strange world anything could happen and the group could not take such a risk.

The group entered the hotel and a sight of countless corpses greeted them, the Lesser Goblins had smashed several heads in and blood and brain matter was everywhere, it was almost entirely silent as they proceeded to head up the stairs.

Not long after Su Yu and the others entered the hotel, within the dark forest, three figures appeared suddenly like a bolt of lightning.

“Swish” The leading person came to a stop as he glanced at the large building that was filled with cries of terror as he frowned: “What’s going on? You’re saying this is the place?”

“That’s right, the Karmic Wheel cannot be wrong, it’s only that this building.....” The person by the side had a strange expression on his face.

“Hmph, it seems that the Sky Hole has sent in a batch of new people and were found by them.....It’s only..... did they enter to avoid us or was this mere coincidence.....” The leading person rubbed his chin as he contemplated.

“What should we do now? Should we head in to start a search immediately? That seems extremely dangerous, our actions are heavily restricted and if we enter such a rowdy place and were forced to act, it would be possible for us to accidentally harm bystanders and cross the line..... that would truly be problematic.” One of the three piped up.

The three who had suddenly appeared were dressed in black and their sleeves had a single white marking on it.

The leading person frowned as he grunted: “These people.....” helplessness flashed within his eyes, within such a large building that was in a clamor, if they were to enter it would likely cause an even bigger commotion, they were tier five experts and if they were to accidentally kill a bystander, they would fall into dire straits.

After a moment of silence, the leading person spoke up again: “We will wait here, use your Karmic Wheel to lock onto them, these people won’t stay in that building indefinitely, that little brat, this time we will surely take her life as well as the fellow who killed Situ Wuqing..... I really look forward to this.” as he muttered, a beastial light flashed through his eyes.

At this moment Su Yu and the others did not know that they had unknowingly avoided danger but the enemy was currently waiting

right outside the building and once they exited, they would immediately be assaulted.

Xiao Wei was still feeling restless and only upon entering the large building did her emotions calm down, following the group as they swiftly ran up the stairs to the fourth floor when a loud rumbling could be heard as fresh blood splattered forth.

The group immediately looked over to see a Lesser Goblin that was currently squashed between the wedge of the door, a frightening amount of force had clearly been used to squash the Lesser Goblin to death, green blood splattered the door as loud banging noises erupted from within the room followed by the miserable cries of the Lesser Goblins.

By the time the door was released, the corpse of the Lesser Goblin slid to the ground as the group saw a person walk out from the room, he had a dazed expression as though he could not believe that he had killed such a monster.

This was a middle aged man of around thirty, he was dressed in a black western styled suit, he was well built and roughly 1.83 metres tall, his muscles were clearly bulging through his well fitted clothing making him seem as though he were a physical trainer.

At this moment as he looked at the Lesser Goblin which was sprawled on the ground, a strange expression appeared on his face before he lifted his head and walked towards Su Yu and the group.

Su Yu activated the Eye of Perception as he immediately obtained

information that the fit male was already a tier zero dark iron warrior, the Lesser Goblin had clearly died to him.

“This is a Lesser Goblin, you have already come to a completely different world overrun with monsters, are you willing to join us?” Su Yu walked as he said solemnly, black scales had already appeared on both his arms with ‘Chi Chi’ noises filling the air.

The eyes of the well built male were bulging out as he tried to absorb everything that was occurring before him, it was clear he simply could not believe his eyes.

“Bang!”

Su Yu’s left hand stretched forward as he easily smashed through the wall by the side as he said simply: “I understand that all this is rather hard to believe, however, you have killed a Lesser Goblin and will soon gain strength like mine.....”

He was not done speaking as the male suddenly began to retreat while trembling: “Don’t come over, you..... who are you people?” he was frantically pressing on his phone in a futile attempt to get help.

Su Yu frowned, he understood that it was difficult to get the other party to accept all this in a short period of time.

Slowly receding his black scales, Su Yu retracted his left hand as he sighed, interacting with a stranger was not his best suit, he had

initially wanted to garner confidence by showing his strength, who knew that this would instead frighten the male.

Qin Jiagui went forward as he spoke in a heavy voice: “My name is Qin Jiagui, this is Su Yu, we have all come from different places and fallen into this strange world through the Sky Hole, this hotel has also suffered from a similar fate. Do you remember the shaking and trembling earlier? At that moment, this hotel had fallen into a Sky Hole, entering into this world. Within this world, monsters abound and if we kill these monsters, we can gain unique powers like that of Su Yu or myself, you should be able to feel your newly gained ability.”

Qin Jiagui spoke as he activated his strange energy causing his right arm to transform to metal before swiftly stopping as he continued: “We have gathered together to form a group to battle against these monsters as well as trying to live through this frightening world. Are you willing to join us? Or would you rather traverse through this world filled with monsters alone?”

Following Qin Jiagui’s explanation, the male before them clearly calmed down as he felt the strange energy within him. Looking at the monster’s corpse, although Qin Jiagui’s words were rather unbelievable, everything before him could not be explained and it was clearly not a dream nor was it a prank.

Following Qin Jiagui’s explanation, the expression on the male’s face was hesitation, Su Yu was already feeling restless, judging by the male’s expression, it would not be easy to convince him to form a soul contract in a short period of time, he also remembered Xiao Wei’s words that the enemy could be arriving at any moment,

they really could not afford to waste time here.

After contemplating for a moment, Su Yu whispered: “Xiao Wei, is there any other method? If the other party isn’t willing, can we force them to form a soul contract?”

“There is a way, knock him unconscious and use your powerful energy to forcefully form the contract.” Xiao Wei thought for a moment before replying.

Su Yu let out a sigh of relief: “It’ll be much easier that way.” as he suddenly rushed forward with a smile on his face: “We don’t have any ill intent, you should take a nap first.” Black scales appeared as he pressed down on the face of the male.

As a tier four expert, when faced with someone who had just become a dark iron warrior, it was as easy as flipping a palm, he was more afraid of harming him as he controlled his strength.

However, Su Yu simply did not foresee what happened next. As he attempted to stretch out his left hand, he suddenly felt a tight squeeze on his hand, and followed by the sky spinning about. Unexpectedly this guy had grab onto arm and did a hip toss, flinging Su Yu away.

This male was just packed with muscles, he just simply looked like a professional wrestler. His reaction was phenomenal as Su Yu groaned, heavily smashing into a door.

Things had occurred too suddenly and the others were shocked, Zhang Zhongmou strode forward angrily as the Red Lotus Sword appeared within his hand.

Su Yu who had fallen away got back up as he smiled: “Really powerful, all of you don’t act!” as he suddenly moved, appearing right beside the male.

Chapter 168: Xiao Wei's Suggestion

Su Yu had been too complacent and had actually been tossed aside by a recently promoted tier zero dark iron warrior, after a moment of shock, he actually became happy as he stood steadily behind the male, calling for Zhang Zhongmou to halt for fear of injuring the male.

Having seen the ferociousness of this male, he was clearly a talent that could be molded as Su Yu smiled while stretching his right hand to grab at his face once again, this time he was ready for any movements.

The man roared, he had already calmed down from his initial panicked state and swiftly grabbed and twisted Su Yu's outstretched arm, if it were an ordinary person, he would have easily snapped that person's arm.

Su Yu allowed him to freely grab his arm before suddenly jerking, black scales emerged as he pulled, forcing the male to fall towards him as his left hand stretched out, chopping towards the back of the man.

Su Yu's blow was extremely precise, it did not injure the man but rather caused him to immediately fall unconscious as he fell limply to the ground.

If both sides had not gained strange energy, even three Su Yus would likely be insufficient to deal with the man. However, he was now a tier four expert and comparing him to a tier zero dark iron

warrior, the difference in their strengths was simply uncomparable.

After knocking the man unconscious, Su Yu immediately acted as he summoned the fifth lifeform, a ball of black flames appeared from his right hand as it struck the brow of the man, 'Pa', the black flame exploded upon contact with the man's brow as it disappeared.

"What's going on?" Su Yu frowned as the voice of the fifth lifeform rang out in his mind: "Gather your energy of evolution and try again."

"Mmhmmm."

Su Yu gathered his strange energy which was in the form of qi into his right arm as he slowly felt the life energy fluctuations of the fifth lifeform combining with his qi, raising his finger as he pressed onto the brow of the man as the black flames slowly entered.

This time, the man did not resist the black flames as they sunk into his brow, at the same time, the familiar voice of the fifth lifeform rang out: "Number sixteen, four to go with nine and a half days remaining."

"I know, you don't have to remind me." Su Yu unhappily replied, he really wanted to know what unique ability the fifth lifeform had once it matured, this fellow claimed to be the closest lifeform to a god, such arrogance should have the capability to back it up.

At this moment, Xiao Wei suddenly threw a small item that seemed like a mini handphone, it was currently flashing with a white light as though it were receiving some sort of signal.

Colour drained from Xiao Wei's face as she looked to the window by the side, staring at the forest outside the large building.

“What is this thing?” Zhang Zhongmou asked curiously: “Xiao Wei, in the future we shouldn't call you little lass anymore, we should call you Doraemon.”

Looking at this little lass constantly whip out strange and interesting objects, curing powder, necklace and now this mini handphone, it seemed like a fascinating object.

Zhou Birong walked to her said and asked with concern: “Xiao Wei, what's the matter?”

“They've come.” Xiao Wei's voice was filled with terror.

“They?” Zhou Birong was stunned as Qin Jiagui strode forward: “White Tiger?”

“Yes.....” Xiao Wei nodded: “They've come and..... they are extremely nearby.”

Qin Jiagui walked to the window as he looked outside, it was an

eerily sinister forest filled with endless trees but no humans could be seen.

Zhang Zhongmou asked curiously: “Doraemon, how did you find out that the other party was here? Was it due to that thing in your hand?”

Xiao Wei replied in a soft voice: “As long as they use the White Tiger Symbol to engage in communication, this device within my hand will have a reaction..... also..... it can only receive information within fifty metres..... look at it flashing, this means that the other party is within fifty metres of us.”

These words made the hearts of everyone present tremble, Zhang Zhongmou spoke both anxious and excitedly: “Really? Where? How many people are there? Your grandnanny, will they be more frightening than that Situ Wuqing?”

Xiao Wei looked at him with fear in her eyes as she continued: “Only a fifth tier dark iron warrior has the right to obtain a White Tiger Symbol, the person called Situ Wuqing may have some unique ability or connection that allowed her to join them..... The ones that have appeared..... Are definitely tier five dark iron warriors.....”

These words made the entire group suck in a breath of cold air, a tier five dark iron warrior? What sort of existence was that? Even Su Yu had merely turned tier four not long ago, Situ Wuqing who was also at tier four had almost managed to kill him. Within their group, only Su Yu and Fang Jiong were at tier four, Ma Ziyue was the only one at tier three while the others were stuck at lower

tiers.

“Usually..... they move as a three man unit..... I think this time won't be an exception..... There could only be more not less.....” as she spoke, her eyes were filled with dread.

Su Yu, Fang Jiong, Qin Jiagui, Ma Ziyue and the others felt their bodies shiver as though they had been dropped into an icy pond, even Zhang Zhongmou who was usually rowdy had his mouth ajar but no words were coming out.

At least three experts of the fifth tier? They were already within fifty metres of them? The group immediately felt numb.

Although none of them had met a tier five expert before, from the power of a tier four expert, one could surmise that a tier five dark iron warrior would certainly be powerful to a frightening degree.

“What should we do?” Zhang Zhongmou exclaimed, Zhou Birong's expression was ugly: “Should we immediately leave this place?”

Qin Jiagui said in a heavy voice: “Xiao Wei do you know their rough location? Maybe we can use the night to our advantage to flee.”

Xiao Wei shook her head: “No, they are definitely guarding the outside, once we go out, no matter which direction we flee in, we

won't be able to escape from them. We are trapped here, there are simply too many of us, we won't be able to escape.....”

Ma Ziyue asked curiously: “They are guarding the outside? Why don't they just come right in? Since they are able to find this place, they should also know our current location.”

Xiao Wei replied: “This..... Is related to a certain rule..... If I remember correctly, once a person reaches the fifth tier, they cannot recklessly kill, with the building in a state of chaos, they would likely be dragged into the mess..... I think..... they should be waiting for us to leave before acting.”

Xiao Wei's little device could tell that the other party were still holding their positions and had guessed at the reason why.

“There is such a thing? Doesn't that mean we will be safe if we continue to hide inside?” Zhang Zhongmou felt that the situation was strange.

“No, once the chaos settles down..... They will definitely act, we can't delay for too long.” Xiao Wei shook her head.

The group exchanged glances as Li Dong suddenly spoke: “The target of the other party should be you, it actually doesn't really concern us.....”

His words had barely been finished when Su Yu interrupted: “We have already been embroiled within, if you wish to extricate

yourself from this affair, it's already too late. Don't think of those useless things, the current problem we need to tackle is..... Three or more tier five dark iron warriors right?"

Li Dong was rendered speechless and did not speak anymore.

Qin Jiagui continued: "I feel that our only hope lies in utilising the chaos, mixing in with the crowd after the ten odd Lesser Goblins have been killed, rushing out together with them under the cover of darkness, we should be able to easily mix in."

Qin Jiagui's suggestion caused the eyes of everyone to light up as Yuan Niping said softly: "This strategy has a chance for success, it's definitely better than being sitting ducks and waiting for the other party to kill us."

Zhou Birong also nodded: "There should be quite a few people within this building, this strategy is plausible."

Xiao Wei shook her head: "The other party is able to find us in such a short period of time..... I think that they definitely have some method or ability to find traces of us, using the chaos to run is simply a useless endeavour, faced with tier five dark iron warriors, we simply don't have the strength to retaliate."

The group had always known that many secrets were hidden on Xiao Wei's person, she was definitely not a simple child. Who knew that she would be able to dissect the problem to succinctly, even better than all of them who were adults, they could not help but measure her with a strange expression.

What could a little girl of barely twelve like her have experienced to have such a rich insight, able to clearly analyse the situation and think of things which the group had overlooked. Of course, the reason for her brilliance was also the fact that this world was still a great mystery to them and she was clearly much more informed.

“Xiao Wei, what do you think we should do?” Su Yu no longer looked lightly at her as he began to ask for her opinion.

Jade noticed that Su Yu was earnestly asking for the opinion of a child, she felt that the scene was rather comical as she glanced at Su Yu.

Xiao Wei lifted her head and replied in earnest: “I think..... We should use the little time we have to find four more soul companions, that is what we must do.”

Chapter 169: Big Shot Celebrity

Li Dong could not help but yell: “Do you wish to cause our deaths? You’ve just mentioned that there are three tier five dark iron warriors below that could rush in and kill us at any moment. Under these circumstances, you still want us to find the four other soul companions? A child will always be a child, you definitely don’t know how to weigh what’s important.”

This time, Li Dong’s words did not cause the group to feel disgust, even Jade and Yuan Niping felt the same way, they still had ten odd days to find soul companions and it was not as pressing as the three tier five dark iron warriors that could take their lives at any moment. It was clearly more important to escape this place or think of strategies to deal with them rather than finding the four soul companions.

Su Yu ignored Li Dong’s shouts as he stared at Xiao Wei: “Why?”

He had already noticed that the little kid was very astute, she definitely had a reason for insisting on going ahead with finding the four soul companions.

“Because..... once we find the twenty odd humans, the fifth lifeform will hatch..... At that time, we may have a method to deal with our enemies.” Xiao Wei said in a soft voice, she had been frightened by Li Dong’s yelling earlier.

Su Yu heard her words as he silently contemplated while Qin Jiagui could not help but speak up: “Do we really have to trust in

some vague fifth lifeform?”

Lei Rui suddenly spoke up: “I believe her.....” as she slowly walked over, her eyes became misty as she muttered: “I also feel that..... Once we gather twenty soul companions..... there will be..... something inconceivable that occurs..... We can..... try.”

Su Yu looked over at Lei Rui, he noticed her misty eyes as she gently spoke, in an instant, there was a strange sacred light that seemed to shine from her body.

His heart trembled as he recalled the mysterious symbol of eight that had appeared on her chest at the hospital, this world was simply filled with too many strange occurrences. Finally, Su Yu nodded: “Alright, I believe you, lass, don’t make me disappointed.” as he said this, he stretched his hand forward to rub Xiao Wei’s head.

Xiao Wei gently nodded.

Qin Jiagui then spoke up: “Su Yu, do we really have to gamble?”

If they listened to Xiao Wei to look for the four additional people, they would definitely use a large amount of time. Rather than doing that, they could use this time to quickly escape, it was extremely probable that they would be faced with the attacks from the three tier five experts.

If they did not listen to Xiao Wei and followed Qin Jiagui’s

suggestion to escape under the chaotic circumstances, there was definitely a good chance of success, this was the reason why Qin Jiagui questioned Su Yu on why they were taking a gamble.

This was a gamble with their lives on the line.

Hearing Qin Jiagui's words, Su Yu realised that this matter could not be decided by him alone. This concerned the lives of everyone present and he turned to question them in a solemn voice: "Under the current circumstances, what are your ideas? Do we believe Xiao Wei and take a gamble? Or should we just escape?"

Lei Rui said softly: "I believe in her."

Fang Jiong laughed: "Although I detest the little kid, her words are often correct."

Su Yu looked over at Ma Ziyue: "What do you think?"

Ma Ziyue walked forward with a smile: "You decide, I believe in you."

Jade spoke up loudly: "I will follow Lei Rui's decisions, since she believes in Xiao Wei, I have no objections."

Zhang Zhongmou laughed: "I will follow the decision of Instant Noodles, why did we have to have such a complicated relationship? Whatever you say, this Zhang will follow, aren't they merely tier five dark iron warriors? This person's Red Lotus Sword is already

feeling itchy, they should hurry up and let me chop them.”

Within the group, a large majority did not have any objections, they largely trusted in Su Yu’s decision as he finally turned to Qin Jiagui: “What do you think? I’m being serious here, this concerns all our lives.”

Qin Jiagui was silent for a moment as he looked at everyone around him before finally smiling: “We’ve already been through so many life and death situations, if you’re all willing to gamble your lives what is the value of my opinion, haha, let’s just go crazy and even if we made the wrong decision, when we walk the yellow river* at least we’ll all be together and it won’t be boring.”

[T/N* River of death]

Yuan Niping frowned: “Jiagui, don’t say such inauspicious things.”

Qin Jiagui laughed as he walked to the side of the window whilst looking out at the night sky: “Nothing is taboo, what is there to be overly concerned with in such a world.” he suddenly turned to look at Su Yu: “Let’s go, we believe in you.”

“Okay.” Su Yu nodded, in this moment, his heart was filled with courage and confidence as he spoke up: “Move out.” as he turned, walking towards the area with the largest commotion.

At the back, Zhang Zhongmou had plonked the unconscious male

onto his back as the group swiftly followed, this time, even Li Dong who was the least courageous did not mention running away.

In such a world, only by moving as a group would one be able to have a higher chance of staying alive. If one wanted to move individually, with Li Dong's current tier one power, the likelihood of dying was tremendous. Even if he did not agree with Su Yu's decision, once the others agreed he would have no other choice but to follow, they would live or die together, there was simply no other option.

In order to maximise time, Su Yu was swiftly rushing towards the area with the largest commotion, there was simply no time or need to consider whether the other party had potential or whether they had already advanced by killing a Lesser Goblin, he had already questioned the fifth lifeform within him and the answer given to him was that a soul companion did not have to be a dark iron warrior.

In no time, Su Yu saw the end of the corridor up ahead, within the clamor, there were three Lesser Goblins chasing a large group of people.

This group of people were largely in fresh clothes, some had clothing that were not in order, as though they had merely just woken up and were currently panicked and confused.

Su Yu swiftly rushed forward as he swiped a single Lesser Goblin before finally catching up to four people who had fallen behind, gently tapping the back of their necks as each of them fell to the ground unconscious.

As for the two remaining Lesser Goblins that were chasing the panicked group, they did not have the time to care about it.

Time was of the essence and they were looking to get four additional soul companions within the shortest amount of time. In this way, even if the hatching of the fifth lifeform did not give them any useful ability, they would have sufficient time to make an escape.

Su Yu did not wish to pin all his hopes on this arrogant and haughty fifth lifeform.

As Su Yu dealt with the four people, Qin Jiagui and the others finally caught up.

“How is it? Huff..... huff..... Old Su, you really run too fast.....” Zhang Zhongmou placed the unconscious male on the ground before looking at the four new unconscious people on the ground: “Damn, am I seeing things?” as he moved forward, an expression of astonishment on his face.

Su Yu had chased after the closest four people before knocking them unconscious, he had not noticed who they were and was stunned as he looked down.

There were two males and two females, one of the men had a face with a lush beard, his hair was unkempt like a white flower. Simply robust and prosperous with a plump and tall stature. He looked to be around the age of fifty to sixty. The other male was a

young boy of thirteen to fourteen years old who had pretty and delicate features.

The two females were actually causing them to feel astonished.

These two ladies looked extremely similar, a single glance and one would be able to tell that they were twins, they seemed to be around eighteen years of age, branded accessories could be seen on their neck and ears. They had a noble and youthful feel to them and as they lay on the floor, looking like two begonias.

Su Yu and Zhang Zhongmou were stunned because these two ladies were extremely familiar, they had often seen them on television as well as on the newspapers.

The current hottest sister duo for singing, the sister was Shangguan Wan, the other was Shangguan Rui, they had countless male fans and were known as the killer duo, regardless of Su Yu, Zhang Zhongmou or the others at the back, no one was unfamiliar.

Who would have guessed that they would suddenly meet these famous stars amongst the group of fleeing people within this high class hotel.

‘This..... these people are my idols..... damn..... this..... this is really.....’ Zhang Zhongmou was stammering, he was simply in disbelief.

By the side, Yuan Niping suddenly shouted: “Look at him.....

this..... Isn't he 'Big Beard' don't you guys know? He's been in many martial arts movies, he is very famous, he..... Why is he here.....”

The others were exchanging glances, the Shangguan sisters were simply too famous, the attention of the group was largely centered on them and it was only with Yuan Niping's shout that they realised the bearded male was also a famous personage.

The group had more or less heard of this director before, his name was Zhang Jifa but was known to a large majority as Big Beard. He had directed quite a few movie flops but was still well known in the movie industry and could be still considered a big shot. With him being here with the two Shangguan sisters in this hotel, one could not help but let their imagination run wild. It just so happens that In the past, there was a period of time where there were rumours of the sisters intending to enter into the movie industry.

As for the other little male child, the group did not recognise him but it was likely that he was some famous personage as well.

Chapter 170: New World

Fang Jiong spoke up: “This hotel is of a very high standard, having a few famous people here is very ordinary.” He had been a super chef in a seven star restaurant, although he was seldom interested in other matters, he had some basic knowledge and seeing these famous people did not surprise him in the least.

Su Yu nodded, he had already regained his composure, although seeing these famous people would cause one to feel excitement, the reality was cruel. No matter how famous they were or how much influence they had, after arriving in this world, all that was meaningless, they could die miserably or become food for the monsters. It could be said that everyone was equal here.

Su Yu silently questioned the fifth lifeform within him: “Is it possible with these four ordinary people?” He could tell that these four people had not killed any monsters and were still ordinary humans.

“Yes.....” The voice replied with a hint of excitement, twenty people had finally been gathered and ‘it’ could finally be borne into this world, becoming a real living entity.

Su Yu had a definitive response as he let out a sigh of relief, raising his right index finger to slowly press against the brow of the big beard director.

He did not care whether the other party would become an expert, it was imperative for them to gather twenty soul companions as

soon as possible, other matters could be discussed in the future.

The others crowded around, Xiao Wei occasionally glanced at the device within her hand, an expression of anxiety mixed with excitement could be seen on her little face.

Forming soul contracts with these ordinary humans seemed easier, the other party's spiritual defense was weak and the contract was swiftly formed with the director.

Within his body, the voice of the fifth lifeform rang out: "Number seventeen....."

Su Yu frowned as he cursed, this fellow actually used the adjective 'it' to describe humans, this made him feel displeased but he did not have any other options as he continued to move towards the twin sisters.

In no time, a contract had been formed with the pair of singers, the voice of the huge black egg within him was clearly becoming more excited as it continued: "One more..... only one more to go....."

Su Yu unconsciously became anxious, his right index finger moved towards the final male child before finally pressing down on his brow.

The others swiftly became silent as they watched, they were all soul companions and although they did not have a method to

directly interact with the fifth lifeform, they could faintly feel a strange sensation.

This sensation seemed as though a new form of life was hatching.

As black flames submerged into the brow of the little child's brow, a loud voice suddenly rang out from within Su Yu: "Number twenty..... Contract established....."

At the same time, crisp cracking noises suddenly rang out from within Su Yu as he roared, the shell of the black egg within him was cracking and the shattered fragments became balls of black fire which escaped from his body, disappearing in the surrounding air.

In this moment, the light from the black flames continued to shine, blinding everyone and forcing them to avert their gazes.

Twenty soul companions had finally been gathered, the existence that was closest to perfection was about to finally hatch into the world, fully awakening in this world.

Outside the hotel, the three frightening tier five experts were still patiently waiting, it was still chaotic within the hotel and they did not wish to accidentally kill anyone. They were merely waiting for Su Yu and the others to exit the hotel, at that time they would swoop down on them, it was obvious that the three would not expect Su Yu and the others to notice their presence.

They were initially calmly waiting but a dazzling black light filled with frightening energy fluctuations was suddenly released, immediately drawing their full attention.

In an instant, the three stood up with astonished expressions on their faces: “This energy fluctuation..... could it be..... could it really be..... damn, how could that be possible? These fellows..... could they really have been so lucky? Impossible..... Let’s move out!”

An explosive shout rang out, he did not hesitate any longer as he moved like lightning, swiftly rushing into the building at a phenomenal speed.

The other two seemed to realise something as envy and shock flashed within their eyes before they swiftly rushed forward as well.

Such a heaven sent opportunity, why weren’t they the ones to receive it?

Tier five experts were no laughing matter, advancing from tier four to tier five was a change in intrinsic quality, it was the first obstacle that a dark iron warrior would face when advancing, without the right opportunity or talent, some people would be forever stranded at tier four without a chance at advancing.

A tier five was able to completely suppress a tier four dark iron warrior, once these tier five experts used their abilities, it would definitely be terrifying.

The one leading the pack kicked the floor with a ‘Pa!’ leaving two deep indentations on the ground, his body had already flown into the air, instantly reaching the third floor, the concrete walls were like tofu in his hands as he grabbed it before pushing forward and reaching the fifth floor, thereafter, his fist went forward, smashing through two walls before rolling and landing within the corridor.

At the end of this corridor, a dazzling black light was currently emitted, the fifth lifeform that was said to be the closest to perfection was currently hatching.

“Damn!” A frightening roar rang out as the leader strode forward, each step forward left indentations on the ground as rubble flew towards both sides of the corridor.

Frightening speed combined with immense power could be seen as the leader continued to rush forward, suddenly, a pillar of black light shrouded the entire group, blocking the person who was rushing forward as he rebounded away with an even more frightening speed and force.

“Shit!” This person tumbled before getting back up, his black clothes continued to undulate as though it contained untold power that could explode forth at any moment, behind him, two other figures had also finally reached the corridor.

Looking past the pillar of black light, he could see Xiao Wei as well as the groaning Su Yu, Ma Ziyue, Qin Jiagui and also the immense black hole in the ground. Besides Xiao Wei, the others

had expressions of astonishment as they stood immobile, watching in shock as they slowly submerged into the hole as they were being brought away from this place.

“Too late..... we’re too late, damn.....!” The person roared as his fists smashed the ground, fissures could be seen moving forward like spider webs before stopping at the black light, his power was strong but it was simply unable to break through the black light.

By the time the other two fifth tier experts reached the area, the black light was already beginning to fade, Su Yu and the others had already completely vanished, a black fissure could be seen that seemed like a ‘Sky Hole’ but this hole was being swiftly mended, in no time, as the black light faded away, everything returned to its original form with Su Yu and the other people completely disappearing without a trace.

Amongst the fifth tier experts, the one who held the Karmic Wheel was currently staring at it, the needle was moving haphazardly, it was clear that it had already lost its target.

The three tier five experts exchanged glances, even if they were powerful, when faced with such a circumstance they were simply helpless, they could only watch as their kill targets vanish before their eyes.

After gathering the twenty soul companions, the black egg within Su Yu continued to break apart forming black flames which escaped from his body, swiftly forming an immense black pillar of light which shrouded the group. This had occurred suddenly and

the group had confused expressions on their faces, Li Dong stretched his hand forward to touch the pillar of black light but felt as though he was electrocuted as he was sent rebounding away, the power was simply too fearsome and not something any ordinary person could resist.

The power contained within the black pillar of light seemed to become even more frightening as the group finally found themselves immobile, they could only stare as a hole appeared under their feet like a 'Sky Hole', the group were slowly sucked into the hole as they felt themselves immersed in darkness with nothing to be seen.

In an instant, puzzlement filled the hearts of every person, why was the power of the fifth lifeform so similar to that of a 'Sky Hole'? Was there any connection between the two? Where were they after falling into the Sky Hole?

The group who were still in shock did not have time to contemplate as streaks of lights slowly appeared before their eyes, the lights gradually grew brighter before forming a fiery red colour, thereafter, the group regained their ability to move as the black light thoroughly disappeared. The group were all stunned as they looked at their surroundings.

The group had suddenly appeared within a world that was filled with boulders and boiling hot lava due to an ineffable force, no one knew where they were but they were sure that this was not the frightening forest world they had been in earlier.

The sky was a fiery red and piles of molten red boulders could be

seen everywhere, there were lakes filled with lava, bubbling intensely as gurgling sounds were emitted. Everyone felt an indescribable roasting heat.

Besides the five unconscious people, the others were still staring in awe at their surroundings. Su Yu could feel that the black egg within him had completely disappeared, his insides had recovered to their original state as he muttered: “This place..... where is this damned place..... And that ‘Sky Hole’..... Have we fallen from the forest into a lava hell?” a bitter smile could be seen on his face.

His words had merely been spoken when a puerile and powerless voice rang out beside his hear: “Don’t blame Ah Da..... with Ah Da’s abilities..... this is all Ah Da could do.....”

The voice had resounded out too abruptly, stunning Su Yu as he turned his head, he did not notice that there was something black like a tadpole on his right shoulder. It was a metallic black, it had a small tail and was currently prone on his shoulder, the little tail would occasionally twitch and seemed extremely cute, at this moment, its small eyes were closed and it seemed extremely fatigued.

“You..... you are.....” Su Yu did not expect such a thing to suddenly appear on his shoulder, he was currently stunned but Xiao Wei said in an excited voice: “The hatching is a success! So cute, is your name Ah Da? Ah Da..... such a cute name.”

The others had finally noticed the black tadpole like thing that was on Su Yu’s shoulder, hearing Xiao Wei’s words, the group exchanged glances. Could it be that this black metallic tadpole was

actually the existence that was closest to perfection?

“You are.....” Su Yu felt that this tongue was dry as he stammered.

The little thing on his shoulder made a very human-like nod as it answered: “Ah Da it is..... After hatching I’ve brought all of you here..... My strength has been used up, I wish to sleep first.”

Su Yu had a bitter smile as he continued: “What is this god forsaken place? Are you planning to roast us alive?”

Towards this small thing that could summon a Sky Hole bringing them to this strange place, Su Yu was filled with curiosity towards it. They had fallen from their world into that of the forest, could it be that there was actually the presence of a fifth lifeform within their world as well?

“No..... Ah Da has been born..... Used up all of my energy..... If I am unable to replenish it..... Within two days..... I will die from the lack of energy..... this is the period of weakness that I mentioned after being born..... this is also the most dangerous period for us..... This is the place..... Which has an energy source based on my sensors..... There are fire energy crystals within this area..... I require them or..... I will die due to the lack of energy in two days.....”

This small thing was still prone on Su Yu’s shoulder, its voice was gradually becoming softer, it seemed like it was powerless and could die at any moment.

Su Yu was shocked: “You’re saying that fire energy crystals can be found here and we have to immediately retrieve it? Does it mean that we can return once you’ve gained the fire energy?”

Within an area that was covered with pockets of boiling lava, this was simply too numbing and every second here was unbearable.

“Yes..... once I recover my energy.....” The little thing called Ah Da gently nodded before its eyes completely closed, it was obvious that it was becoming more tired.

After hearing these words, the group felt their spirits lift, they only had to find the fire energy crystals to feed it before they could leave this world to return to their old world? That familiar world!

In this moment, excitement filled the hearts of each and every one of them.

Chapter 171: Volcanic Rock Monsters

Hearing Ah Da confirm that it would be able to send them back to their original world once it regained its energy, the group was instantly excited as Qin Jiagui rushed forward: “Ah..... Ah Da, where can we find the fire energy crystals? We’ll head there immediately, is it someplace nearby?”

The tadpole-like Ah Da was still prone on Su Yu’s shoulder as it opened its tiny black eyes while speaking slowly: “Head in that direction..... keep going forward..... Ah da can feel that those crystals..... Should be in that direction..... Once you reach the end..... You will know.....”

Zhang Zhongmou hurriedly spoke up: “Alright, let’s move out.” before taking the lead.

Qin Jiagui looked him in the eye: “Slow down, how can we ignore them?” as he pointed at the few who were still unconscious.

Su Yu walked forward as he stretched his hand out to press down on the muscular male in a black suit who seemed like an athlete, amongst the five unconscious people, he was the only one to have killed a Lesser Goblin and advanced to tier zero, the others were still ordinary people even though the soul contract was formed.

Su Yu pressed down on the forehead of the male as his strange energy which was in the form of qi immediately pulsed, the unconscious male groaned as he slowly awoke.

The physique of the man was exceptional, as he awoke, he immediately turned before protecting his face.

“Don’t be nervous, we aren’t bad people.” Su Yu retracted his hand before moving towards the other four people, suddenly, his hand that was stretched forward turned rigid.

As for this man who looked like a wrestler, he immediately recalled that he had been knocked unconscious by Su Yu as an infuriated expression appeared on his face, he was thinking of how to attack Su Yu when his body suddenly became rigid, turning his head to look to the side with an expression of astonishment on it.

Qin Jiagui, Ma Ziye, Zhang Zhongmou, Zhao Shichang, Xu Ruyun and the others immediately turned as they formed a circle, placing the bags of food in the centre as expressions of shock appeared on their faces.

Silently without any forewarning, monsters that were formed of fiery volcanic rock slowly appeared from the piles of volcanic rock, these monsters were approximately two metres in height, their bodies were entirely formed of volcanic rock and flames could be seen from the many exposed joints on their body. In the blink of an eye, they had already surrounded the group, there were at least ten of these volcanic rock monsters.

Within the forest, the group had encountered Lesser Goblins, Gnomes and even Zombies, these monsters that were formed of volcanic rock were a first.

What really shocked the group was the aura that these group of monsters released, it was extremely terrifying and definitely not something that a Lesser Goblin or Gnome could match up against.

Looking at these monsters which had suddenly appeared, the responses of the group were exceptional, immediately forming two circles with the tier two and three dark iron warriors in the outer circle while those of tier one and below were protected inside. Su Yu could not be bothered with the man as he immediately stood up, his Eye of Perception was activated as he received information regarding the monsters.

Name: Volcanic Rock Monster

Information: A new lifeform created from volcanic rock by absorbing fire energy for long periods of time. A relatively lower tier monster formed from fire energy, tier four beast soldier, exceptionally sturdy body with high defense, it's movements are slow and it's joints are vulnerable.

Su Yu sucked in a breath of cold air as he immediately exclaimed: "Everyone be careful, don't act recklessly, these are all tier four beast soldiers, the joints are their weaknesses."

From the information provided by the Eye of Perception, these Volcanic Rock Monsters were relatively low tiered lifeforms formed from fire energy. However, they were actually tier four beast soldiers, comparable to tier four dark iron warriors, even the Single Eyed Zombie King was merely a tier three beast soldier.

Damn, how could this be possible? Tier four beast soldier? There were even ten of them that were currently surrounding them, where had Ah Da sent them to?

As the group heard his words, they also sucked in a breath of cold air, those that were not as strong immediately felt their knees go weak.

Within the group, only Su Yu and Fang Jiong were tier four, the next strongest was Ma Ziye who was only tier three, the others were only tier two and below, how would they fight?

In an instant, everyone began to panic, the ten odd monsters before them had already begun to attack them.

Su Yu roared as black scales appeared on his body, the golden thumb on his right hand was raised, the situation was extremely grim and the opponents were at the same tier as him, if he did not utilise the power of the Golden blood, he was afraid that they would actually be wiped out.

Without his reminder, Ma Ziye, Zhang Zhongmou and the others were already utilising their strongest abilities, Ma Ziye activated the Heaven's Net while whipping out the Star Blade, Zhang Zhongmou and the others retreated to her side while Qin Jiagui activated the Steel Missile.

“Kaboom!”

A thunderous sound rang out as the flying missile struck on of the oncoming Volcanic Rock Monster, its chest region immediately exploded as it lightly swayed, its hands swept at the energy before it revealing no injuries as it continued forward with raised arms towards Qin Jiagui.

Qin Jiagui's back was currently soaked in cold sweat, damn, even the Steel Missile was powerless? How would they even fight this battle?

Fang Jiong's expression was solemn as he retrieved the Wok from his back, black undulations exploded from his body as he roared, flinging the Cyclone Wok forward.

The Cyclone Wok smashed into the Volcanic Rock Monster that was nearest to him, its two arms were raised to defend itself as a crisp "clang" rang out, the Cyclone Wok was sent flying away as the monster stumbled, almost falling to the ground.

Su Yu exclaimed: "All of you, back away! Go to Ma Ziyue's side!" before rushing forward.

Ma Ziyue firmly grasped the Star Blade, she did not attempt to swing it as she stood at her original position, all her strange energy was currently gathered in her right leg as she utilized the Heaven's Net, she knew that the effectiveness of the Heaven's Net would be an extremely important during this fight.

Zhang Zhongmou, Qin Jiagui, Xu Ruyun, Zhao Shichang and the others swiftly retreated to Ma Ziyue's side, forming a small circle.

Within this circle, Jade, Yuan Niping, Li Dong and the others were also contained within, everyone was doing their best to keep the circle small, even the man dressed in a western suit had a stunned expression as he stood up.

At this moment, he was currently in the centre together with the other four unconscious people, looking at the Volcanic Rock Monsters that surrounded them, an expression of astonishment was on his face, the words that Qin Jiagui had mentioned floated through his mind, whether he believed it or not, the reality before his eyes was simply irrefutable.

Su Yu used his Golden Thumb to meet the closest Volcanic Rock Monster, the hands of this monster was raised as it smashed towards Su Yu.

Su Yu howled as his Golden Thumb pressed forward, the Rending Storm was activated on his left hand, pushing towards the other arm of the monster.

“Gzzz!”

A crisp sound rang out as the Rending Storm forcefully blocked the arm of the monster causing innumerable rock shards to fly out, the Rending Storm was very powerful but it was unable to instantly shatter the Volcanic Rock Monster. The power of the Golden Thumb was, on the other hand, frightening beyond belief.

The Golden Thumb was pressed down the right arm of the monster as the monster immediately roared, its right arm instantly

shattering.

“Nice job.....” Ah Da who was still prone on Su Yu’s shoulder seemed to be reinvigorated as it shouted.

“You’re going to be the death of us this time!” Su Yu wanted to scold it but he simply did not have the time to do so, the Golden Thumb had managed to shatter the right arm of the Volcanic Rock Monster as he immediately strode forward, his left arm had already activated the Lizard’s Arm transformation as it swelled, smashing into the chest of the monster.

“Kaboom!”

The Lizard’s Arm multiplied his strength by three, Su Yu was already a tier four expert, coupled with this increase in strength, how terrifying was the force behind this blow?

The Volcanic Rock Monster was like a kite with a broken string as it flew away before smashing into another monster that was behind it, causing both the monsters to tumble away.

This was the outcome that Su Yu was aiming for, thereafter, he immediately rushed towards another Volcanic Rock Monster.

Besides Fang Jiong who had used the Cyclone Wok to send a monster flying while personally dealing with another, there were eight remaining monsters. Su Yu had just dealt with two and there were another six that were still rushing towards Ma Ziyue and the

others.

Ma Ziyue used all her power to activate the Heaven's Net, it was stunning to see that these monsters were actually quite sharp, they actually jumped as they roared, smashing towards the group from the air.

Ma Ziyue and the others were shocked, the Heaven's Net was rendered useless as Ma Ziyue shouted, the Star Blade chopping towards one of the monsters.

There was simply no space to retreat, although the other party was much stronger than her, under the current circumstances, Ma Ziyue could only grit her teeth to resist.

“Ding!”

Sparks flew out as the Star Blade smashed into the chest of the monster, a fissure immediately appeared on the chest but the monster continued to wave his hand, ‘Pa!’, sending the Star Blade in Ma Ziyue's hand flying away.

Chapter 172: Simultaneous Advancement

The might of the Volcanic Rock Monster was simply too brutish, although Ma Ziyue held the blade with both hands, she was still unable to bear the force as the webbing between her fingers tore, the Star Blade flying from her grasp. In this instant, Ma Ziyue cried out as her right leg lifted, kicking the chest of the monster as she activated the Heaven's Net.

Strands of metal thread extended forth instantly binding the monster within, Ma Ziyue had instinctively used the Heaven's Net to bind the Volcanic Rock Monster but realised that she did not have any powerful moves to deal with it.

She did not have any left but there was a person silently standing behind her, silently striking out as his surgical knives traced a strange trajectory in the air, stabbing into the joints of the chest and brain of the monster.

The entire body of the Volcanic Rock Monster was extremely tough, only the areas connected by joints were its weaknesses, especially the head region, as the surgical knives pierced, the Volcanic Rock Monster let out a frightening roar as its arms flailed, suddenly exploding out of the Heaven's Net restriction with 'Pa!' 'Pa!' noises.

Ma Ziyue suffered from the rebound as she immediately spat blood, the Volcanic Rock monster immediately moved as it pounced toward the person who had stabbed surgical knives into its joints.

This person was naturally Xu Ruyun.

Xu Ruyun was born with an unnatural calmness, no matter the circumstance, it did not seem as though it affected him. It was due to this that he could always find the perfect opportunities, as Ma Ziyue utilised the Heaven's Net to trap this tier four beast soldier, he had been able to act in an instant to send his surgical knives flying into the joints of the monster.

Su Yu had already informed the group of the weakness of these Volcanic Rock Monsters, of all the joints, naturally the ones located at the head region were the most critical.

As the knives entered, the Volcanic Rock Monster retaliated by throwing its fist, smashing into the chest of Xu Ruyun. However, Xu Ruyun had prepared for this and surgical knives were covering his entire body, this blow immediately shattered several of the surgical knives as he spat blood, ignoring his injuries, he continued to circle his right and left hands around the head of the monster as he pulled and tugged, actually managing to pull the head off the body of the monster.

“Bang!”

The head of the Volcanic Rock Monster was tossed aside as more blood was spat from Xu Ruyun's mouth, even so, a smile could be seen on his face.

Looking as the black crystal which was dyed with a faint red colour flew into his body, Xu Ruyun knew that he was about to

advance.

Xu Ruyun was only a tier two dark iron warrior, he had managed to kill a tier four beast soldier, the amount of energy contained within its crystal was terrifying and was certainly greater than even the Single Eyed Zombie King. After absorbing the energy, it was without question that he would advance to become a tier three dark iron warrior.

To others, the three tier stage was incomparably distant, Xu Ruyun had managed to reach it in such a short amount of time, it seemed that he thrived in more dangerous situations.

Strange energy surged within his body as his wounds healed at a phenomenal speed, new abilities were currently being comprehended but Xu Ruyun did not pause as his figure flashed, immediately pouncing towards another Volcanic Rock Monster.

Of the group, Xu Ruyun was actually the first to kill a Volcanic Rock Monster.

Su Yu had knocked aside two of the Volcanic Rock Monsters but did not follow up as he immediately turned to deal with the monsters on another side, the situation was extremely precarious.

Ma Ziyue's Heaven's Net lost its effectiveness as six Volcanic Rock Monsters pounced forward, besides Xu Ruyun who had managed to kill one, the other five went towards Zhang Zhongmou, Zhao Shichang, Qin Jiagui, Jade and Zhou Birong's group as well as the man dressed in a western suit respectively.

Su Yu managed to see a Volcanic Rock Monster stretch its hands forward, grabbing Zhou Birong as its hands moved apart causing Zhou Birong to scream miserably, her left arm had been ripped off before she was tossed towards Jade who was still drawing symbols in the air.

Jade also screamed miserably as she was struck by Zhou Birong, the frightening force sent the two ladies tumbling as the Volcanic Rock Monster followed up swiftly, kicking the ground as its hands went forward, if this blow were to land, the two ladies would definitely be smashed into meat pulp.

Su Yu managed to notice this as his heart trembled, he could not be bothered about the two Volcanic Rock Monsters which he had just sent flying away as he roared, kicking as he flew forward with a phenomenal speed that he had never reached before, instantly reaching the Volcanic Rock Monster as he smashed forward with the Lizard's Arm on his left and the Golden Thumb on his right.

Faced with this extremely sturdy monster, using the Lizard's Arm which had a higher explosive power was better than the Rending Storm which focused on shredding, together with the slow speed of the monster, using the Lizard's Arm would definitely have a better effect.

The immense Lizard's Arm smashed into the Volcanic Rock Monster, Su Yu's body trembled as he groaned, the Golden Thumb on his right hand had already pressed onto the head of the monster.

“Pa!”

The Volcanic Rock Monster did not have the time to make any sound as its head instantly disintegrated, a crystal flew out from its fallen body as it became a pile of immobile rocks.

The second Volcanic Rock Monster had died.

Zhou Birong and Jade had fallen to the ground, they were not moving and it was uncertain if they were still alive. The situation was simply too dangerous and Su Yu did not have the time to check on them as he swiftly moved on to another monster.

Xiao Wei retrieved some Curing Powder as she tossed it out, covering the entire group as those with injuries immediately heard ‘Chi Chi’ noises from their wounds, any bleeding was immediately halted.

Zhang Zhongmou had used his Red Lotus Sword to meet the oncoming Volcanic Rock Monster, he did not expect the Red Lotus Sword to rebound off the monster as though it had struck metal, he was preparing to use the Eye of Petrification but did not expect that his blow would be totally ineffective and his face was actually smashed by a fist from the monster.

“Aaaahhhh!” Zhang Zhongmou yelled, although his head had turned to stone, the force from the monster was simply too terrifying, this fist immediately caused his head to show fissure like cracks, causing unimaginable pain to course throughout his head.

“Aaaahhhh! Damned monster!” Zhang Zhongmou continued to yell as he randomly slashed with the Red Lotus Sword, activating the Red Lotus Fiery Assault in a crazed manner.

In the stone cave the previous day, faced with the White Skeletal Spider King, Su Yu and Ma Ziyue had used the Earth Spikes Assault and Starlight respectively, only Zhang Zhongmou had the Red Lotus Fiery Assault which was unused.

The Red Lotus Fiery Assault was unable to deal with the tier three Single Eyed Zombie King, Zhang Zhongmou did not believe that this move would be able to deal with the Volcanic Rock Monster but had done so in panic due to the life threatening blow that he had just received.

However, something strange occurred, the flames from the Red Lotus Fiery Assault shrouded the monster within causing it to roar, closely after, the flames actually burned brighter as ‘Pa Pa’ noises resounded, in an instant, the other Volcanic Rock Monsters seemed as though they had seen something frightening as they swiftly retreated far away from the skill.

Zhang Zhongmou was currently seated on the ground, seeing the scene before him, he was in a daze. The Red Lotus Fiery Assault seemed to be extremely effective against these monsters, within the flames, the monster was actually unable to retaliate as it swiftly exploded.

Pieces of rubble collapsed as a crystal flew directly into Zhang

Zhongmou's head, thereafter, Zhang Zhongmou roared as the fissured cracks on his face healed, the stone continued to extend from his face, swiftly changing his entire chest causing him to become half a stone monster.

Following the third death of the Volcanic Rock Monster, Zhang Zhongmou had actually also become a tier three dark iron warrior.

The Volcanic Rock Monster that met with Qin Jiagui forcefully blocked his Demolishing Iron fist before suddenly raising him into the air.

“Aaaaahhh!” Qin Jiagui howled as he violently struggled, the Demolishing Iron Fist was continually sent out, however, he was disheartened to see that his skill was unable to penetrate the defenses of the monster, leaving only scratches behind without dealing any real damage.

The Volcanic Rock Monster had raised Qin Jiagui in the sky and was currently exerting its power, wanting to split Qin Jiagui in two. At this moment, Su Yu had just dealt with the second Volcanic Rock Monster and did not have the time to check on Jade and Zhou Birong as he pounced forward in an attempt to save Qin Jiagui.

Su Yu's speed was greater than that of these monsters, the Golden Thumb on his right hand went forward, pressing down on the arm of the monster.

“Crack!”

A crisp sound rang out as the arm was instantly shattered, the Volcanic Rock Monster howled as it attempted to smash Qin Jiagui towards Su Yu. Su Yu had already appeared on the other side of it as he pressed the Golden Thumb once again onto the other arm of the monster.

The arm also swiftly shattered, the power of the Golden Blood was simply inconceivable.

The arms of the monster had been destroyed, Su Yu supported Qin Jiagui who was currently still in shock as he whispered to him: “Neck region.” before rushing to another Volcanic Rock Monster by the side.

Chapter 173: Shattered Fragments Light

Qin Jiagui's entire body was trembling, he had finally realised that his Demolishing Iron Fist and Steel Missile were completely ineffective as he switched to using his 'Iron Arrow Claw' which he had always regarded as a white elephant.

The Iron Arrow Claw was used as five golden claws pierced forward, instantly slicing into the neck region of the Volcanic Rock Monster which had lost its two arms.

The tier four beast soldier was an extremely frightening monster that threatened to exterminate their group, however, there was also equal opportunity in risk, by killing these monsters, besides Su Yu and Fang Jiong who were already tier four, the others would be able to swiftly advance, this Volcanic Rock Monster was purposefully left behind by Su Yu for Qin Jiagui.

Qin Jiagui's heart was filled with gratitude but there was simply no need to use words to express this, his Iron Arrow Claw entered the neck region with a 'Chi!' as he forcefully swiped, the body of the monster was extremely sturdy but its joints were very fragile as its head was immediately separated from the body.

A crystal swiftly flew directly into Qin Jiagui's arm.

Qin Jiagui could not help but howl to the sky as energy surged within him, rushing towards the 'door' located within his right arm, swiftly breaking through as it filled his chest, causing the skin to turn to metal.

The third tier, Qin Jiagui had finally reached it becoming a tier three dark iron warrior, increased strange energy together with the chance to improve or learn new abilities. Qin Jiagui did not hesitate as he instantly chose to advance the Demolishing Iron Fist into its advanced version “Double Explosive Iron Fist”.

The Double Explosive Iron Fist could erupt twice, the combined might from this explosive blast was more than three times stronger than his Demolishing Iron Fist.

The monsters which had targeted Zhang Zhongmou and Qin Jiagui were dead, the one that went towards Jade and Zhou Birong had been dealt with by Su Yu, as for the one that was moving towards Zhao Shichang, it had already taken a blow from his Bone Blade without suffering any injuries, Zhao Shichang was extremely astute, using his range of two metres due to the length of Bone Blade, he swiftly fled upon noticing the ineffectiveness of his attack, causing the monster to roar as it rushed forward, smashing towards Lei Rui and Huo Shan.

Lei Rui was like a broken kite as she was sent flying, Huo Shan had created one briquette and wanted to toss it but was too slow, everything grew blurry as he was sent flying, blood spurting from his mouth while the briquette landed beside him, exploding with a ‘Kaboom!’.

This briquette would instantly explode after coming into contact with any surface or object, at this moment it had actually fallen directly beside him.

Huo Shan's eyes were wide open, he was in disbelief at the sight of his dismembered body, his eyes were still staring at the suitcase beside him, looking at the notes that filled the sky as he stretched forward, wanting to grab the money. Images of his sweet and delicate wife constantly flowed through his mind.

“Xiang Mei..... Don't worry, I will..... I will bring the money..... To the hospital to..... save..... you.....ah.....”

His outstretched hand fell lifelessly to the ground as his head rolled to the side, his body had already been blown apart and there was simply no chance of reviving him.

The final Volcanic Rock Monster rushed towards the male dressed in his western suit, he had just arrived within this world but was already faced with such strange events. It was difficult for him to acclimatise in such a short period of time but he still instinctively reacted, as the monster pounced, his arms were stretched forward as he pulled at the monster, actually tossing it over his back.

“Bang!”

An explosive sound rang out, contrary to their expectations, the tier four beast soldier was actually suppressed by the male as he twisted its arm, suppressing it below his body as it continued to struggle but failed to get rid of the male.

Based on logic, with the frightening power that the Volcanic Rock Monster had, no matter how formidable the male was, his physical body should not have been able to take on the monster.

However, the reality was before their eyes, the male had managed to twist the monster's arm, forcing it under him, it could not retaliate as the raging flames between its joints slowly extinguished.

Under such a dangerous circumstance, the male did not notice a flashing circular symbol on his arm which was currently twisting the arm of the monster, this symbol was continually spinning and flashing as though it were releasing some strange energy.

“Crack!”

A crisp sound could be heard as the male looked on in a daze, he had actually ripped the arm off the monster at the joints.

Su Yu noticed this as his heart trembled, the monster seemed to have lost all its strength after meeting with the male, it was simply too strange, could it actually have something to do with the ability that the male had comprehended?

Su Yu did not hesitate as he kicked, advancing towards the Volcanic Rock Monster which had sent Lei Rui and Huo Shan flying.

Huo Shan had died miserably and Su Yu had noticed this but simply did not have the time to help him, who knew that Huo Shan would actually blow himself up, this was simply unforeseeable.

After shattering the arms of the monster with his Golden Thumb, Su Yu sent it flying away with a kick towards Jade who had just stood up while shouting: “Kill it!” before rushing towards the four other monsters by the side.

Zhou Birong had been sent flying into Jade and Jade herself was injured but managed to stand back up, hearing Su Yu’s roar, she swiftly acted as her hands grabbed the head of the monster, using all the strength within her to twist its head before finally snapping it off.

Jade was surprised as she hugged the head of the monster, her body tumbled to the ground as she panted. The actions earlier had sapped all the strength from her body, it was only after a crystal flew into her left arm that she began to feel refreshed again.

She had finally broken through, she was initially at tier one and had finally advanced to become a tier two dark iron warrior, her strange energy had began to transform into qi while the ‘door’ appeared at her left arm, new abilities also appeared within her mind.

Following the death of the fifth monster, besides the nameless male that was currently suppressing one of the monsters, there were only four of them remaining of which one was currently being blocked by Fang Jiong.

Fang Jiong was a tier four expert, even if he were to face two of the monsters, he would still be able to barely hold on. The Volcanic Rock Monster was the lowest grade of tier four beast soldier and was much weaker than Fang Jiong.

Fang Jiong used his Cyclone Wok to send one flying away before using his Steel Shattering Cleave, chopping off the arm of another Volcanic Rock Monster before chopping into the chest of a third one, causing it to retreat without any chance of retaliating.

The two Volcanic Rock Monsters which had been first sent flying by Su Yu had finally climbed to their feet, however, Zhang Zhongmou, Xu Ruyun and Qin Jiagui had advanced to become tier three dark iron warriors and were already confidently rushing towards the two monsters.

Xu Ruyun's body flashed, he was already a tier three expert but did not allow this to get to his head, he knew that the other party was a tier four beast soldier and was stronger in terms of raw strength, he did not attack from the front but rather planned to use his movement techniques to find the weakness of the monster before striking.

This was not a simple task as the monster was still a powerful tier four creature, such a chance would not easily present itself.

Xu Ruyun frowned before noticing that Zhang Zhongmou had promoted to tier three and was currently rushing here, he immediately thought of something as he dodged to the side.

“Hahaha!” Zhang Zhongmou laughed boisterously as he stood with his chest forward: “I’ll let you monsters have a taste of my new ability, Shattered Fragments Light!”

“Kaboom!”

A visible hole like that of an eye appeared on his stone chest as a blazing pillar of light was shot forth.

The pillar of light swiftly struck the chest of one of the Volcanic Rock Monsters.

This Shattered Fragment Light was an ability with a five minute cooldown, its power was immense and even a monster as powerful as the Volcanic Rock Monster was sent flying away without any chance for retaliation, at this moment, Xu Ruyun struck.

He had purposefully waited from Zhang Zhongmou to act, creating a chance for him to attack. He did not hesitate as his right hand went forth, silently striking like an agile panther. The surgical knife within his right hand did not create any sound as it instantly sliced at the neck region, separating the head of the monster from its body.

Another crystal rose into the air before entering Xu Ruyun’s body, he sucked in a breath of cold air as he felt the energy within him roil, rushing towards the newly formed ‘door’. It was a pity that it was still insufficient as it gradually receded, entering tier four from tier three with a single crystal was still insufficient.

Xu Ruyun sighed inside as his gaze swiftly moved to the other Volcanic Rock Monster.

He had just looked over when a figure suddenly flashed by, Su Yu had suddenly appeared as his Golden Thumb pressed down on the head of the monster, the head was immediately shattered as scattered red fragments were strewn everywhere.

The Volcanic Rock Monster was a tier four beast soldier, Su Yu was also a tier four dark iron warrior but he could still absorb a relatively large amount of strange energy from it.

Xu Ruyun sighed, he knew that Su Yu was about to act and would not give him any chance to strike.

After Su Yu killed the monster, there were merely three remaining ones. Fang Jiong roared like thunder as his butcher's knife chopped heavily with the Steel Shattering Cleave, finally lopping the head off one of the monsters.

The head of this Volcanic Rock Monster tumbled to the ground, the flames within its body were already extinguished and it fell to the ground, lifeless.

A faint red crystal disappeared into Fang Jiong's palm causing him to roar as he felt the strange energy within him surge, streaks of powerful black undulations exploded from his body as they gathered atop the large wok on his back.

"Cyclone Wok!" Fang Jiong roared as the large wok was tossed forward, the shrill whistling sound could be heard as a monster which was climbing back up was immediately struck.

This monster had barely managed to climb back up before being hit by the wok, immediately flung back onto the ground.

By the side, the nameless male was still suppressing one of the Volcanic Rock Monsters, using his strength to pull at its arm as he actually managed to break it off.

He was stunned for a moment before recovering, immediately moving to pull at the head as he used his entire body weight.

Nobody knew the reason but the Volcanic Rock Monster seemed to have lost its terrifying strength, its resistance was extremely feeble as its head continually gave off cracking noises. The male roared as his flesh swelled, finally ripping the head from the body.

A recently promoted dark iron warrior had actually managed to kill a tier four beast soldier, this male hugged the head as he sat on the ground, he did not understand the situation but could feel the strange energy within him suddenly roil vigorously, in an instant, streams of information flooded through his mind as he immediately promoted to tier one, the strange circular symbol atop his right hand became even clearer.

The final Volcanic Rock Monster had been sent flying away by the Cyclone Wok, at this moment, Su Yu had just used the Golden Thumb to deal with a Volcanic Rock Monster, he saw the monster fall past him and with his abilities, he would be able to easily land a killing blow. However, he did not do so but rather dashed to the side, lifting Zhou Birong's broken arm off the ground as he swiftly began to restore it.

Su Yu did not continue because he had already killed two of the monsters and Fang Jiong had been the one who was dealing with the monster, under such circumstances, if he were to kill the monster, it would seem as though he was coveting the crystal. As a result, he did not act and left the final monster for Fang Jiong to deal with, moving to help Zhou Birong who the most seriously injured.

Fang Jiong had absorbed the energy from a Volcanic Rock Monster and his strange energy was surging, following up with a steel shattering cleave as he finally killed the last monster.

Chapter 174: God's Remains

Following Fang Jiong's final Steel Shattering Cleave, the ten tier four beast soldiers had finally fallen, their indistinct cries as they laid on the ground, the flames on their bodies slowly extinguishing. Finally, the last Volcanic Rock Monster had also died.

Fang Jiong absorbed another tier four crystal, strange energy surged within his body but the distance to advancing once again was simply too far.

Su Yu held Zhou Birong's broken arm, using his powerful qi to swiftly reattach her arm. By the side, Xiao Wei was applying Curing Powder and under the effects of the two healing effects, Zhou Birong's broken arm was rapidly mended at an astonishing rate.

Besides Huo Shan who had died, Zhou Birong, Jade, Ma Ziyue and a few others had suffered injuries. It was fortunate that everyone had strange energy within them allowing their injuries to swiftly recover, this was especially so for those like Jade, Xu Ruyun and Zhang Zhongmou who had recently promoted, under the effects of their increased strange energies, their healing speed was phenomenal.

Among them, Zhou Birong's injuries was the most serious.

While amongst the five newly joined people, the nameless male had actually managed to kill one of the monsters, allowing him to

successfully advance into a tier one dark iron warrior. This was still too astonishing, the other four people were still lying unconscious on the ground, it was fortunate that the Volcanic Rock Monsters had chosen to attack the others within the group while ignoring these unconscious people, otherwise, they would have all perished.

Following the kill of the Volcanic Rock Monster and advancing to tier one, the nameless male could not help but accept reality, believing in the words that Qin Jiagui had said earlier. He had indeed been transported to an inconceivable world filled with monsters, one could actually advance and become stronger by killing these monsters.

This male was also someone who had experienced much within the mortal world, after a short period of blankness, he slowly accepted the reality of the situation as he forced himself to adapt.

After this bout, Su Yu and Fang Jiong remained at tier four while the number of tier threes had increased, Ma Ziyue, Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou and Xu Ruyun were all tier three experts now. Amongst them, Xu Ruyun was certainly the most dazzling, he had merely arrived in this world for a short period of time but had unknowingly already caught up and became a tier three dark iron warrior.

With Su Yu's help, Jade had managed to advance as well and was currently a tier two dark iron warrior like Zhao Shichang. The others were either stuck at tier one or tier zero.

Qin Jiagui rotated his right arm, the feeling of being at tier three

was completely different, he knew that a large reason why he had managed to advance was due to Su Yu, he was filled with gratitude. However, due to their past exchanges, saying his gratitude was meaningless, he would merely keep this within his heart as he walked towards the nameless male.

The performance of this male had already attracted the attention of everyone, Xu Ruyun's performance was already astonishing but it simply could not be compared to this male. A tier zero had managed to defeat a tier four beast soldier? What sort of concept was that? This was simply inconceivable.

Everyone immediately connected this to some strange ability that the male must have obtained, otherwise, this was simply too phenomenal an outcome.

“Now do you believe me? My name is Qin Jiagui.” Qin Jiagui walked before the male as he introduced himself.

The nameless male sat on the ground as he lifted his head to face the group, looking towards Qin Jiagui before finally replying in a deep hoarse voice that seemed gentlemanly at the same time: “Cao Xiao Yu*, everything before me..... I have no choice but to believe.....”

T/N: Xiao Yu means small fish.

The male had a helpless bitter smile on his face as he slowly stood up: “Where is this place? Even if it is as you said, why would the Affluent Guest Lodge fall into a forest due to a Sky Hole? Also, we

should be in a forest, why are we here instead?”

The physique of this male was tall and stout but his name was simply too frail making everyone feel strange.

By the side, Yuan Niping could not help but curiously ask: “Cao..... Cao Xiao Yu, what was your past occupation? Were you a physical trainer?”

Cao Xiao Yu was a hulking piece of muscle, he really did seem like a physical trainer.

Cao Xiao Yu shook his head: “I’ve trained in Tai Chi, wrestling as well as several other combat techniques..... even learning underground boxing.....” Having said this, there was a bitter smile on his face as his voice continued to go lower while he spoke slowly: “However, I am merely a guard within The Affluent Guest Lodge, who knew that this extraordinary matter would force me into a place that is simply unexplainable.”

Qin Jiagui was stunned, it was no wonder the male had such a fierce physique and powerful combat skills. This was still insufficient to explain how he killed the Volcanic Rock Monster, he must have used some unique ability as Qin Jiagui continued: “We were initially in the forest, thereafter because of Ah Da..... due to the fifth lifeform, we were sent here. I’m also not sure where we are.”

As he said this, Ah Da who was lying on Su Yu’s shoulder said in a weak voice: “Since you aren’t clear, then let Ah Da explain. In a

very distant past, there were perfect lifeforms that belonged to different camps, after going through countless terrifying battles, these perfect lifeforms that belonged to the sixth tier continually fell, their corpses piercing through countless worlds and falling to the ends of the universe..... After the passing of eons, these fallen corpses created strange spaces, these strange spaces were very different whether it be in size or form, the continual birthing and extinguishing eventually led to the surge of many strange creatures..... These spaces formed due to the corpses of the sixth lifeforms are known to us as the Sixth Space, the area that we are currently in is precisely a Sixth Space, to be more precise, this area is an elemental space of the Sixth Space and it belongs to the fire category..... Do all of you understand now?”

Ah Da spoke all of this in a single breath before taking in a large breath, it seemed extremely fatigued and the group was exceptionally shocked, Ma Ziye responded first: “Ah Da, you mean to say that this space was created as a result of that lifeform dying?”

Su Yu continued: “Perfect lifeform..... is that a god? Are you saying that this space was created by the remains of a god?”

“If it helps you to understand it in that manner, it works as well..... Anyway, this Sixth Space is phenomenal, only us fifth lifeforms that are closest to the perfect lifeform can find it, it is to your benefit that Ah Da has brought you here..... If you are lucky, you may even find some exceptional things here because the perfect lifeforms within some of these spaces have not been completely extinguished..... If that were to happen, you may really gain something incredible.”

Ah Da's words made the group feel strange as they looked carefully around them, however, all they could feel was the burning heat which caused their backs to be covered in sweat.

The blazing piece of space before them, was it really created by the corpse of a lifeform? Was there really something so frightening? This was simply akin to ancient tales of Pangu using his body to create all living things, if the sixth lifeforms really had such an ability, it was not a stretch to refer to them as gods.

After arriving in this world, they had continually learnt of things that were simply too astonishing, even though this piece of news was also shocking, they were still able to accept it even feeling slightly numb to it.

Su Yu stretched a hand to pat Ah Da: "What do you mean when you say that the perfect lifeform hasn't been completely extinguished?"

As he spoke, he began to crouch down as he used his qi to assist the people who had been knocked unconscious by him.

Ah Da harrumphed in indignation after being patted by Su Yu before continuing: "A perfect lifeform..... It can be considered an eternal existence, there are some which have not been completely extinguished..... They are 'dead' but unable to completely die, however, they also don't have the strength to come back to life, they are thus suspended in a state where they are neither dead nor alive, if we are lucky enough to find one....."

Having said this, elation seemed to shine from Ah Da's eyes: "If our luck is good, we can absorb the energy of the other party, if that's the case, we would have struck gold! It may even be possible for me to immediately advance to become a perfect lifeform! Hahaha....."

It had just laughed as the sky suddenly began to emit frightening cracking noises as though something were breaking apart, this sound was simply too terrifying and it was transmitted from high above them. The group could not help but lift their heads to see a scene that was simply too astonishing.

In the blazing sky above, there were clouds that seemed to be formed of flames, these clouds seemed to be shattering like pieces of glass before a figure could be seen appearing from the shattered clouds.

Its body was emitting a dazzling golden colour, its back had a pair of golden wings, an eagle's head with a human body, golden feathers covered its entire body, it seemed majestic and fierce, like an indomitable god descended on earth. Suddenly, a frightening pressure could be felt pressing down on the group causing them to find it difficult to even breathe.

"Kaboom!"

The eagle-humanoid golden monster landed beside them, the frightening pressure seemed to have taken substance as it expanded, the group could not help but sway and stumble as they fell backwards, their heartbeats were racing and their faces were swollen red, even Su Yu was no exception to this.

The golden wings on the back of the eagle-humanoid monster slowly retracted as it stood there within the group, they could feel its incredible might, its figure was approximately ten metres tall, every inch of it seemed to be forged from gold, as it stood there, it really seemed like a golden god.

Chapter 175: Four-Eyed Race

The eagle-humanoid monster was not a new sight for the group, back then within the forest, the group had seen it within the clouds fighting against some unknown entity with enormous hands and feet, exterminating the other party. The eagle-humanoid monster today was exactly the same as the one they had seen back then, it was even possible that it was the same one.

The golden monster had suddenly descended as it retracted its golden wings, stretching its claw as it gently pinched, lifting Ah Da who was prone on Su Yu's shoulder up into the air.

Ah Da could not help but let out a shrill cry, hearing this, the group began to panic.

Su Yu was able to see the situation most clearly, his heart was anxious, with the frightening power of the golden monster, it would only need to exert slightly more force to kill Ah Da. If Ah Da died, as soul companions to it, they would also die. This was an extremely sweat-inducing situation, under such a frightening pressure, regardless of Su Yu, Fang Jiong or anyone else, they simply did not even have the slightest intention of resisting.

Compared to this eagle-humanoid monster before them, they were like ants without any chance of resisting.

The golden monster had lifted Ah Da into the air, thereafter, a pair of piercing eagle eyes shot a strange light that swiftly struck Ah Da.

Ah Da quickly closed its eyes, its tail was hanging down and it no longer moved. In the eyes of the others, they were confused at first before swiftly understood that this fellow was pretending to be dead.

With the powerful senses of the golden monster, Ah Da's actions could not fool it but it continued to slowly measure Ah Da, as though it was very interested. Its fingers gently rubbed Ah Da before its mouth suddenly moved, emitting a noise that everyone actually understood.

“Such an interesting little fellow, your spirit contains a familiar aura..... In a very distant past..... Perhaps we have met before.....”

The eagle-humanoid monster actually had a human voice and it was extremely gentle, as the words entered their minds, the hearts of the group trembled, this was simply too mystifying and inconceivable.

The words of the golden eagle-humanoid monster caused Ah Da to open its inky black eyes, staring at the monster as a light seemed to flash through its eyes.

Suddenly, the monster lightly grunted before tossing Ah Da back to Su Yu.

“Little fellow, if we are fated let's meet again, hopefully you'll be grown up by then.....” As it said this, it moved a hand to pluck a

golden feather from its wings, pointing as the feather flew forward.

“Shuuuum”

The golden feather flew above Su Yu’s head before suddenly floating downwards, landing in the palm of Su Yu’s hand.

“Hehe..... Hehehe.....” At the same time in the space above them, a sinister cold laugh could be heard, this laughter seemed as though it had come from the ninth level of hell, hearing it immediately caused all the goosebumps of the group to stand on end.

The eagle-humanoid monster passed this feather to Su Yu before lifting its head, making a cold harrumph as an enormous black hole appeared within the flaming red clouds above.

The frightening laughter had come from this black hole, thereafter, an immense creature could be seen descending from within the hole, its body was circular in shape, like the lotus platform of a Buddha that could be found within a temple, this lotus platform was enormous, it was at least twenty metres wide, its entire body was a silverish white colour, golden veins could be seen atop it and an immense figure was currently seated on this lotus platform, its body was blackish-grey, the black skin was covered in streaks of sky blue lightning. The other areas of its body was no different from a human but it had four eyes, these four eyes were a pearly blue, its head was bald and its body was muscular. Four items could be seen around the platform, a sky blue combat knife, a dual bladed red sword, a black spear as well as a golden

shield.

The four eyed black skinned humanoid monster was seated atop the lotus platform as it appeared through a 'Sky Hole', laughing sinisterly while chills went down their spines as they found themselves immobile.

The ten odd metre tall golden eagle-humanoid eagle monster who was on the ground looked up at this four-eyed humanoid monster as it lightly grunted, its wings suddenly flapped as an immense rumbling resounded in the air, it suddenly appeared hundred odd metres away. As for the circular fissure, it was already beginning to disappear, the four eyed monster stood up from the lotus platform, its figure was even larger than the eagle-humanoid monster, its right hand grabbed the sky blue combat knife from the platform as a shrill voice was emitted from its mouth: "Offer up the 'Golden Core' and I will leave a whole corpse!"

The eagle-humanoid monster lightly shook its head as it spoke: "Really overly arrogant..... Are those of the four-eyed race all boisterous and arrogant wastrels?" Its right hand expanded, stretching through space as golden dazzling lights flashed from its five golden claws instantly smashing towards the four-eyed dark skinned humanoid monster.

The four-eyed humanoid monster held the sky blue combat knife to forcefully defend himself from this golden pillar of light, a loud explosion could be heard as waves spread out in all directions creating large gusts of wind causing Su Yu, Fang Jiong, Qin Jiagui and the others to be sent tumbling away, the might behind this

blow was simply astonishing.

Such might could certainly be termed as a real battle between god and devil.

Within the frightening energy waves, the roar of the four-eyed humanoid monster could be heard: “Leave the Golden Core and I’ll leave you a whole corpse!”

The sky was suddenly lit up by a blazing blue light, within the light, the figure of the four-eyed humanoid monster could be seen expanding as it lifted the sky blue combat knife, chopping down with a might that seemed as though it could sunder the heavens.

The eagle-humanoid monster seemed as though it did not wish to fight, it could even be said to be indifferent as its golden wings suddenly retracted to cover its entire body, its hands made a tearing motion towards the ground as a frightening fissure was suddenly created on the molten rock, its figure flashed as it swiftly disappeared into the fissure.

“Damn, don’t even think of escaping!” The four-eyed humanoid monster panicked as it hurriedly kept its sky blue combat knife, somersaulting as it returned to that immense lotus platform.

The lotus platform swiftly descended with a ‘Bang!’, descending towards the location of the disappeared eagle-humanoid monster. Swiftly thereafter, a pillar of light emerged as another ‘Sky Hole’ appeared, the lotus platform immediately entered the Sky Hole and the fissure began to slowly seal up, returning the scene to its

original appearance as though nothing had occurred earlier.

It was only after a long time before Su Yu and the others began to wake up from their stupor, they had been sent flying away by the frightening energy fluctuations and all of them cut sorry figures. Su Yu climbed back up, looking at the position where the monsters had disappeared before looking over at the golden feather within his hand.

This golden feather seemed to be left behind for Ah Da, it seemed to have some relation with Ah Da and had passed this golden feather to Su Yu.

Although this golden feather seemed to be forged from gold, it was actually soft yet firm to the touch, light as though it could float in the wind.

Why would the eagle-humanoid monster leave behind this golden feather? What could this feather do?

Su Yu did not understand but was able to feel slight energy fluctuations of destruction contained within the golden feather.

“Ah Da, wake up, stop feigning death. The eagle-humanoid monster earlier seemed to recognise you, do you know it? What was that fellow? Is he also a fifth lifeform? Or is he from the Golden Race of legends? Or is he merely a high tier monster? Or even the perfect lifeform that you’ve been talking about?” Su Yu shook Ah Da as he hurriedly questioned.

Ah Da slowly opened its eyes with much difficulty before replying: “I don’t know.”

Su Yu was depressed as Qin Jiagui began to question Xiao Wei: “What were those two monsters? What is the four-eyed race? You can at least tell us this much right?”

Xiao Wei had a bitter smile on her face: “If Xiao Wei knew, she would definitely tell all of you..... however..... I also don’t know anything at all.”

Looking at the expression on her face, it was clear that she was really clueless. Qin Jiagui patted the dust off his body as he sighed, the longer they stayed in this damned place, the more mysteries and questions there were.

“Don’t think too much about it..... Even Ah Da is unclear on these matters, everyone should just focus on what’s important before you.....” Ah Da said in a weak voice: “The most important thing is..... to find fire energy crystals, if this continues to drag on, Ah Da will really die.....”

Su Yu looked at Ah Da’s appearance, he was unsure if Ah Da was unwilling to speak about it or truly ignorant about the situation, however, it was right about one thing, the matters that had occurred earlier were clearly above their grade, even if they knew, it was simply useless. To the two monsters, they were merely a bunch of ants, in that case, they should just do what they needed to do, acquiring the fire energy crystals to allow Ah Da to recover, allowing it to send them back to their original world.

Once they returned to their world, those monsters would no longer have anything to do with them, in that case, they would not even need to be bothered about their backgrounds.

Chapter 176: The Strangeness Of Shangguan Wan

Su Yu was still in deep thought as he walked to the four unconscious people lying on the ground, stretching his right hand to press down on the unconscious male child as his qi was transmitted.

In no time, the unconscious child awoke as he slowly opened his eyes, looking at Su Yu and the others as well as the fiery surroundings, he let out a speechless scream. Looking at Cao Xiaoyu who was beside him, he could not help but shout: “Uncle Xiaoyu, where is my dad?”

Cao Xiaoyu walked over to speak to him: “Young Master An, it’s me.”

“Eh? You know each other?” Su Yu asked in puzzlement.

Cao Xiaoyu replied as he sighed: “He is An Xiaoyang, the hotel is part of the An family business. It was a coincidence that he was there for the events that occurred that night..... To a child, such a world is simply too cruel.”

This An Xiaoyang was the young master of a wealthy and powerful family, a puzzled expression was on his face as he heard the discussion between Su Yu and Cao Xiaoyu. Looking at his surroundings and the group of people, an expression of confusion could be seen on his face.

Su Yu continued: “Since you’re familiar with each other, you can explain the current situation to him, I believe that it will be easier for him to digest.” as he said this, he continued to walk to the unconscious big bearded director Zhang Jifa as he stretched his right hand.

This was the first time Cao Xiaoyu had come into contact with the eagle-humanoid monster, seeing that terrifying strength for the first time was simply too shocking. At this moment, he was still dazed but swiftly recovered as he heard Su Yu’s words, nodding as he began to explain the situation to An Xiaoyang.

Thereafter, Su Yu awoke the two Shangguan sisters as well as the director Zhang Jifa. He knew that there would be plenty of questions as he waved Qin Jiagui over: “Old Qin, I’ll trouble you to explain things to them.”

Qin Jiagui smiled as he walked over, Zhang Zhongmou followed closely behind as he looked nervously at the Shangguan sisters.

These twin sisters were his idols in the past!

Zhang Jifa, Shangguan Wan and Shangguan Rui began to slowly awake, sitting up immediately as they looked around them, confusion evident on their faces.

Qin Jiagui did not immediately begin his explanation as he waited for them to come to their senses.

In no time, the three people recalled the frightening scene of the green skinned monsters before they went unconscious.

Zhang Jifa with his big beard was certainly a person who had lived for fifty to sixty years, he had much experience and weathered many difficult situations, although the strange scene before him was shocking, he managed to swiftly regain his calm, closing his mouth as he silently measured his surroundings.

The Shangguan sisters were unable to be as calm as him, they were idols in their ordinary lives but at this moment they were like teenage girls as they shrilly screamed, looking all around them at Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou and the others. Their shrill cries slowly came to a halt as one of the sisters asked in a shrill voice: “Where is this place? So how..... Have we..... Have we been kidnapped..... I understand, those green skinned monsters that ran into the hotel were the few of your acting right..... What..... What do all of you plan to do.....” Having said this, she could not help but cover her bosom as she retreated, a mask of anxiety could be clearly seen on her face.

Qin Jia Gui lightly smiled as he raised his hand out and pointed at the others, saying: “We are not robbers, we are the bunch who actually rescued you people from the hotel that was being attacked....”. Having said this, he felt that explaining all the details now, was not the right time.

“Anyways, we are no longer in the world that you are familiar with, this place is filled with danger. Whether you believe it or not, we are people who share similar fates with you, because of certain

reasons and circumstances, we have come to this damned world. Within this damned world, death is everywhere, monsters abound and if you wish to live, you have to find ways to kill these monsters to cause your strength to become stronger than these monsters. That is all I have to say, believing it is up to you.”

Having said this, Qin Jiagui retreated a step as he folded his arms in akimbo.

Zhang Zhongmou lifted his thumb at Qin Jiagui, complimenting him for being so suave.

By the side, An Xiaoyang had just heard Cao Xiaoyu’s explanation, contrary to the expectations of everyone, this young master of a wealthy family was not afraid but rather cried out in excitement: “Are you for real uncle Xiaoyu? That is simply too interesting, isn’t this like a reality game? How’s your strength? You better display it for me to see!”

Cao Xiaoyu was simply flabbergasted at this young masters reaction, he was currently speechless.

By the side, Zhang Zhongmou laughed as he heard this: “Strength? Let me display it for you to see.....” as he said this, his face began to transform to rock, swiftly becoming a boulder head as a third eye appeared between his brow. Suddenly, a light was shot from the third eye aimed at An Xiaoyang.

An Xiaoyang was dazed as his body continually turned to stone, swiftly becoming a little child statue, his mouth was wide and he

was immobile.

The Eye of Petrification swiftly lost its effectiveness as An Xiaoyang recovered to normal. Thereafter, he jumped in excitement: “Too good! Too powerful, this big brother, what ability is that? You can petrify people? That is simply too amazing, you are like the medusa of legends!”

An Xiaoyang was extremely excited, by the side, Jade laughed: “So interesting, their names, Xiaowei, Cao Xiaoyu, An Xiaoyang..... Hahaha.....”

T/N: All their names have Xiao, which means small.

Lei Rui smiled faintly: “It’s really quite a coincidence, maybe this is fate.”

Qin Jiagui had said his piece, the pair of Shangguan sisters were wide-eyed as they exchanged glances, a strange expression appeared on their faces as their cherry red lips parted. They were at a loss on how to react as they sat there, the big bearded director Zhang Jifa suddenly spoke at this moment: “Everyone, just say a price, there’s no point in saying anything else.”

The words of the big beard caused everyone to be stunned for a moment before Qin Jiagui reacted with a smile: “So director Zhang thinks we’re a kidnapping organisation.”

Zhang Zhongmou laughed: “It’s a pity that in this world, money

is like toilet paper, wait check that, toilet paper can be used to wipe the butt, money isn't even as good for that."

Seeing the reaction of the people before them, big beard was stunned: "You guys aren't?"

Cao Xiaoyu walked over as he spoke earnestly: "Mr Zhang, I'm in the same situation as you guys, I don't know the reason why we have come here. This place is filled with danger, these people are certainly not kidnappers."

Cao Xiaoyu was a bodyguard within the hotel, he would often be assigned to be a bodyguard for young master An as well. Zhang Jifa had stayed several times within the hotel and although the two sides did not interact much, they had seen each other a few times. Zhang Jifa was dazed as he slowly stood up, thinking about it, it was really strange, if this was a kidnapping, why weren't his hands and feet bound? He began to search his body, finding his phone, he seemed as though he wanted to call the police but hesitated.

Qin Jiagui smiled: "Director Zhang can try to make a phone call if you don't believe us."

Zhang Jifa heard Qin Jiagui but did not immediately call the police as he attempted to call his personal secretary. There was no signal as expected, he continued to attempt to call several other people to no avail, there was simply no signal.

"Do you believe us now? We have come to a completely different world, there is simply no such thing as a handphone signal, within

this world, the handphone is merely a white elephant.” Qin Jiagui bitterly smiled.

Looking at the expressions of Zhang Jifa and the Shangguan sisters of disbelief, Qin Jiagui knew that convincing them would be too tedious as he looked towards Su Yu: “Let’s go, Ah Da mentioned that we’ve only got two days remaining. We’ve already wasted half a day.”

Su Yu nodded as he questioned Ah Da: “Should we just continued going forwards in this direction?”

Ah Da rolled his little black eyes as he replied with a grunt.

Zhang Jifa and the Shangguan sisters had also noticed the metal tadpole-like thing on Su Yu’s shoulder, they were rather perplexed but treated it as an electronic toy, in their eyes, Su Yu was merely talking to an electronic toy and messing with their minds.

Looking at the trio, Su Yu felt that Qin Jiagui had said everything that needed to be said. The few of them had done what they could and the rest was up to them. If they were willing to follow, he would not reject them, however, if they were unwilling, he would not force them. Some things were simply too difficult to explain.

The others began to lift the bags of food off the ground, Su Yu led the way as he moved forward.

Surrounding them were piles of fiery rock, there were paths

between the rocks but these paths were precarious with gurgling lava surrounding them. Everywhere was filled with a hot air making it difficult for one to breathe.

It was fortunate that Su Yu and the others had strange energy within them making it slightly easier, as for Zhang Jifa, the Shangguan sisters as well as An Xiaoyang, they did not have any strange energy and found it extremely difficult to bear.

An Xiaoyang believed in Cao Xiaoyu as he followed behind him, walking with Su Yu and the others. Zhang Jifa continually attempted to make calls but simply could not get a signal. Looking as Su Yu and the others distanced themselves from them and the fiery surroundings, his heart began to panic as he said anxiously: “Wait for us!” while chasing.

The Shangguan sisters were familiar with Zhang Jifa and had been following him. Noticing him rush forward, they hurriedly pinched their dresses as they ran with their heels.

Zhang Zhongmou looked back with a smile: “Director Zhang, do you believe us now?”

Zhang Jifa grunted, he did not believe Zhang Zhongmou and the others but this place was simply too strange, there was no signal and no exit in sight, gathering together as a group gave them a feeling of safety. Also, he had noticed the bags of food, he was currently feeling very thirsty and wanted a drink but his dignity as a successful individual prevented him from asking, closing his mouth as he remained silent.

Su Yu carried a bag of food with Ah Da on his shoulder as he faced the surging waves of heat, feeling the golden feather which was in his bosom. He felt that the golden feather would definitely have special uses, it was a pity that he did not know how to use it.

This strange feeling made him have a good impression of the eagle-humanoid monster, he was actually feeling rather worried for the safety of the monster, after all, the four-eyed monster actually dared to chase the eagle humanoid monster, it naturally had the confidence to do so. It could even cause Sky Holes to appear, this was a clear indication of the strength of the four-eyed monster that was simply immeasurable.

Following Ah Da's indicated direction, they went past several piles of fiery boulders. It was fortunate that no further Volcanic Rock Monsters appeared, it was unclear if this was because their killing of the ten Volcanic Rock Monsters had frightened the others or if they were simply lucky.

"So hot, damn, this really makes one thirsty....." Zhang Zhongmou was sweating profusely, cursing as he wiped the sweat off his face, retrieving a bottle of water from his bag as he began to twist before hearing a soft voice beside him: "This big brother....."

"Hm?" Zhang Zhongmou looked back to see the Shangguan sisters beside him, calling him big brother while looking with wide eyes at the bottle of water in his hands, occasionally licking their dry lips.

Even with their strange energy, they were unable to bear the heat, this situation was even worse for ordinary humans like them.

“Hahaha, wish to drink?” Zhang Zhongmou looked at his previous idols standing before him as a surge of pleasure filled him, taking a bottle as he spoke to them: “First tell me, are you Shangguan Wan or Shangguan Rui?”

The twin sisters were simply too alike, even their clothes were similar, Zhang Zhongmou was an avid fan but he was unable to differentiate the two.

“I’m Shangguan Rui.” At this moment, this idol no longer had any airs, she only felt a burning fire within her throat.

“If you’re Shangguan Rui, that means she’s Shangguan Wan? Haha, here you go, remember to drink sparingly, water is a scarce resource and we have no idea how long we are going to be trapped within this damned place.” Zhang Zhongmou laughed as he handed a bottle to Shangguan Rui.

Shangguan Rui hurriedly accepted the bottle before running to her sister, opening the lid as she handed the bottle to Shangguan Wan first.

Zhang Zhongmou was stunned for a moment, this small action was sufficient to see the amount of love that the Shangguan sisters had for each other.

Su Yu noticed this small action, looking back, he suddenly noticed that the situation of Shangguan Wan was amiss.

He knew that if the few of them with strange energy could feel the heat, these four ordinary people would certainly be faring worse. However, Zhang Jifa and even the little kid An Xiaoyang were merely very thirsty but could certainly hold on. As for Shangguan Wan, her face was pale like a sheet of paper and her face was filled with cold sweat, her expression was extremely strange like she experiencing a terrible illness. Shangguan Rui handed the bottle of water to her with an expression of concern.

Su Yu looked over at Zhang Zhongmou, he knew that he was an avid fan: “Go take a look.”

Zhang Zhongmou hurried to the sisters: “What’s the matter? What’s wrong with your sister?”

At this moment, Shangguan Wan was slowly drinking from a bottle of water only daring to drink a small sip at a time, her actions were very strange.

Chapter 177: Woman Made Of Water

Shangguan Rui had a concerned expression as she spoke: “My sister’s physique has been weird since birth, she cannot do without water, if the weather is slightly hotter, it is easy for her to dehydrate. This place is so hot..... I’m afraid that a single bottle of water won’t last long.”

At this moment, Shangguan Wan had drank several mouths of water and her complexion was becoming better. Holding the bottle as she looked at Zhang Zhongmou, she said in an extremely gentle and sweet voice: “Thank you.” completely different from that of Shangguan Rui.

Zhang Zhongmou was finally able to differentiate between the two sisters, Shangguan Rui’s voice was more vibrant and lively while Shangguan Wan was more gentle and pleasing, causing one to feel extremely comfortable.

Looking at the pair of sisters, Zhang Zhongmou realised that Shangguan Rui had requested water for her sister, he could not help but have a good feeling towards the little lass, on television he merely idolised them, right now, he felt that the little sister was really compassionate.

“People of the ancient past have said that women are made of water, haha, I think your sister is precisely that. It’s okay as long as she’s fine, we still have some water here, if you need it just let me know.” Zhang Zhongmou controlled his feeling of thirstiness as he walked back to the front.

“Understood, thanks!” Shangguan Rui raised her voice to express her thanks.

Zhang Zhongmou smiled, an expression of bliss on his face.

At the front, Ma Ziyue noticed this as she smiled at Su Yu: “Look at the delighted expression on that big cigarette addict’s face.”

“That is to be expected, these sisters are his idols, the excitement of meeting one’s idols is only natural.” Su Yu laughed as he answered before suddenly grunting as he lifted his head.

By his side, Ma Ziyue swiftly lifted her head, she had also noticed something in the distance, there was a black pillar of light shooting to the clouds above before it quickly disappeared. This had occurred too suddenly, the group exchanged glances as they felt perplexed, unsure of what had just happened.

After waiting for a while to see if any further changes would occur, Ma Ziyue spoke up: “Let’s go.....” as she strode forward, Su Yu suddenly blocked her path: “Wait a moment.” Su Yu looked to the left as crisp cracking noises were emitted from a pile of boulders, closely thereafter, Volcanic Rock Monsters began to emerge until a total of five of them had come out.

Seeing the Volcanic Rock Monsters once again, the group were not surprised but rather had a feeling of excitement.

They had managed to kill the ten Volcanic Rock Monsters with

almost no casualties, with only half the number right now, it was unlikely that anything untoward would occur to them. These high-tier Volcanic Rock Monsters were the best hunting targets for them to advance.

Seeing the Volcanic Rock Monsters, Xu Ruyun, Zhang Zhongmou, Qin Jiagui, Zhao Shichang and the others who wanted to advance further immediately rushed forward.

“Wait!” Su Yu suddenly lifted a hand as he exclaimed: “This place has an abundance of Volcanic Rock Monsters, the ones who really need to kill these monsters are those who aren’t even tier one. The environment here is dangerous and cruel, we should give this chance to them to allow them to advance.”

Having said this, the group was dazed for a moment before Qin Jiagui nodded: “He’s not wrong, there is logic to what he’s saying. Everyone be careful, they are rushing towards us.”

Fang Jiong laughed: “Then we’ll do it that way, only by helping each other will we really be an actual group, one can’t be too selfish.” Retrieving the Wok from his back before tossing it out and wielding the butcher’s knife to stand before one of the monsters.

Ma Ziyue delicately shouted as she activated the Heaven’s Net once again, the Star Blade had already appeared within her hand.

Zhang Zhongmou shouted: “We have just reached tier three, fighting them individually will be difficult, old Su, you need to act in order for us to help them.....”

His words were barely finished as Su Yu pounced forward, he did not speak as his Golden Thumb went forward, pressing towards one of the Volcanic Rock Monsters.

“Poof”

The body of the Volcanic Rock Monster immediately disintegrated as Su Yu’s left hand swept, knocking the back of the monster as he shouted: “Those who aren’t dark iron warriors yet have priority!”

“Bang!”

The Volcanic Rock Monster which had half its body disintegrated fell heavily into the centre of the group, it had already lost its ability to retaliate as Zhang Zhongmou retrieved his Red Lotus Sword before passing it to Shangguan Rui and spoke: “Beautiful lady, kill it. Only then will you gain a unique energy to resist the elements, you won’t be so tired and will be able to resist the heat.”

The strength of the Volcanic Rock Monsters and Su Yu was astonishing for the newcomers, they were slowly coming to terms with the explanation of the situation by Qin Jiagui.

Shangguan Rui received the Red Lotus Sword, hearing Zhang Zhongmou’s words, her heart trembled as she passed the sword to Shangguan Wan: “Sister, try it and see if it really works. If it does, it won’t be so unbearable.”

Although the Red Lotus Sword was bound to Zhang Zhongmou and others could not use its abilities, it could still be used as a normal sword.

Zhang Zhongmou pointed to the neck region of the Volcanic Rock Monster: “Slice here and it will be easily killed.”

Shangguan Wan’s face was pale and seemed extremely frail, the inconceivable scenes before her, Su Yu’s demonic transformation, the Volcanic Rock Monsters that were easily rent apart, feeling the weakness of her body, Shangguan Wan grit her teeth as she tightly held the Red Lotus Sword before trembling as she chopped down.

“Chi!”

The Red Lotus Sword was incomparably sharp as the head of the monster was instantly chopped off, a crystal swiftly flew through the air before entering Shangguan Wan’s right hand.

Feeling the strange energy surge within her body like a cleansing spring, it was simply too comfortable for words to describe.

Shangguan Wan had an elated expression as she lifted her hands to shout: “It’s really..... too amazing..... this feeling.....” her face was filled with excitement as she looked towards Zhang Zhongmou before turning to look at Su Yu.

Under the combined efforts of Su Yu and Fang Jiong, the limbs of

the five Volcanic Rock Monsters were swiftly chopped off as they lay on the ground without any strength to retaliate.

Qin Jiagui lifted his head as he noted strangely: “The previous time when we helped others, we were attacked by the giant feet. This time..... It seems there isn’t anything..... is it because the number of people is lesser?”

Ah Da interrupted at this point: “Fool, this is the space of a sixth lifeform, no one can interfere with it.”

Qin Jiagui was stunned, as for Shangguan Rui, she had already received the Red Lotus Sword from Shangguan Wan and had also killed a Volcanic Rock Monster, successfully advancing to become a tier zero dark iron warrior.

Although the Volcanic Rock Monster was a tier four beast soldier, killing them would only allow them to advance to tier zero. The others noticed this and felt that this was a pity but under the current circumstances, they did not comment on the matter.

Four of the five Volcanic Rock Monsters had allowed the Shangguan sisters, An Xiaoyang and Zhang Ji to successfully advance to tier zero. As for the final one, Fang Jiong threw it before Xiao Wei: “Kill it, I don’t want you to always be a burden to us.”

Xiao Wei waved her hands: “Uncle, killing these things is useless for me. It should be left for you guys.”

Fang Jiong was stunned: “Useless?”

Xiao Wei was clearly still at tier zero, killing a tier four beast soldier should allow her to advance to tier one, why did she say that it was useless?

Su Yu was also curious as he asked: “Xiao Wei, you mean to say that killing these monsters is useless for you?”

Xiao Wei sadly nodded: “I was a tier zero dark iron warrior from birth, thereafter, there was simply no way for me to advance..... my father..... Even caught a tier seven monster for me to kill..... But it was simply useless.”

The others sucked in a breath of cold air, they had not even faced tier five monsters yet, Xiao Wei’s father had actually managed to catch a tier seven monster? What tier was her father at? Also, why was Xiao Wei unable to advance even after killing monsters?

“What’s the reason for it?” Zhou Birong asked curiously.

Xiao Wei shook her head: “That is why even though I have this necklace which can summon an origin beast, it has not hatched. This could be due to some problems with my body..... or..... It could be some other reason. Anyway, this monster should be left for the others. Xiao Wei killing it will simply be a waste.”

Noticing Xiao Wei’s persistence, the others nodded. Su Yu looked at the group, thinking of how Liu Zheng and Xu Ruyun had joined

the group at the same time but the difference between Xu Ruyun's and Liu Zheng was three tiers, Su Yu called Liu Zheng over: "Kill this monster."

A selfish choice would be for him to allow Jade to kill it. However, he had to take a neutral perspective that could satisfy the group and could not be too selfish.

Liu Zheng was dazed for a moment before running forward excitedly: "Me?"

Zhang Zhongmou patted his back before laughing: "Little fellow, hurry and kill it. You can't always be hiding within the group and doing nothing."

Liu Zheng killed the final Volcanic Rock Monster, successfully advancing to become a tier one dark iron warrior.

After dealing with the five Volcanic Rock Monsters, everyone in the group had become a dark iron warrior and had strange energy within their bodies. Whether it be the strength to resist fatigue or the resistance of the elements, these were all raised. After walking for a while, the group began to feel hungry as Qin Jiagui suggested for them to stop and take a break.

Due to the increase in numbers together with the lack of food as well as the unknown road ahead, Qin Jiagui, Su Yu, Fang Jiong, Ma Ziyue and the others discussed before apportioning out the food. They would have to eat conservatively in order to ration the food.

Due to the hot surroundings, the appetites of everyone was affected and they did not eat a lot. After resting for a while, everyone was vexed by the heat and decided to continue moving forward.

Ten minutes later, an immense gurgling lava lake appeared before the group. Thereafter, they met with the third group of monsters within the space of the sixth lifeform.

Chapter 178: Fiery Magma Devil

Without any warnings, monsters formed of lava began to crawl out of this frothing lava lake.

The form of these monsters was like that of an ape, they had strangely long arms and were bent over as they moved forward on all fours. After climbing out of the lava lake, they opened their mouths to emit shrill roars, compared to the Volcanic Rock Monsters which could only silently amble about, these monsters formed from lava were clearly of a higher grade, they were at least able to emit shrill roars.

Following the frightening roars, a total of six of these fiery red monsters crawled out from the lava lake.

The monsters had climbed to the shore as their bodies continually frothed due to the lava, patches of lava could be seen wherever they passed as the ground emitted 'Chi Chi' noises and caused green smoke to rise. It was clear to see that the temperature of the lava was extremely terrifying.

These six monster had suddenly crawled out of the lava lake to face the group immediately causing the surroundings to heat up.

Su Yu's Eye Of Perception was activated as a stream of information flowed through his mind.

Name: Fiery Magma Devil

Information: Tier four elite beast soldier, after enduring for countless years, lava which has absorbed sufficient energy will give birth to life. Possesses the intellect of an ordinary human, completely formed of lava, its body has an extremely high core temperature that is able even able to melt gold, extremely terrifying. One must destroy the fire energy crystal within its chest to properly kill it.

The six monsters before them were actually tier four elite beast soldiers, they were obviously much stronger than the Volcanic Rock Monsters as Su Yu immediately exclaimed: “These are Fiery Magma Devils, they are much stronger than the Volcanic Rock Monsters that we faced earlier. We have to destroy the fire energy crystals within their chest in order to kill them.”

As he said this, black scales began to appear on his left hand with ‘Chi Chi’ noises as his entire arm was swiftly covered in the dense black scales.

Hearing Su Yu’s exclamation, the group felt their hearts clench, these monsters were actually even more powerful than the Volcanic Rock Monsters they had faced earlier! Su Yu and Fang Jiong stood at the front with Ma Ziyue close behind. Further behind her was Qin Jiagui, Zhang Zhongmou, Xu Ruyun, Zhao Shichang and the others.

At the back, Li Dong summoned his wasps but was feeling rather depressed, at his level one tier, these tier four elite beast soldiers were simply too powerful for his wasps to have any effect, it was likely that these poisonous wasps were completely ineffective.

Seeing the bodies of these Fiery Magma Devils which were formed of lava, he was afraid that if his poisonous wasps attempted to sting, they would instead be burnt to death by the high temperatures.

Fang Jiong looked at these monsters formed of lava before him as he frowned, retrieving his wok as he immediately used the Cyclone Wok to attempt an attack.

With the frothing lava covering the bodies of these monsters, the group did not dare to attack, even Su Yu was hesitant.

The Cyclone Wok hurtled through the air with a frightening sound before finally striking a Fiery Magma Devil.

An explosive sound rang out as the body of the Fiery Magma Devil was struck by the wok, 'Chi Chi' noises were emitted as lava was splattered everywhere, as for the Fiery Magma Devil, it began to emit terrifying roars as its entire body bent down before kicking off with its two feet, pouncing towards Fang Jiong with its two arms stretched forward.

Seeing how ineffective his Cyclone Wok was against the monster, his heart shuddered as he immediately yelled, black undulations began to spread across his body as though he were wearing an armour of waves, his left hand was lifted into the air as it received the returning wok to defend himself while at the same time attacking with his right hand which was holding the butcher's knife. Black undulations coursed over the wok and butcher knife as he stepped forward to meet the charging Fiery Magma Devil.

Su Yu had seen the effect of the Cyclone Wok and was stunned, however, seeing the six Fiery Magma Devils splitting up as they attacked, his body was immediately covered with black scales as he activated the Rending Storm to meet the oncoming monsters.

Ma Ziyue's right hand wielded a Star Blade as she activated the Heaven's Net, streaks of metal spread out like a spider's web towards the front.

Zhang Zhongmou took a step forward as a fissure appeared on his chest, his ability Shattered Fragments Light was activated as it shot towards an oncoming Fiery Magma Devil.

The two arms of this Fiery Magma Devil was raised as it blocked the Shattered Fragments Light, a loud rumbling noise could be heard but the Fiery Magma Devil did not seem to be affected as it continued forward, roaring as its two arms flailed causing large amounts of lava to be shot forth.

This had occurred too suddenly and the group were unprepared for this as Zhang Zhongmou, Qin Jiagui and the others fully faced the lava head-on.

"Aaaahhhh!" People yelled as their bodies began to emit 'Chi Chi' noises, holes could be seen on their clothing as boils began to appear on their skin causing bone-piercing pain.

Su Yu continued forward as the Rending Storm struck a Fiery Magma Devil.

The Fiery Magma Devil had seen the pouncing Su Yu as it immediately used its two arms to defend itself against the Rending Storm, a terrifying noise was emitted as the arms formed of lava were continually minced, scattering as they struck the black scales covering Su Yu's body causing 'Chi Chi' noises as green smoke began to rise up. As for his face which was unguarded, Su Yu could only use his right hand to shield it by activating the Protective Bulwark.

The might of the Rending Storm was simply too terrifying, upon contact it had immediately rent the arms of the Fiery Magma Devil apart. Su Yu could only feel his arm slowly piercing into the viscous fluid instantly going through the body of the Fiery Magma Devil, it was a pity that he had not managed to strike the fire energy crystal which was supposedly within the chest.

At the same time, the Fiery Magma Devil continued to roar as its arms encircled Su Yu, hugging him as its entire body was plastered onto his.

"Chi Chi" noises continued to ring out, his entire body was in contact with the monster and even areas covered in black scales were emitting green smoke, much less the areas which were unprotected.

Su Yu sucked in a breath of cold air as the golden thumb of his right hand pressed forward, large amounts of lava was sent flying away as the head of the Fiery Magma Devil was blown apart. The Fiery Magma Devil which had lost its head did not seem to be affected in the slightest as it roared, continuing to squeeze Su Yu.

Large amounts of lava were adhered to Su Yu's skin, the hot temperature made Su Yu roar as he felt the exposed areas of his skin begin to fester and melt.

The situation was grim as Su Yu howled, the ten odd holes within his body immediately began to wildly suck in energy from the surroundings as his strange energy surged and exploded, a frightening typhoon formed of strange energy was emitted as the Fiery Magma Devil was sent flying away. At the same time, Su Yu moved forward as the Rending Storm was sent forward with all the energy he could muster.

“Kaboom!”

The Fiery Magma Devil which was in the air was struck by the Rending Storm as it immediately burst apart, lava was sent flying haphazardly through the air while Su Yu ignored the pain of the falling lava as he charged straight through.

Finally, Su Yu was able to see a ball of flashing red energy that was half the size of a fist, this was the fire energy crystal.

Without a word, Su Yu's right thumb pressed forward directly onto the small red crystal.

“Pa!”

The crystal shattered as the Fiery Magma Devil immediately lost

its life energy, large amounts of lava began to fall uncontrollably to the ground as they became ordinary lava, losing all life within them.

Although he had managed to kill a Fiery Magma Demon, Su Yu was also in a very sorry state, large portions of his body had been burnt and festered by the high temperatures, it was fortunate that the strange energy within his body was also working to continually repair his body.

After killing this tier four elite beast soldier, the amount of energy absorbed was far greater than that of a Volcanic Rock Monster, however, it was simply unable to cause much fluctuations as the energy required to advance from tier four was simply astounding, it seemed like a bottomless pit without any end.

Even Su Yu had found it so difficult to kill a single monster, the others were in even worser states.

These Fiery Magma Devils did not have obvious weaknesses like the Volcanic Rock Monsters, their only Achilles' heel was the fire energy crystal contained within their bodies, however, it was simply impossible to find this crystal without dispersing the lava which formed their bodies.

By the side, Fang Jiong roared, he had already guessed that it would be difficult to deal with the monsters thus using the wok as a shield, streams of black undulations spread outwards covering the wok and butcher's knife as Fang Jiong activated the Steel Shattering Cleave, chopping towards the Fiery Magma Devil. The

Fiery Magma Devil was formed of lava and though the Steel Shattering Cleave was able to create a large gap, it was instantly sealed back up as the Fiery Magma Devil continued unharmed.

Fang Jiong continued to flail his knife multiple times as anxiety filled his heart, the fists of the Fiery Magma Devil continued to smash against his wok causing frightening sounds to ring out, the bodies of both parties continued to sway and it seemed like a stalemate.

Su Yu had barely managed to kill a Fiery Magma Devil while Fang Jiong was stuck in a stalemate with one the monsters, as for the other four, they emitted frightening roars as they pounced towards the group.

Qin Jiagui and the others quickly tossed the bags of food on the ground as he lifted his right hand, jet black metallic skin immediately began to cover his right arm and chest making it seem as though he were wearing a black metal armour. His right shoulder raised as a metal cylinder appeared, howling, the Steel Missile was shot forth.

“Chi!”

A missile was shot forward with a trail of white smoke behind it immediately striking one of the Fiery Magma Devils.

“Bang!”

The body of the Fiery Magma Devil was blown apart as its figure swayed, actually being forced back.

With Qin Jiagui's advancement to tier three, the power of his Steel Missile had also improved tremendously.

Chapter 179: Extreme Luck

This was noticed by Fang Jiong whose heart trembled, he was naturally much stronger than Qin Jiagui but Qin Jiagui's Steel Missile was clearly more effective against the Fiery Magma Devil, his Steel Shattering Cleave was clearly not working out as well.

In no time, Fang Jiong quickly understood that the Fiery Magma Devil which was formed of lava was actually more susceptible to attacks with a large blast radius, attacks that aimed at a single target like the Steel Shattering Cleave had almost no effect against the monster.

Thinking of this, Fang Jiong swiftly kept his butcher's knife as black undulations began to gather at his palm. Fang Jiong was prepared to change his methods as a ball of black undulations could be seen on his hand, another frightening ability was about to be sent flying forth.

Qin Jiagui's Steel Missile was visibly effective as it exploded causing the Fiery Magma Devil to roar as it retreated, Qin Jiagui noticed this but did not immediately rush forward in his excitement. He was no longer naive and had improved tremendously, he understood that he was merely a tier three dark iron warrior while the Fiery Magma Devil was actually a tier four elite beast soldier, if he were to meet it head on, he would certainly be disadvantaged.

At this moment if he were to suddenly rush forward, that would be the same as sending himself to his death. Even though his Steel Missile was effective, he did not continue attacking but rather

retreated to Ma Ziyue's side, he wished to rely on Ma Ziyue's Heaven's Net to use his most powerful ability 'Double Explosive Iron Fist', at the same time he could delay time for the cooldown of Steel Missile which was a minute long.

Ma Ziyue held her position as she stomped, activating the Heaven's Net with all her might. She held the Star Blade within her right hand but its ability was still on cooldown, besides this ability, she did not have any moves which could deal lethal damage to these level four elite beast soldiers.

Zhang Zhongmou's Shattered Fragments Light had failed to injure the oncoming Fiery Magma Devil and had instead infuriated it as it roared, rushing to the sky before landing directly before Zhang Zhongmou. It had flung lava towards Zhang Zhongmou, Qin Jiagui and the others earlier causing them to be in rather sorry states. The formation of the group was a mess as it stretched its hands towards Zhang Zhongmou, its speed was phenomenal, clearly exceeding that of Zhang Zhongmou who was a tier three dark iron warrior.

Zhang Zhongmou's Shattered Fragments Light could be used every five minutes, together with the Red Lotus Fiery Assault which was also on cooldown, Zhang Zhongmou did not have the time to dodge and simply had no other choice but to use the Light of Petrification.

The Fiery Magma Devil was simply too fast and was hit square in the chest, however, the Light of Petrification was only able to petrify a small portion of its chest while its other parts could still function normally.

Zhang Zhongmou knew that the situation was grim and wanted to use the Red Lotus Sword but his waist had already been struck by a fist.

A groan could be heard as Zhang Zhongmou flew away like a broken kite, fresh blood spewing from his mouth as he tumbled away. His waist had been struck by the lava fist and had immediately began to fester, even his intestines within had been affected as he curled his body while moaning.

Although he was already a tier three dark iron warrior, the petrification only affected the chest region of the monster while his supple waist had actually taken a full blow from a tier four elite beast soldier.

Zhang Zhongmou was lying on the ground powerless as Ma Ziyue's Heaven's Net expanded as it swiftly took effect, snaring the remaining Fiery Magma Devils, the Fiery Magma Devil which had just dealt a blow to Zhang Zhongmou was immediately halted as the steel threads continued to extend upwards, thoroughly binding it in place.

Xu Ruyun and Zhao Shichang who were beside Ma Ziyue immediately saw the chance as they swiftly acted, Xu Ruyun immediately tossed out tens of surgical knives towards the body of the Fiery Magma Devil.

Su Yu had mentioned that killing this monster could only be done by destroying the fire energy crystal within it, however, the

fire energy crystal was not in a fixed position as it constantly flowed within the body of the Fiery Magma Devil, it was almost impossible to tell where the crystal was located, how could it be easy to destroy it?

This was the reason why Xu Ruyun had tossed out tens of surgical knives, he wanted to try his luck and hope that one of them would actually be able to destroy the fire energy crystal.

Zhao Shichang did not have Xu Ruyun's ability to attack in a wide area, he did not hesitate as he used his bone knife to rush forward, chopping down onto the head of the monster.

“Chi!”

The Bone Blade was still rather terrifying as it split the Fiery Magma Devil from top to bottom, thereafter, Zhao Shichang heard a crisp cracking noise, could it be that the fire energy crystal had been destroyed?

Zhao Shichang did not have the time to think further as the Fiery Magma Devil before him instantly began to melt like that person made of wax, instantly becoming soft and becoming a puddle of lava. Thereafter, a crystal flew into his body as strange energy began to surge, instantly rushing towards the 'door' at his shoulder area.

Tier three, Zhao Shichang had finally advanced to become a tier three dark iron warrior.

Xu Ruyun was stunned as he glanced over at Zhao Shichang, he had used tens of surgical knives without striking the energy crystal but Zhao Shichang was so fortunate to use a single slash to hit the fire energy crystal within the Fiery Magma Devil.

Zhao Shichang had finally advanced to tier three as he howled, at this moment, a frightening ability comprehension filled him causing his right arm and upper body to begin to twist and change, besides his two legs, left arm and head, the other areas of his body began to go through a strange metamorphosis into an insect.

A black carapace appeared as his body was pulled and twisted longer, suddenly, Zhao Shichang howled as he flew through the air as he landed before another Fiery Magma Devil. His two legs did not move but his upper body began to twisting and contorting, the frightening bone blade on his right arm spun crazily forming a revolving blade wheel.

“Chi! Chi! Chi!”

In an instantly, the lava on the body of the Fiery Magma Devil was sent flying away as frightening roars were emitted from the monster’s mouth.

The Fiery Magma Devil was, after all, a tier four elite beast soldier and swiftly came out of its stupor as it roared and smashed with its two arms.

“Pa!”

Zhao Shichang who seemed crazed took a this blow to the chest as black fissures immediately appeared on the insect carapace covered chest, his body immediately tumbled away twenty odd metres as Zhao Shichang began to pant, each breath was filled with blood but his face was still an expression of excitement.

Suddenly advancing and gaining such a powerful ability, he had been overly excited. After suffering the blow, Zhao Shichang who was sprawled on the ground finally began to come to his senses.

At this moment, Fang Jiong roared as black undulations gathered on his right hand before smashing into the chest of the Fiery Magma Devil which had been engaged in a long combat with him.

“Undulation Overload – Explode!”

Fang Jiong howled while the Fiery Magma Devil screamed, its chest area had been exploded causing a gaping hole to appear. Fang Jiong swiftly used his left hand to toss the Cyclone Wok, striking at the head of the monster.

With its chest and head both destroyed, the entire upper region of the monster was exposed as Fang Jiong finally spotted the fire energy crystal. It was currently sinking lower as it attempted to hide in the lower region.

“Trying to escape?!” Fang Jiong cackled as he tossed out a smaller wok from behind his back.

This wok was also covered in black undulations as it smashed onto the fire energy crystal, instantly causing the sound of shattering glass to resound.

Another Fiery Magma Devil had been killed.

After killing the first Fiery Magma Devil, Su Yu immediately pounced towards a second one. He did not have any experience in killing these monsters the first time but faced with the second one, Su Yu was already clear on how to deal with it, immediately compressing the strange energy within his body into his left hand before exploding forth with the Rending Storm causing the entire body of the Fiery Magma Devil to be completely destroyed thus exposing the fire energy crystal within.

The Golden Thumb on Su Yu's right hand pressed forward as it accurately pressed down on the crystal, immediately causing it to disintegrate as the second Fiery Magma Devil immediately died.

At this moment, four Fiery Magma Devils had already died and there were only two remaining.

Initially, Su Yu, Fang Jiong and the others were unsure of how to deal with the monster. The situation was extremely dangerous but they swiftly adapted, as the fight dragged on, Su Yu had already killed two while Fang Jiong had dealt with one. Zhao Shichang and the others had worked together, coupled with a little luck, they had managed to take one down. The final two Fiery Magma Devils were still trapped by Ma Ziyue's Heaven's Net, although they could escape in an instant, this brief period of immobility allowed Qin Jiagui to use his Double Explosive Iron Fist, striking the chest of

one of the monsters as it exploded.

The Double Explosive Iron Fist was the upgraded form of the Demolishing Iron Fist, it allowed the Demolishing Iron Fist to explode twice consecutively, the power of this explosion was immense and could actually compare to that of a Steel Missile. It did not have any restrictions and could be used as long as there was sufficient strange energy within the body.

The Double Explosive Iron Fist struck the Fiery Magma Devil causing its chest to be blown apart, immediately exposing a fire energy crystal as Qin Jiagui attempted to swiftly grab it with his hand. However, he did not have Su Yu's speed as his left hand missed, the crystal swiftly descended into the monster's lower body as it roared before punching towards Qin Jiagui with a lava fist.

Qin Jiagui groaned as he tumbled away, the body of the Fiery Magma Devil swiftly regenerated as it broke free of the restraints from the Heaven's Net, chasing towards Qin Jiagui's tumbling body as its arms swung down, attempting to kill Qin Jiagui in a single blow.

“Go!”

By the side, a delicate shout could be heard as Jade suddenly sent a white ball of energy flying forward, instantly smashing into the Fiery Magma Devil.

With Su Yu's help, Jade had already advanced to tier two giving

her a more in-depth understanding of the Runewords, besides the previous shockwave, she also learnt how to release an energy ball. After much difficulty, she had finally managed to draw the Runeword and had sent it flying forward.

The Runewords required an extremely long preparation period but once it was cast, its power was tremendous. Even though she was only tier two, the power of her energy ball was actually equal or stronger than the blast from Qin Jiagui's Steel Missile.

“Kaboom!”

A loud explosion rang out as the Fiery Magma Devil roared, more than half its body had been blown apart.

After the explosion, a fire energy crystal was exposed as Xu Ruyun who had been quietly observing the situation suddenly acted, tossing the surgical knife within his right hand towards it.

The surgical knife whistled through the air before landing on the crystal.

The crystal shattered without any noise as Xu Ruyun groaned, after becoming a tier three dark iron warrior, he had absorbed the energy crystal of the Volcanic Rock Monster and the Fiery Magma Devil, this caused the strange energy within his body to surge and almost reach the precipice to charge at the four doors within his body. It seemed like it would be successful but the strange energy suddenly receded before becoming peaceful once again.

Xu Ruyu sighed without speaking, a flash of regret could be seen in his eyes, he had almost advanced but fell short by a little bit. He could clearly feel that he was at the pinnacle and killing an additional monster would allow him to advance to become a tier four dark iron warrior, an existence that was comparable to Su Yu and Fang Jiong or even stronger than them.

Xu Ruyun felt that leaving this world was not important, his only goal was to continually become stronger, stronger than anyone else.

